

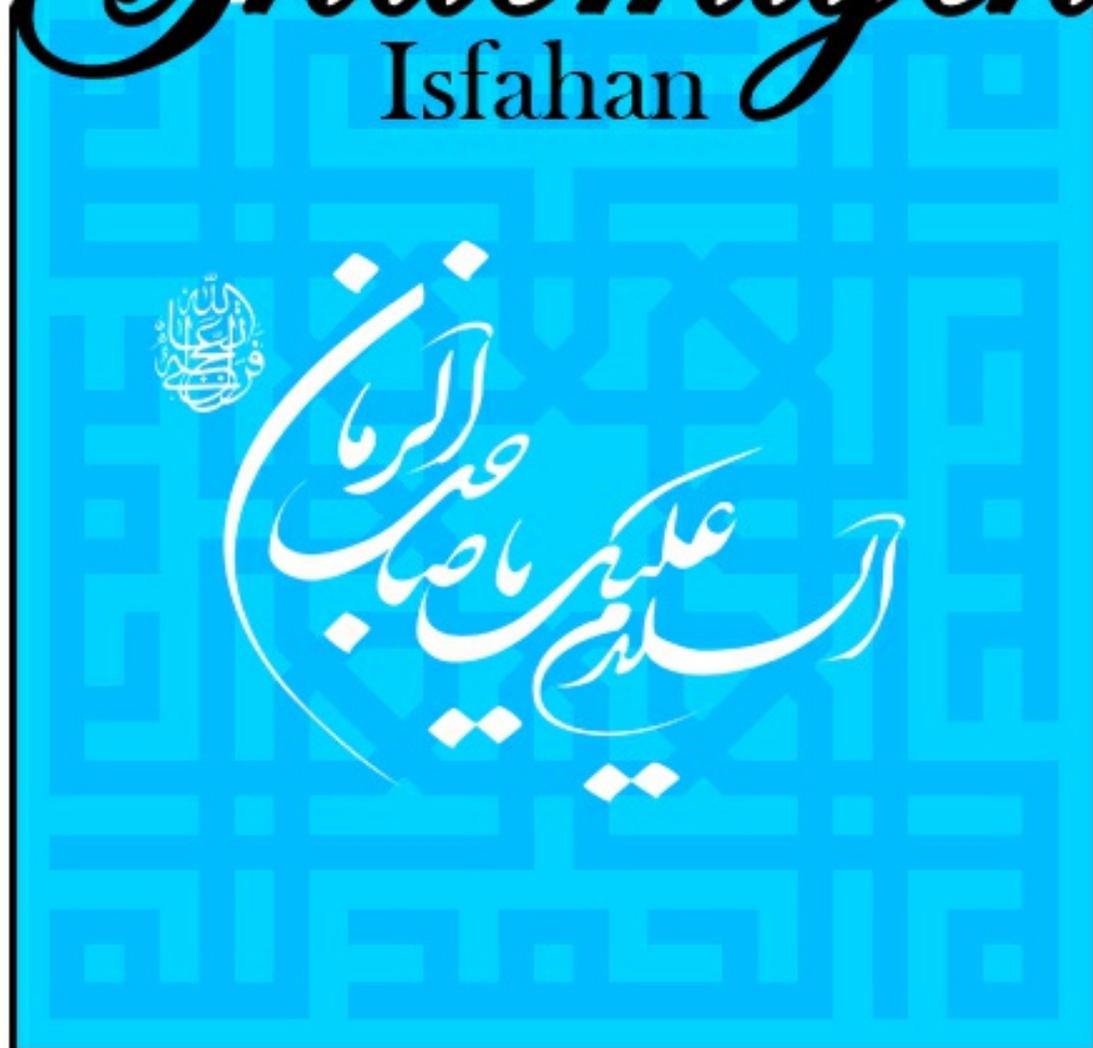
Center of Computer

Researches



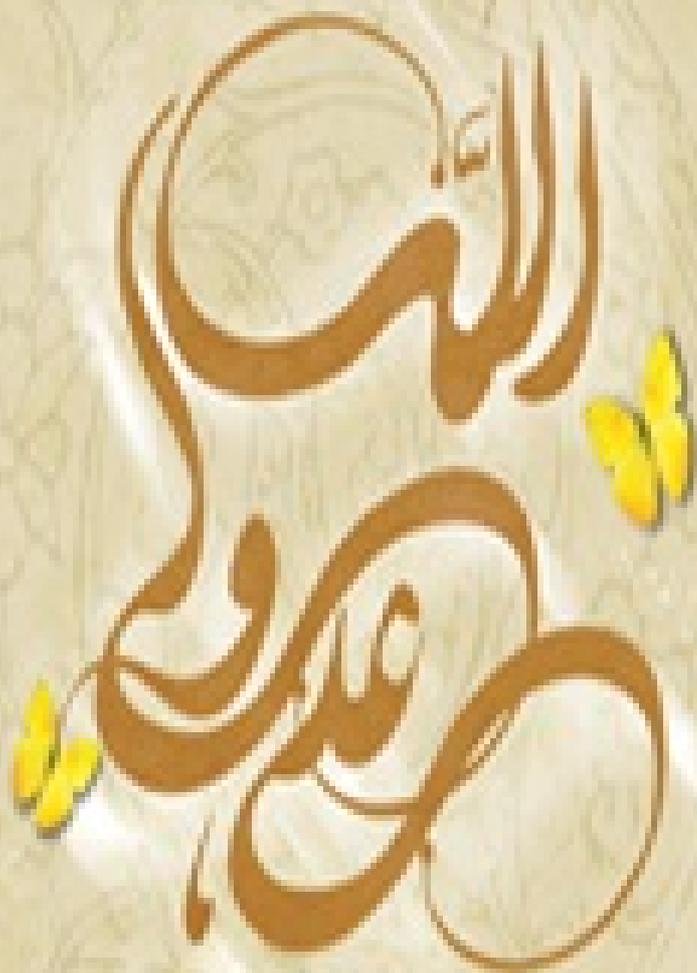
# Ghaemiyeh

Isfahan



WWW. [Ghaemiyeh.com](http://Ghaemiyeh.com)  
WWW. [Ghaemiyeh.org](http://Ghaemiyeh.org)  
WWW. [Ghaemiyeh.net](http://Ghaemiyeh.net)  
WWW. [Ghaemiyeh.ir](http://Ghaemiyeh.ir)

# AYATUL GHADIR



بِسْمِ اللَّهِ الرَّحْمَنِ الرَّحِيمِ

# AYATUL GHADIR

:Writer

AL-MOSTAFA CENTRE OF ISLAMIC  
RESEARCHES

:Published in print

AL-MOSTAFA CENTRE OF ISLAMIC RESEARCHES

:Digital Publisher

Ghaemiyeh center of computerized researches

# Contents

٥	Contents
١٠	AYATUL GHADIR
١٠	ID Book
١٠	INTRODUCTION
١٠	THREE QUESTIONS REGARDING MISSION OF THE
١٦	THE PROPHET'S SUCCESSION IS A SIMPLE THEME
١٧	THE SIX SERMONS OF THE FAREWELL PILGRIMAGE
١٩	CHAPTER ONE
١٩	PRELIMINARY DISCUSSION FOR THE EXEGESIS OF VERSE OF ISMA SUMMARY OF THE THREE VERSES OF GHADIR
٢٤	FIRST DISCUSSION
٢٤	THE PROPHET'S SUCCESSION IS A SUBJECT PROVIDED DURING HIS LIFETIME
٢٤	The First Evidence
٢٤	The First Evidence
٢٥	STORY OF THE AMIR BIN SA'SAA
٢٦	STORY OF THE KINDA
٢٧	STORY OF AMIR BIN AT-TUFEIL, HEAD OF THE GHATAFAN
٢٨	The Second Evidence
٣٢	The Third Evidence
٤٣	SECOND DISCUSSION
٤٣	THE PROPHET FORETELLS OF THE TWELVE SUCCEEDING IMAMS
٤٦	HADITH OF THE TWELVE IMAMS
٤٧	HADITH OF THE TWELVE IMAMS
٥٥	First
٦٣	Second

٦٤	I nira
٦٧	Fourth
٦٩	Fifth
٧٤	Sixth
٧٦	Seventh
٧٩	Eighth
٨٢	Ninth
٨٤	Tenth
٨٤	Tenth
٨٦	WAHABISM AND TERM OF QURAIISHI LEADERSHIP
٨٩	Eleventh
٨٩	Eleventh
١٢٣	EXEGESISTS' INVOLVEMENT IN SAFINA'S NARRATIVE
١٣٢	Twelfth
١٤١	THIRD DISCUSSION
١٤١	THE ISLAMIC PRINCIPALS IN SERMONS OF THE FAREWELL PILGRIMAGE
١٤٤	FIRST BASE
١٦٩	SECOND BASE
١٨٠	THE THIRD BASE
١٨١	THE FOURTH BASE
٢٠٥	THE FIFTH BASE
٢١٦	FOURTH DISCUSSION
٢١٦	THE PROPHETS' NEED FOR PEOPLE'S PROTECTION DURING CONVEYING THEIR MISSIONS
٢١٧	QURANIC SENSE OF CONVEYANCE
٢٢٠	MISSION OF OUR PROPHET IN CONVEYANCE
٢٢٧	FIFTH DISCUSSION

٢٢٧	THE QURAISHIS ARE THE REASON BEYOND THE PROPHET'S NEED FOR AN ADDITIONAL PROTECTION
٢٢٨	QURAISH IS ROOT OF VILLAINS
٢٣٣	CLANS OF QURAISH
٢٤٣	CONQUEST OF MECCA BEWILDERS THE JURISPRUDENTS
٢٥١	THE QURAISHIS AFTER CONQUEST OF MECCA
٢٥٨	THE QURAISHIS EMBRACE THE LEADERSHIP OF SUHEIL BIN AMR
٢٦٤	SUHEIL WORKS FOR INDEPENDENCE
٢٧٦	CONSEQUENCE OF THE INCIDENT
٢٧٩	OMAR THE CALIPH ATTESTS TERGIVERSATION OF THE QURAISHI
٢٨١	CHAPTER TWO
٢٨١	VERSE OF ISMA
٢٨٢	LOCATION OF THE VERSE
٢٨٣	THE SUNNI SCHOLARS' OPINIONS
٢٨٥	ASHAFII'S INDIRECT REPORTS
٢٨٦	THE INDIRECT REPORTS ARE ESTIMABLE OPINIONS
٣٢٠	WAHABISTS AND HADITH OF GHADIR
٣٣١	THE PROPHET'S PROGENY'S OPINION
٣٣٨	GENERAL REMARKS REGARDING THE OTHER OPINIONS
٣٤٠	EVALUATION OF THE OPPOSING OPINIONS
٣٤٦	QUESTIONS INVOLVING THE VERSE
٣٦٠	CHAPTER THREE
٣٦٠	STORY OF GHADIR
٣٦٢	RESULTS OF THE FAREWELL PILGRIMAGE
٣٦٣	FROM THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH, THE REVELATION AND THE QURAISHIS PRESSURED THE PROPHET
٣٦٥	THE PROPHET'S CARAVAN IS STOPPED BY THE REVELATION
٣٧٧	!WHAT FOR WAS IT AL-JUHAFI AND GHADIR KHUM

۳۸۳	THE PROPHETIC WORDING ACHIEVES THE AIMS AND UNVEILS THE QURAISHIS
۳۸۶	CHAPTER FOUR
۳۸۶	VERSE OF IKMALUDDIN
۳۸۸	SURA OF MAIDA IS THE FINAL QURANIC CHAPTER
۳۸۹	THE PROPHET'S PROGENY'S OPINION
۳۹۱	SUNNI NARRATIVES CONCORDANT TO THE PROPHET'S PROGENY'S OPINION
۳۹۴	THE CONTRADICTORY OPINIONS
۳۹۵	ORIGINATION OF THIS CONTRADICTORY OPINIONS
۴۰۲	INDICATION OF THE TWO STORIES
۴۰۳	OTHER OPINIONS
۴۰۸	VERSE OF IKMALUDDIN
۴۱۰	VERSE OF IKMALUDDIN AND THE FORBIDDEN MEAT
۴۱۱	MEANINGS OF PERFECTION AND COMPLETION THROUGH THE QURAN AND NAHJUL BALAGHA
۴۲۴	THE OBJECTIVE PERSPECTIVE
۴۴۶	CHAPTER FIVE
۴۴۶	VERSE OF MAARIJ
۴۴۷	EVENTS STIMULATED BY THE QURAISHIS
۴۵۸	THE QURAISHIS' NEW PREPARATIONS AFTER THE GHADIR DAY
۴۵۸	THE QURAISHIS' NEW PREPARATIONS AFTER THE GHADIR DAY
۴۶۱	FIRST QUESTION
۴۶۱	THE SUNNI REFERENCE BOOKS OF HADITH RECORD THE INCIDENT
۴۶۴	HEAVENLY STONES FOR THE QURAISHIS' SPOKESMEN
۴۶۵	MODELS OF THE SUNNIS' EXEGESES
۴۷۲	SECOND QUESTION
۴۷۷	THIRD QUESTION
۴۸۳	FOURTH QUESTION

٤٨٤	FIFTH QUESTION
٤٩٧	SIXTH QUESTION
٤٩٧	WAYS OF NARRATION AND DOCUMENTATION OF THE NARRATIVE
٥١٧	THE RESULT
٥١٩	SEVENTH QUESTION
٥٢٠	'THE OLD ENVY AND THE 'BLOOD LICK
٥٢٤	SONS OF ABDUD-DAR, CARRIERS OF THE QURAISHIS' PENNON
٥٢٤	SONS OF ABDUD-DAR GIVE A LESSON IN DEFENSE
٥٢٧	AN-NADR BIN AL-HARITH; CHIEF OF SONS OF ABDUD-DAR
٥٢٩	AN-NADR; A MEMBER OF THE PHARAONIC CONFERENCE AGAINST THE PROPHET
٥٣١	AN-NADR; THE MESSENGER TO THE JEWS
٥٣٢	THE REGISTRAR OF THE FIRST ACCURSED DOCUMENT
٥٣٥	DEMISE OF THE FIRST PHARAONIC DEMANDER
٥٣٤	AN-NUDEIR; AN-NADR'S BROTHER AND SUCCESSOR
٥٣٧	FOR THE PRO-QURAISH NARRATORS; AN-NADR WAS MUSLIM, IMMIGRATOR AND MARTYR
٥٣٨	?DID AN-NUDEIR FOLLOW HIS BROTHER AND NEPHEW IN OBJECTING AGAINST THE PROPHET
٥٤١	THE TWO -OR MORE- MOST LICENTIOUS OF QURAISH
٥٤٢	REFERENCES
٥٤٢	THE MOST IMPORTANT REFERENCES
٥٥١	TABLE OF CONTENTS
٥٦٠	About center

**AYATUL GHADIR**

**ID Book**

Verses of Ghadir

A SEARCH REGARDING THE PROPHET'S SERMONS ON THE  
FAREWELL PILGRIMAGE, AND AN EXEGESIS OF QURANIC

VERSES OF GHADIR

:AUTHORED BY

AL-MOSTAFA CENTRE OF ISLAMIC RESEARCHES

UNDER THE SUPERVISION OF THE SUPREME ISLAMIC

AUTHORITY

SAYYID ALI AL-SISTANI

**INTRODUCTION**

**THREE QUESTIONS REGARDING MISSION OF THE**

IN THE NAME OF ALLAH, THE BENEFICENT, THE

MERCIFUL

PRAISED BE ALLAH, AND HONORABLE AND PERFECT

PEACE BE UPON MOHAMMED AND HIS INFALLIBLE

.IMMACULATE PROGENY

There are three questions regarding missions of the prophets. These questions

.were not regarded adequately by scholars

First question: Conveying the Lord's missive is the original mission of the prophets. It is the pivot on which the prophets' duties and deeds are grounded

.This is purposed for substantiating the Lord's claim on His servants

A prophet, then, is a conveyor of an epistle. He fears the Lord and evades His ire

and torment if he squanders or violates the instructions. For this reason, the

.prophets were wont to call people to witness perfection of their conveyance

In addition, the prophets are not asked to coerce or compel people on admitting and accepting their missions. By the same token, they are not admitted to submit

.people to their missions

As a second rule, it is to say that coercion and compulsion is rejected in matters

respecting the divine religion. It is obligatory to preserve people's freedom of

believing or refutation. They are, likewise, free to commit themselves to the

.religion or deviate

This is the very meaning of opening school of life in this world, and testing people

p: ۱

in guidance or aberrance by giving them the ability of doing good and evil. The

result shall be shown in another stage and another world. Drawing people to the

religion by force contradicts principals of this test, and principals of freedom of

.option

Second question: The prophets' goals are dedicated to the grand issues of people

and societies. An apostle can be resembled to a divine engineer specialized in  
'construction of cultures, societies and history. From these points, the prophets  
missions should be looked upon. A scholar must ask himself how people's culture  
and history should have been in case this prophet had not been messaged by the

Lord, and what happened due to that prophet's conveying the mission. This  
wonderment may be addressed in another form; how should paganism be nowadays  
if Abraham was not chosen by the Lord for conveying the divine mission, or if he  
?did not found and plant bases and principals of monotheism in human societies

And how should the situation of the Arab lands specially, and the whole world  
generally, be if the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) was not chosen for  
carrying the divine mission and moving this latter prolongation in monotheism and  
?civilization

The Prophet's mission was forming a nation and leading it to occupying an  
advanced position, if not the pioneer, amongst the other nations. That formation  
.was the best in content and structure

Likewise, the Prophet's mission was establishing a ship, to find its way in the ocean  
of people and currency of history. He was keen on handing the captainship to his

p: ۲

household, whom were chosen and purified by the Lord Who gave them His Book  
.in heritage exclusively

If people reject their captainship, it will be unimportant for captainship to be held by any, till God manages His affair in this nation, and sends Mahdi, the Expected

Third question: It is indisputable that the Prophet's personality is present and effective in the process of conveyance, but it is very limited and minute. None can deny that the Prophet is intelligent, genius, author and selective. Disregarding mechanism, the reciprocator is seeking the Lord's guidance through means of satisfaction, faith and worshipping

The area in which the Prophet is allowed to practice his personal inference forms a narrow point in proportion to the large area of his practices

Hence, the Prophet's like is an engineer whose boss hands him the mission of giving effects of a large project. This engineer is satisfied that he should contact his boss frequently for evading any mistake. Meanwhile, he works, thinks and carries on working. But, he goes on contacting the center so that he receives stages of planning and consults for avoiding problems. At any rate, this example is a highly microscopic view of the Prophet's mission

Regarding the Center of the Prophet, Allah; the Praised, is unparalleled in entity and deeds. Depending upon the previous, any study respecting the Prophet's life account should regard these three matters. First, the Prophet's mission is carrying what is revealed to him. Second, his task is founding a nation to find its way in

.history. Lastly, he is to follow the Lord's instructions in every deed

This fact is evidently touched by a scrutinizing look at the Prophet's life account. It is obviously seen that Allah; the Exalted, managed the Prophet's affairs from start ,to finish. The Prophet was used to obeying his Lord's instructions submissively dependently and compliantly. Therefore, results of his deeds achieved an ,extraordinary attainment that exceeded intellectualities and senses of sociologists .founders of nations and establishers of civilizations

The Prophet could create an international civilized ideological extension in a relative period and the least material and humane casualties. Despite truculence of the Prophet's foes who led hard wars against him, casualties of both sides did not attain the number of two thousand. This was because that Prophet's management .was instructed by his Lord; the Glorified

Incessantly, the Quran was revealed to the Prophet since the first day of his Mission till few days before his decease. Gabriel; the angel, was visitating him frequently .with Quranic Verses, revelation, instructions, directions, answers and the like

So many are examples on matters of the divine presence and care in big, as well as small, affairs. All refer to the fact that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) would not have behaved personally except during applying the general lines and carrying on the detailed orders drawn by the divine revelation and conveyed by Gabriel, the angel. In many occasions, the Prophet (peace be upon him

and his family) ceased practicing any procedure since he was in wait for the divine

p: ۴

.revelation

”.The Prophet is reported to have said, “I have been given the Book and its like

Like of the Book stands for the instructions Gabriel carried (۱'). This means that his

(traditions were revealed to him, like the Quran.(۲

Besides, these instructions included the Prophet’s personal affairs; such as marriage, divorcement, dressing, eating, sleeping, rousing, ablution and even ,brushing the teeth. The Prophet’s endowment, detriment, cherishing, malice

residence, touring, satisfaction and rage; all were determined by revealed

.instructions

As it is recorded in Al-Kafi; ۴/۲۹, that Imam As-Sadiq (peace be upon him) relates

the story of that atheist who disputed, belied, harmed and threatened the Prophet

face to face. The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) became so angry that

vein of ire was clearly seen between his eyes. He nodded his head down when

Gabriel came to him and revealed, “Your Lord asked me to carry His compliments

to you and inform that the man in front of you is generous whose characteristic is

”.feeding people

Simultaneously, the Prophet’s ire vanished. He spoke to the man, “I would have

banished you and made you an example unless Gabriel carried my Lord’s

”information of your being a generous man whose characteristic is feeding people  
Your Lord favors generosity?” said the man. “Yes, He does,” answered the  
Prophet. “I do admit there is no god but Allah, and you are being the messenger of  
Allah. I swear by Him Who sends you with the truth, I have never rejected a  
beggar’s request,” declared the man

p: ۵

In Al-Kafi; ۱/۲۸۹, it is recorded that a man asked Imam Al-Baqir whether the  
Prophet’s nominating Ali was a personal act or according to a divine mandate  
Woe is you!” Imam Al-Baqir said angrily, “The Prophet (peace be upon him and  
his family) was too reverent to say what God did not order. Like precepts of prayer  
defraying the poor rate, fasting and pilgrimage, Ali’s nomination for the leadership  
was a precept of Allah

This theme can be taken as a thesis, or a number of theses, of a Ph.D. degree

\*\*\*\*\*

.Refer to Al-Idhah; page ۲۱۵(۱)

.Refer to Ad-Darimi; ۱/۱۴۵(۲)

### **THE PROPHET’S SUCCESSION IS A SIMPLE THEME**

The Prophet’s succession is a simple, not complicated, matter. The Prophet’s  
household and their adherents claim the Prophet’s nominating Ali as the Muslims  
coming leader. Hence, it is unacceptable for the Quraishis, or any others, to choose

.another, since the Prophet's choice was according to the Lord's instruction  
,The Quraishis denied the Prophet's nominating or willing any for his succession  
and that his (authority) should be distributed among the twenty three clans of  
,Quraish; his tribe. Therefore, they selected Abu Bakr; one of the Teim Bin Murra  
.for leadership. This man nominated Omar; one of the Edi, for holding his position  
By the advisory council, Omar nominated another Quraishi man who belonged to  
.the Umayya Bin Abd Shams. It was Othman  
They did neither elect any of the Ansars,(I) nor the Hashemites who were more  
meritorious than the other clans in this affair. The Quraishis conceived the

p: ٤

.Hashemites' excessiveness to join leadership to prophecy  
Thus, the matter is very simple. It deals with the question whether the Prophet did  
nominate a successor or not. Nevertheless, it is a complicated matter for the  
Quraishis who despise opening it since it affixes a big question mark on their  
,leadership system. However, they warned people against discussing this matter  
.claiming its being arduous, complicated and illegal

### **THE SIX SERMONS OF THE FAREWELL PILGRIMAGE**

Verses of Ghadir (II) are a part of the Quranic texts that considered Ali and the  
Prophet's household (peace be upon them). Particular books discussing the Quranic  
and prophetic texts regarding the Prophet's household were compiled by late and

-current Sunni and Shiite authors and exegetes. In this regard, we mention Al

Hafiz Abu Na'eem Alisfahani's *Ma Nazala Fi Ali Minel Qurani* (Quranic Verses

respecting Ali), An-Nisa'i's *Khassaisu Amiril-Muminin Ali* (Specifications of Ali

Amirul Muminin). These two books are well known and printed. The two volumed

.At-Tabari's *Al-Wilaya* is also mentioned, but it has not been printed yet

Throughout our discussing the three Quranic texts of Ghadir, we notice their firm relation to the Prophet's sermons during the Farewell Pilgrimage. (III) These texts are

;God's sayings: (O Apostle! Deliver what had been revealed to you from your Lord

and if you do it not, then you have not delivered His message, and Allah will

(protect you from the people; surely Allah will not guide the unbelieving people

This day have I perfected for you your religion and completed My favor on you)

and chosen for you Islam as a religion) and (One demanding, demanded the

p: v

(chastisement which must fall

Hence, it became necessary to discuss these six sermons as well, since they contained the Prophet's instructing his nation to follow the two weighty things; the

Quran and his household, after him, and the good tidings he carried to his nation in

sermon of Arafat, that Allah; the Exalted, solved the question of leadership and

(elected those twelve divine imams (peace be upon them

Moreover, it seems essential to discuss the relation between the Prophet (peace be

upon him and his family) and the Quraishi chiefs pertaining to the coming  
leadership of his household

For this work, we opt for the title ‘Ayatul Ghadir’ –Verses of Ghadir–, although it  
comprises all of the forecited topics. We consider that title as the most appropriate

However, more than a mere terminological exegesis of the Verses involved is  
discussed hereinafter

We hope these would be useful discussions by which God may reward us in the  
Hereafter and embraces us to the intercession of Mohammed and his immaculate  
progeny (peace be upon them

Al-Mostafa Center for Islamic Researches

Ali Al-Kurani Al-Amili

I)People of Yathrib who supported and received the Prophet and his followers who)  
immigrated from Mecca

II)Ghadir –or Ghadir Khum– is a place between Mecca and Al-Madina where the)  
Prophet declared the coming leadership and imamate of Ali and his sons

III)The Farewell Pilgrimage is the final ritual collective pilgrimage led by the)  
Prophet

.Rajab / ١٤١٩ A.H / ١٣

## CHAPTER ONE

### PRELIMINARY DISCUSSION FOR THE EXEGESIS OF VERSE OF ISMA SUMMARY OF THE THREE VERSES OF GHADIR

Allah; the Exalted, instructed the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) to guide his people to the rites of the Pilgrimage after he had guided them to the ritual prayer fasting and defraying the poor rate. That was just before starting the Farewell Pilgrimage.

The Lord also instructed him to lead them to the coming leader, and nominate him publicly. This was the Lord's norm with the entire prophets whom were taken to the Lord only after they had perfected the religion and delivered the divine Book to the nominated heirs to whom they must have pointed before people. The Prophet carried the Lord's instruction when he summoned people to participating in that final pilgrimage, so that he would teach them the rites, and nominate Ali (peace be upon him) as the coming leader and imam before them.

Nevertheless, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) anticipated that the Quraishis would object such a nomination for they had already born envy and malice against the Hashemites. He also expected that they would criticize his divine prophesy and accuse him of establishing a monarchy for his household similar to these of Khosrow and Caesar. If that happened, it would originate an apostasy among Muslims.

At any rate, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) performed the Farewell

,Pilgrimage, and addressed five sermons in Mecca, Arafat and Mina. In these sermons he guided people to the rites and regulations of the religion, and foretold of the coming twelve imams from his progeny, and emphasized that people would not be saved against

p: ٩

deviation unless they would hold fast to the two weighty things; the Quran and the .progeny

He also warned against the devious leaders and his companions who would avert, and

the Lord should deprive them of joining the Prophet on the Divine Pool on the .Resurrection Day

Because of the Quraishis' irritable situation, the Prophet did not emphasize on the coming leadership of his progeny officially. He also evaded ordering them of swearing

.allegiance to Ali (peace be upon him), during ceremonies of the Farewell Pilgrimage

During the journey back to Al-Madina, Gabriel the angel carried to the Prophet God's

saying: (O Apostle! Deliver what has been revealed to you from your Lord, and if you

do it not, then you have not delivered His message, and Allah will protect you from the (.people

Immediately, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) stopped the caravans in

Ghadir Khum, and delivered the Lord's message. He raised Ali to the pulpit, elevated

him from the arm and declared his coming leadership. He also gave orders of establishing a tent in which Ali would sit and people would offer congratulations on this

leading position. The Muslims offered congratulations and swore allegiance to him

On that occasion, God revealed: (This day have I perfected for you your religion, and completed My grace upon you and chosen Islam for you as a religion.) That was on the

eighteenth of Dhu'l-Hijja

Before and after the Prophet's arrival in Al-Madina, the Quraishis and hypocrites

started their activities against him. All these plots were foiled by the Lord Who

p: ١٠

protected His Apostle against any movement of mutiny or apostasy during his lifetime

Various means were used for this purpose. One of these was the heavenly chastisement

inflicted upon those who objected and protested against the Prophet. Jabir Bin An-Nadr

Bin Al-Harith Al-Abdari, whose father was chief of the Abdud-Dar and commander of the polytheists' army against the Muslims during the battle of Badr, was one of those objectors

:Abu Ubeid Al-Harawi's Gharibul Qur'an

After the Prophet's conveying the Lord's mandate in Ghadir Khum had been

prevailing among people, Al-Harith Bin An-Numan Al-Fihri (or Jabir Bin AnNadr Bin Al-Harith Bin Kilda Al-Abdari, according to Abu Ubeid's report) came to the Prophet and said: "O Mohammed! You have conveyed us the Lord's mandates of declaring there is no god but Allah and Mohammed is being the Apostle of Allah, and performing the prayers, the fasting, the pilgrimage, and defraying the poor rate. All these, we have admitted, were not enough for you till you raised your cousin from the arm and preceded to us and said: 'He whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master.' Is this matter originated from your person  
"or is it God's mandate

By Allah there is no god but Whom I take the oath, this is surely God's"  
.mandate," asserted the Prophet

Jabir turned his face towards his pack animal while saying: "O Allah! If Mohammed's words have been true, then rain us with a heavenly stone, or inflict a painful chastisement upon us." Before Jabir could reach his pack animal, the Lord  
p: ۱۱

rained him with a stone that fell on the head and went out from the anus. He was killed. Consequently, God revealed: (One demanding, demanded the chastisement  
(.which must befall

\*Despite the fact that a good number of Sunni reference books of Tafsir and hadith ,adopt the same exegeses of the three Verses revealed for the event of Ghadir Khum

there are others adopted another opinions. Most of such opinions are contradictory and varied.

The following discussions are introduced as a preliminary entrance to the exegesis of the three Verses of Ghadir

.Tafsir is exegesis of the holy Quran, and hadith is the Prophet's traditions\*

providing such a topic for discussion or inquiry before him. Besides, there are various prophetic texts regarding the Prophet's referring to imamate of his progeny

## **FIRST DISCUSSION**

### **THE PROPHET'S SUCCESSION IS A SUBJECT PROVIDED DURING HIS LIFETIME**

There are tangible evidences prove that the Prophet provided question of his succession

since the first stages of the divine mission up to the last of his honorable life. In addition

logic asserts so. It is also perceptible that the subject of succeeding the Prophet was very

acceptable and normal. This is contrasted to the Sunni reference books that claim the

Prophet's shunning nominating any for his succession and the Muslims' evading

#### **The First Evidence**

#### **The First Evidence**

First evidence is the uninterrupted texts regarding the Prophet's soliciting his advocacy

before tribes in the beginning of his divine mission, and asking them to protect him in conveying his Lord's epistle. Some of these tribes admitted so provided that they would

p: ١٢

have the leadership after him. The Prophet's answer was that he had been no more than

an apostle who had not had that matter in hands. It was God's concern to nominate anyone He desires

The most evident matter in this regard are stories of the Amir Bin Sa'saa and the Kinda

Both occurred in the first stages of the Prophet's solicitation. Story of Amir Bin At-Tufeil

occurred in the last days of the Prophet's lifetime

### **STORY OF THE AMIR BIN SA'SAA**

:Ibn Husham's As-Sira, ٢/٢٨٩

The Prophet (peace be upon him) came to the Amir Bin Sa'saa and offered his mission before them. A man called Baihara Bin Firas addressed at him, "By God I swear, I will overcome the Arabs if I assent to this Quraishi young man. Providing we will swear allegiance to you in this matter and God will give you victory over your opponents

"?will you hold us your position thereafter

".This is God's affair," answered the Prophet, "He holds it to whoever He desires"

We will make our necks the target of whatever is thrown at you, and when God gives“  
.you triumph it goes to others? Nay, we are not in need for your affair,” rejected they  
They used to provide what occurs to them during seasons of pilgrimage before a man  
who was too old to accompany them. When they were back, they told him that a man  
from Quraish and the Abdul-Muttelib had come to them and sought their support in  
his claim of prophecy, but they rejected. The old man stroke his head with both hands

p: ١٣

and shouted, “O the Amir! Can you catch him and change your situation? I swear by  
Him Who prevails my soul, no single son of Ishmael can lie in this affair. It is the real  
”!truth. Where were your minds when you rejected

.The same story is related in At-Tabari’s Tarikh; ٢/٨٤ and Ibn Kutheir’s As-Sira; ٢/١٥٨

In Al-Ghadir; ٧/١٣٤, the story is related to Ibn Husham’s As-Sira; ٢/٣٢, Ar-Rawdul

,Enif; ١/٢٦٤, Imaduddin Al-Amiri’s Bahjetul Mehafil; ١/١٢٨, As-Siretul Halabiya; ٢/٣

Zeini Dehlan’s As-Sira; ١/٣٠٢ (In the Margin of As-Siretul Halabiya) and Heikel’s

.Hayatu Mohammed

### **STORY OF THE KINDA**

:Ibn Kutheir’s As-Sira; ٢/١٥٩

:Abdullah Bin Al-Ajlah

:My father related the story of the Kinda to his chiefs. He said

As the Prophet sought the Kinda’s support in his advocacy, they stipulated that he

should hold them his position of authority after his death. “Authority is God’s. He  
(hands it over to whoever He desires,” answered the Prophet (peace be upon him  
Therefore, they rejected his solicitation

### **STORY OF AMIR BIN AT–TUFEIL, HEAD OF THE GHATAFAN**

:Ibn Kutheir’s As–Sira; ۴/۱۱۴

Ibn Abbas: Arbed Bin Qeis... and Amir Bin At–Tufeil... came to Al–Madina and sat  
before the Prophet (peace be upon him). “O Mohammed! What will you give me if I  
embrace Islam?” asked Amir. “You will be given what the Muslims are given, and  
forbidden from what the Muslims are forbidden,” answered the Prophet (peace be  
(upon him

Will you hold me your position after you if I embrace Islam?” asked Amir. “This“  
position is not yours or your people’s. I may give you leadership of battles,” said the  
p: ۱۴

(Prophet (peace be upon him

Now, I am the commander of armies of Najd. You may give me the leadership of the“  
Bedouins exclusively,” Amir said, but the Prophet rejected. “I will fill in your area  
with horses and fighters,” Amir threatened while he went out  
(God will protect against you,” commented the Prophet (peace be upon him“

:On page ۱۱۲, Ibn Kutheir records

;When Amir Bin At–Tufeil came to the Prophet, he asked for one of three matters

either governing the Bedouins, being the Prophet's successor or invading the Prophet  
with a two thousand horse army

Thereafter, Amir was diseased with plague at a house of a woman. He said, "Will I  
have a gland like that of a camel and die at a house of a women of (Salul)? Nay." He  
asked for his horse to ride. He was dead on the back of that animal

### The Second Evidence

The second evidence is that Ansar declared fealty to the Prophet on three terms

First, protecting the Prophet against matters they protect themselves against

Second, protecting his people and progeny as same as they protect their peoples and  
progenies

Third, avoiding contending with the meritorious of leadership since Muslims are not to  
elect for their leadership

This stands for complying with the man elected by the Lord; the Exalted, for leading  
after

the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). The third term shows obviously that  
the

principal of the divine election of the imams following the Prophet (peace be upon him  
and his family) was admissibly settled since the first stages of the Prophet's mission

p: ۱۵

Ansar did keep the first term. Unfortunately, they breached the other two terms very  
badly

.The most reliable reference books of hadith mentioned these three terms

:Al-Bukhari's Sahih; ٨/١٢٢

Ebada Bin As-Samit: We swore allegiance to the Apostle of Allah (peace be upon him) on listening and obeying him in good and bad conditions, and avoiding contending with the meritorious of leadership, and practicing and uttering the right wherever we are, and scorning any blame for the sake of Allah

The same is related in Muslim's Sahih; ٤/١٤٤, and An-Nisa'i's As-Sunan; ٧/١٣٧, in various narrations. He compiles them under the title 'Swearing on avoiding contending with the meritorious of leadership

.It is also recorded in Ibn Madga's As-Sunan; ٢/٩٥٧ and Ahmed's; ٥/٣١٤

:On page ٤١٥, Ahmed added

Sufian: Some people added the following statement to the narration: "Unless you see notorious violation

.Al-Beihaqi records it in his As-Sunan ٨/١٤٥

.Hadithists relate other narratives with the addition Sufian suggested

:Al-Bukhari, in ٨/٨٨, records

The Prophet (peace be upon him) solicited us to swear allegiance. We did. We... submitted to his stipulations of listening and compliance with him in auspicious and misfortunate situations, preferring him to ourselves, avoiding contending with the

.meritorious of leadership unless we see a notorious evidential atheism

.The same is recorded in Al-Beihaqi's As-Sunan; ٨/١٤٥

:In Ahmed's Al-Musnad; ٥/٣٢١, the following narrative is recorded

Ebada Bin As-Samit: The Prophet (peace be upon him) stated: "You should listen and obey in auspicious and misfortunate situations, prefer me to yourself and avoid ".contending with the meritorious of leadership even if you conceive it is your right

p: ١٤

These two additions are suspicious since swearing of allegiance occurred before the Prophet's immigration when there was no single exception from obedience. The question of preference of the Qurasishis was provided only after declaration of fealty to Abu ,Bakr

.and Sa'd Bin Ebada's objection, and the following incidents

This proves that the two additions were established because of the new climate of the

.relation between Ansar and the Quraishi leadership after the Prophet's decease

Moreover, no single narrative refers to the Prophet's stipulating the term of avoiding

.contending the meritorious of leadership, on the other Arab tribes

:Majma'uzzawa'id; ٦/٤٩

Ebada Bin As-Samit: As'ad Bin Zurara shouted, "O people! Do you realize what you are giving Mohammed (peace be upon him)? You are swearing you will battle the

".Arabs and the foreigners and the jinn and mankind

We are rivals of his foes, and friends of his adherents,” declared Ansar. Then they“ asked the Prophet to show his stipulations. He spoke, “You are asked to admit there is no god but Allah and I am the messenger of Allah, and perform prayers, and defray the poor rate, and listen and obey, and avoid contending the meritorious of leadership, and .protect me as same as you protect your souls and people

Hussein Bin Ali: In Aqaba, Ansar came to swear fealty to the Apostle of Allah (peace .(be upon him

Ali was ordered of receiving their swearing. “What should they swear for, God’s messenger?” asked Ali. “You should stipulate obedience of the Lord, protecting the Prophet (peace be upon him) and his household and progeny as same as they protect

p: ١٧

.their souls and progenies,” instructed the Prophet

It is noticeable that the Quraishi books of hadith affirm the point of avoiding contending with the meritorious of leadership, so that they would use it as a proof on depriving Ansar of having any share in the Quraishi leadership. On the other hand, they avoid recording the term of protecting the Prophet and his household and progeny as same as they protect

their souls, households and progenies, since this contradicts the good of the Quraishi leaders who attacked the house of Fatima and Ali (peace be upon them), and set fire on it

for blazing it with its abiders if they insist on denying declaring fealty to the imposed leadership

In chapter of 'The Prophet's mission of conveyance', narrations of other reference books will be cited

### **The Third Evidence**

Third evidence is the famous narrative of 'Dar'. The reference books of Tafsir and Sira

refer to this narrative during passing through God's saying: (And warn your nearest relations

This holy Verse indicates that the Lord; the Exalted, gave His orders of soliciting the

Hashemites exclusively in the first stages of the Prophet's solicitation. So, what

procedures did the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) take in this stage

There is an important topic to be minded in this regard. Recorders of Sira attempt to obscure the stage of soliciting the Hashemites exclusively, and invent the stage of pre-

Arqam's house and post-Arqam's house, instead, by recording doubtful and authentic

(and irrational and reasonable reports

How long did that private solicitation last? Was it a number of months, or years, till a

?divine mandate of expanding the solicitation was revealed

What is the purport of the divine mandate of dedicating Mohammed's prophecy to the

Hashemites before it was extended to include the Quraishis, the Arabs and the entire

?mankind

What is the purport of the Quraishi's decision of blockading the Hashemites who,

after

enforcement of this decision, encompassed the Prophet (peace be upon him and his

family) and tolerated that six-year blockade totally? They, despite their various

classes of

.faithfulness, showed no signal of weakness

What is the purport of the fact that except for the Hashemites, none could endure the

?entire misfortunes the Muslims had suffered

In the battle of Uhud, the entire Muslims absconded. But the Hashemites struggled

.alone

In the battle of Khandaq, no single Muslim had the courage to face that champion who

.challenged them, except that Hashemite hero

In the battle of Hunein, they were ten thousand Muslims when they absconded, while

the

.Hashemites stood alone

These facts and events can suggest a satisfactory explanation for the prophetic texts related in the Shiite reference books of hadith: “I have been sent to my household in private, and people in general

The holy Verse points out that warning the Hashemites was a matter outlined by the Lord; the Exalted. It refers also to the fact that the Prophet’s nominating his successor from among them was a step within that divine plan

:As-Suyouti’s Ad-Durrul Manthour; ٥/٩٧

(,Ali (God be pleased to him): When the Verse, (And warn your nearest relations ...

p: ١٩

was revealed, the Prophet summoned me. “O Ali!” said he, “As Allah ordered me of warning my nearest relations, I was depressed since I realized they would show me disgraceful matters whenever I provide this affair before them. Hence, I tried to shun the matter till Gabriel; the angel, came and threatened my Lord’s chastisement if I kept

on shunning. Now, I ask you to prepare some food on which you should cook a leg of a sheep, and make us a canteen of milk. Then, you should invite sons of Abdul

”.Muttelib entirely so that I will speak to them and convey this missive

I carried out the Prophet’s orders completely and invited sons of Abdul-Muttelib who were about forty men. Abu Talib, Hamza, Al-Abbas and Abu Lahab were among that group. As they all were present, the Prophet asked me to serve them the food I had

prepared. With his teeth, the Prophet incised that piece of meat and threw its parts on  
the edges of that trencher, and said, "Have it, by the Name of Allah

Sira is the Prophet's history and lifetime \*

.They all ate to excess. By God I swear, each one ate what I had provided to the entire

Then, the Prophet asked me to serve them with that milk. They all drank from that

canteen. I swear by God, each one drank a full canteen milk

As soon as the Prophet tried to speak, Abu Lahab interrupted and said, "See how your

man cast witchcraft on you." Therefore, they left before the Prophet spoke to them

p: ۲۰

The next day, the Prophet said to me, "You saw, Ali, how that man preceded me in

speaking. Today, you should prepare food as same as yesterday, and invite them

again

.I did the same and invited them. They ate and drank

!The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) spoke, "O sons of Abdul-Muttelib

By God, I do not know an Arab man who can bring to his people a matter better than

what I am bearing to you. I am conveying to you the welfare of this world and the

Hereafter. God has ordered me of soliciting you to this affair. Who will support me in

"?this affair

.I was the youngest among them when I shouted, "I will

.People began to laugh at me as they left the place

:As-Suyouti relates the same to another series of narrators. He records

Al-Bera Bin Azib: When the Verse, (And warn your nearest relations) was ...

.revealed, the Prophet invited sons of Abdul-Muttelib, who were about forty men...etc

Hence, As-Suyouti interrupts the report at this point, so that he would not mention the

rest of the Prophet's words. This style is commonly followed by the pro-Quraishis

reporters during referring to narrative of 'Dar', since the narrative shows that the

Lord

and the Prophet did elected the successor from among the nearest clan, since that

.day

:Al-Amini's Al-Ghadir; ١/٢٠٧

The following is a literal quotation of At-Tabari's narration which distinguishes the

.right from the wrong

:In his Tarikh; ٢/٢١٧ (first edition), At-Tabari mentions

Who will support me in this affair, and he will be my brother, successor and..."

p: ٢١

inheritor amongst you?" said the Prophet. The entire group kept silent when I, the

youngest among them, said, "I will, Prophet of God! I will be your backer in this

,affair." Hence, the Prophet took me from the neck and stated, "This is my brother

".successor and inheritor. You should listen and comply with him

The group went out laughing and saying to Abu Talib, "Well, he orders you of

".listening and complying with your son

,In this very form, Abu Jafar Aliskafi; the Mutazilite Baghdadi theologian, died in ٢٤٠ . records the report in his Naqdhul Othmaniya. He affirms authenticity of the narrative . It is also recorded in Burhanuddin's Anbau Nujeba Al-Abna; ٤٤-٨, and Ibnul-Athir's ;Al-Kamilu Fit-Tarikh; ٢/٢٤, and Abul-Fida Imaduddin Ad-Dimeshqi's Tarikh and Shihabuddin Al-Khafaji's Sharhu Shifa; ٣/٣٧ (This compiler interrupts the ,١/١١٤ last sentences of the narrative, and says: It is recorded in Al-Beihaqi's Delailun -Nubuwwa and other reference books in authentic documentation), and Aladdin Al Baghdadi's Tafsirul Khazin; ٣٩٠ , and As-Suyouti's Jam'u Jawami; ٤/٣٩٢. On page he also relates the narration to the six famous hadithists; Ibn Isaaq, Ibn Jarir, Ibn ,٣٩٧ Abi Hatem, Ibn Merdawayih, Abu Na'eem and Al-Beihaqi. Ibn Abil Hadid's Sharhu .Nahjil Belagha; ٣/٢٥٤, records the same report . Compiler of Al-Ghadir, then, protests against those who distort this narrative for the sake of seeking the Quraishis' satisfaction. At-Tabari, who records the narrative in his ,Tafsir relates it in his Tarikh, but he confuses the last words of the Prophet regarding Ali (peace :be upon him). At-Tabari records

Ibn Kutheir imitates At-Tabari. He mentions the narrative in the same previous form, in

his Al-Bidaya Wen-Nihaya; ۳/۴۰, and Tafsir; ۳/۳۵۱

:From the margin of Biharul Anwar; ۳۲/۲۷۲, the following is quoted

In addition to his bond of fraternity with the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family), which was concluded according to a divine mandate in the beginning of

(approach of Islam when God revealed, (And warn your nearest relations.))

This bond of fraternity was concluded according to a divine mandate, and was fallen in a

form of a covenant. The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) would not betake a

brother, vizier, associate and successor other than Ali. Likewise, Ali would not show any

blemish in supporting, backing and advising for the Prophet and the religion. It is as same

as Aaron's support to Moses (peace be upon him), in the way mentioned in the Holy

Quran. When the Prophet held bonds of fraternity between each couple of his

companions, he took in his consideration the relationship linking each two. He

fraternized Omar and Abu Bakr, Othman and Abdurrahman Bin Awf, Az-Zubeir and

Abdullah Bin Masud, Ubeida Bin Al-Harith and Bilal, Musab Bin Omeir and Sa'd Bin

Abi Waqas, Abu Ubeida Bin Al-Jarrah and Salim; the bond of Abu Hutheifa, Hamza Bin

(Abdul-Muttelib and Zeid Bin Haritha Al-Kalbi.)

At these moments, he says to Ali, "I swear by Him Who sends me with the truth, I delayed you so that you will be dedicated to me. For me, your standing is as same as

p: ۲۳

.Aaron's to Moses. Yet, no prophet comes after me. You are my brother and inheritor

You shall be with me in my palace in the Paradise. If any disputes you, say: I am the servant of Allah, and the brother of His Apostle. Except fabricators and liars, none should

(claim of so after you.) (۵)

Likewise, when the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) provided his advocacy

;before the tribes, none admitted him except the Amir Bin Sa'saa. Their spokesman Beihara, stated, "By God I swear, I will overcome the Arabs if I assent to this Quraishi young man. Providing we will swear allegiance to you in this matter and God will give

"?you victory over your opponents, will you hold us your position thereafter

.This is God's affair. He holds it to whomever He desires," answered the Prophet"

We will make our necks the target of whatever is thrown at you, and when God gives" you triumph it goes to others? Nay, we are not in need for your affair," they answered.

((۶

\*\*\*\*\*

,Refer to At-Tabari's Tarikh; ۲/۳۲۱, Ibnul-Athir's Al-Kamilu Fit Tarikh; ۲/۲۴(۳)

,Abul-Fida's Tarikh; ۱/۱۱۶, Ibn Abil Hadid's Sharhu Nahjil Belagha; ۳/۲۵۴

Ahmed's Al-Musnad; ۱/۱۵۹, Jam'u Jawami; ۶/۴۰۸ and Kenzul-Ummal; ۶/۴۰۱

.Refer to Ibn Husham's; ١/٥٠٤, Al-Muhabbar; ٧٠-١ and Al-Belathiri's; ١/٢٧٠ (٤)

.Refer to Ar-Riyadun Nedira; ٢/١٤٨ and Kenzul-Ummal; ٥/٤٥-٤(٥)

,Refer to Ibn Husham's; ١/٤٢٤, Ar-Rawdul Enif; ١/٢٤٤, Bahjetul Mehafil; ١/١٢٨(٤)

.Zeini Dehlan's; ١/٣٠٢ and As-Siretul Halabiya; ٢/٣

As a result, supposing the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) had not concluded

p: ٢٤

bond of fraternity and inheritance with Ali (peace be upon him) according to a divine mandate, he would not have wasted this opportunity and refuted them in such despairing

.words, while he was in need for support of such tribes

:An-Numan Al-Maghribi's De'amul Islam; ١/١٥

:(We have already recorded the following narrative of Ali (peace be upon him

When God revealed, (And warn your nearest relations), the Prophet invited sons of Abdul-Muttelib to a leg of a sheep and a cup of milk. They were more than forty men

Among them, there were at least ten men who used to have a whole slaughtered animal and drink a large pot of drinks. They ate and drank to excess

After that, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) addressed at them, "O sons of Abdul-Muttelib! Comply with me and you shall be kings and rulers of the lands

The Lord selected a successor, vizier, inheritor, brother and supporter for each prophet

He sent. Which one of you should be my successor, vizier, inheritor, brother and  
”?supporter

They all kept peace. He passed by them individually, but they all rejected. I was the  
youngest among them when he provided the affair before me. “It is I, God’s  
.messenger!” I said. “Yes, it is you, Ali!” answered the Prophet

When they left, Abu Lahab addressed at them, “He served you with a single leg of a  
sheep and a cup of milk, and you had to excess. This is an enough proof on his  
”.sorcery

They also laughed at Abu Talib when they addressed at him, “See how he preferred  
p: ۲۵

”.your son to you

Inevitably, the news of the Prophet’s invitation was publicized among the Quraishis  
and  
the Arab. They told each other that the new prophet gathered his relations and  
warned

them as he solicited them to the new religion. He also asked for a supporter and  
successor, but none accepted so except his young cousin; therefore, he betook him  
as a  
.supporter and successor

The previous three evidences undiscussibly assert that the Prophet’s succession was  
a

matter widely common for people since the earlier stages of his divine mission up to the last moments of his life. Furthermore, all people recognized that Mohammed's prophecy was a practical contrivance of formation of a state governed by him (peace be upon him and his family), and was in need for a successor. Hence, the entire tribes, from a material viewpoint, conceived his advocacy as a desirable plan that they should take a part in ,gaining his promise of handing his leadership over after him. These were Yemeni Adnani and Najdi tribes

This leads to the supposition that within the foremost Muslims there were hypocrites attracted by that contrivance and prophetic movement which seemed to be achieving victory in the future. Each of them might look forward to obtaining a leading position in .that state

This is the only way by which we can find a suitable interpretation to God's saying, (And We have not made the wardens of the Fire other than angels, and We have not made their number but as a trial for those who disbelieve, that those who have been given the Book

may be certain and those who believe may increase in faith, and those who have been the Book and the believers may not doubt, and that those in whose hearts is a disease and the unbelievers may say: What does Allah mean by this parable? Thus does Allah makes err whom He pleases, and He guides whom He pleases, and none knows the hosts of your Lord but He Himself; and this is naught but a reminder to the mortals), which was .revealed in Mecca

From the above, it is irrational for the sane to believe chiefs of Quraish who claim the Muslims' avoiding providing the question of the Prophet's succession during his ,lifetime .even in a form of a lawful question and their obligation towards such an issue Correspondingly, it is unacceptable to conclude that Muslims, who asked the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) frequently about their future and narrated several) .reports in this regard, did not ask him about their next leader and leadership

## **SECOND DISCUSSION**

### **THE PROPHET FORETELLS OF THE TWELVE SUCCEEDING IMAMS**

We believe that the Prophet's succession was a settled matter for the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family), since the Lord has given him the orders of conveying the

following leadership of his progeny to people. This is the Lord's tradition with the entire prophets whose progenies inherited the divine Book, judgment and prophecy. Mohammed, our prophet, is indisputably the best and the seal of the prophets. After him, there should be no prophecy. Hence, imamate and inheritance of the divine Book

p: ۲۷

should follow him. In like manner, his household and progeny are the best of the prophets' progenies. The Lord; the Exalted, has purified and preferred them, and gave

them the judgment and the divine Book exclusively. This is clear in God's sayings (Offspring one of the other...) and (Then We gave the Book for an inheritance to those)

(whom We chose from among Our servants

As he realized the Quraishis' envying the Hashemites and planning for taking them away from leadership after him, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) used styles of wisdom and graduality in his frequent announcements of the progeny's following leadership. A style of a prophetic ire was addressed at the Quraishis as they used rude practices and sayings against the Hashemites

The Farewell Pilgrimage was a golden opportunity for the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) to carry the divine mandate of his household's coming leadership, to the

nation, in a massive scope

After conveying the precepts and rulings, and expansion of the Islamic state, and

narrowness of dangers, and declaration of the Prophet's imminent departure, nothing remained but the declaration of the next leadership

In addition to authentic texts, logic proves that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his

family) paid the greatest attention to question of the succeeding leadership during the

Farewell Pilgrimage. The Quraishis recognized the Prophet's intendment; therefore

they spared no efforts for intercepting such a declaration. It is also proved that they

augmented their activities in that period for cutting off the declaration of nominating

Ali

p: ٢٨

and his progeny for the following leadership. Although there is a good deal of evidences

on each point previously mentioned, this discussion is too narrow to cover them all

We are to stop sufficiently at the Prophet's sermons in the Farewell Pilgrimage.

Abreast

of sermon of Ghadir, reference books prove that the Prophet (peace be upon him and

his

family) sermonized in five occasions in that period. Reference books should have

reported these prophetic sermons so completely, since there were thousands of

Muslims

,who listened to them, but, unfortunately, only parts of these sermons are excerpted

especially in the reference books authorized by the Quraishi caliphate

In the Pilgrimage, the Prophet (peace be upon him) addressed five sermons. The first was in Mecca on the seventh of Dhu'l-Hijja. The second was on day of Arafa. The third was on day of slaughtering in Mina. The fourth was on day of settlement in Mina and the five was on day of the first return in Mina, too.

'Strange and incredible contrast and discrepancy which refer to the Quraishis interference in relating contents of these sermons, were evidently noticed through reviewing these sermons in more than one hundred reference books of hadith. All that because these sermons assert the Prophet's ordering the Muslims of complying with his progeny after him, and warning them against engaging in discrepancies out of envy after they had received knowledge. Finally, the Prophet submitted them to an impeccable thorough evidence.

Despite firmness of that Quraishi darkening, we could receive some of these texts from

p: ٢٩

the reference books authorized by the ruling authorities themselves. However, these texts are adequate enough for recognizing the Prophet's instructions and affirmation on committing to leadership of his immaculate progeny after him

Unanimously, the entire sects of Islam agree that the Prophet (peace be upon him and

his family) provided the question of the next twelve imams during the Farewell Pilgrimage

Later on, contents of these sacred sermons will be cited. They comprise hadith of the two weighty things; the Quran and the Prophet's progeny, and hadith of the Prophet's Paradisiacal Pool and the companions whom shall be sent to the hell-fire as they were prevented from having from that Pool

:Al-Bukhari's; 8/127

Jabir Bin Samara: I heard the Prophet (peace be upon him) say, "There will be twelve princes..." Then, he said a word that I could not perceive. So, I asked my father about it. "All shall be from Quraish," asserted my father

:Muslim's; 6/3

Jabir Bin Samara: I heard the Prophet (peace be upon him) say, "Islam shall be fortified till twelve successors..." Then, he said a word I could not perceive. I asked my father about it. "All shall be from Quraish," asserted my father

Muslim records a similar narrative in which he states, "Then, he said something I could not conceive," instead of "Then, he said a word I could not perceive

:According to a third narrative recorded by Muslim, the following form is mentioned

This religion shall be kept in efficacy and power to twelve successors...” Then, he“

p: ۳۰

said a word I could not hear due to noise of people. I asked my father about it. “All

.shall be from Quraish,” asserted my father

Imitated by majority of reference books of hadith, Al-Bukhari does not refer to a  
signal

point showing that the occurrence fell during sermon of the Farewell Pilgrimage on

.Arafat. A number of books, however, refer to this point

,In Ahmed’s Al-Musned; ۵/۹۳, ۳۶ and ۹۹, it is written: (Jabir Bin Samara: On Arafat

the Prophet sermonized...) On page ۸۷: (The Prophet said during the Farewell

Pilgrimage...) and on page ۹۹, (Al-Muqaddemi: During his sermon in Mina, I heard the

(... Prophet

Later on, it will be proved that this remarkable matter had been repeatedly affirmed  
on

Arafat, Mina and Al-Kheif Mosque before it was declared in a formal obligatory

.decisive form in Ghadir Khum

What is the story of those twelve imams? What for did the Prophet provide their  
matter

before the greatest mass of Muslims who listened to their prophet while he was  
bidding

?farewell

Al-Bukhari answers: Those are not imams to follow the Prophet in leadership obligatorily. They are only virtuous princes who shall be in this nation at a certain period of time. The Prophet did only convey his Lord's foretelling to his nation. Indeed they are from Quraish, not the Hashemites solitarily. They will be from the twenty tribes of Quraish. None of Ansar, the Arab tribes or the non-Arab people shall be among them. This is the whole matter

What for did the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) convey this matter to his people during the Farewell Pilgrimage on Arafat? What is the practical affair ensued from so

Al-Bukhari answers: It is a matter of a prediction only. The Prophet wanted to foretell his people so that they would be cheerful. It is only a journalistic news empty of any practical element

Concisely, saving that sole narrative which cannot be perceived, Al-Bukhari does not refer to this subject. On the other hand, he records numerous clear-cut narratives respecting the menstruation of Aisha; Ummul-Muminin\*, during the Farewell Pilgrimage. He gives in details how the Prophet revered her and sent a nurse for helping her perform rites of consecration and Visitation

Muslim is a little bit fairer than Al-Bukhari. He opts for a narrative leading to the fact

that those twelve successors shall be ruling after the Prophet (peace be upon him and his

family). This narrative should recuperate Muslims since it settles the problem of the Prophet's following leadership. Those are imams nominated by the Exalted Lord, via the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). They deduce their legality from this divine nomination. Hence, the matter shall not be in need for a secret meeting or discrepancies leading to a bloody combat on power since the first stage of Islam up to now, and millions of victims, and dissensions leading to accumulation of weakness of the Islamic nation, till it was completely collapsed on the hands of the Ottomans

Ummul Muminin –mother of the faithful believers– is a name called on the Prophet's\* wives. It is originated from God's saying: (The Prophet has a greater claim on the

p: ۳۲

(faithful than they have on themselves, and his are as their mothers. ۳۳:۶

Muslim, however, adds: No, this problem was not solved. The Prophet had just referred

to those successors generally. He did not identify their names and personalities. Any of

the ten thousands at whom this serious matter was addressed, did not ask for an explanation for that general reference. None of them asked the Prophet: Who are they

!God's messenger

Had the Prophet referred to their names, or only the name of the first one, the entire clans of Quraish would have accepted and submitted, since they were pious clans who complied with the Lord and His Apostle

Muslim repeats the same words of Al-Bukhari: No! They are only godly people by whom Islam shall be fortified. They are from Quraish... Quraish only

Thus and so, Al-Bukhari and Muslim can never lead to an acceptable effect in the question of those twelve imams. They lock the entire doors and repeat the same words

of the Quraishis: Your Prophet did only refer to the smell of those twelve ones, during the Farewell Pilgrimage. You should only smell and keep peace

At any rate, there are other reference books of hadith that pay an attention, less than that

paid by Muslim and Al-Bukhari, to policy and politicians during reporting the Prophet's news. These books refer to working matters in the question involved. They relate the word 'after me' in a form referring to the fact that those imams should be ruling directly

(after the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

p: ۳۳

In his Al-Musned; ۵/۹۲, Ahmed relates the same narration to Jabir As-Siwai in the following form: (I heard the Prophet (peace be upon him) say: "After me, there shall

( "...be

On the same page, he refers to another form of the same narrative: (Jabir Bin Samara

The Prophet said, "After me, there shall be twelve successors. All shall be from Quraish." When the Prophet was back home, the Quraishis came and asked about the age following those successors. "Then, commotion shall be befalling," asserted the

(. Prophet

The phrase, 'After me', which refers to the direct stage after the Prophet, is mentioned

in both narratives. The second, likewise, reveals the Quraishis' care for the question regarding those twelve godly imams. It also avers that the story happened in Al-Madina

.not during the Farewell Pilgrimage. This point should be useful for the next points

.The Phrase was repeated in various narratives mentioned in other reference books

Jabir Bin Samara: The Prophet said, "After me, there shall be twelve princes..." As I ;could not perceive the next sentence, I asked some people... Ahmed's Al-Musned

.5/94

Jabir As-Siwai: The Prophet (peace be upon him) said, "After me there shall be .twelve princes..." As I could not hear the next sentence, I asked the man next to me

.All shall be from Quraish," clarified he. Ahmed's Al-Musned; 5/99 and 108

Following me, there shall be twelve princes." As I could not understand the next ...

-sentence, I asked the one next to me. "All shall be from Quraish," said he. At

p: ۳۴

.Tirmithi's As-Sunan; ۳/۳۴.

Jabir Bin Samara: I heard the Prophet say, "After me, there shall be twelve

.successors... Al-Bukhari's Tarikh; ۱/۴۴۶ No. ۱۴۲۶

.Abul-Qasim Al-Baghawi: Abdullah Bin Omar: I heard the Prophet say, "Behind me

.there shall be twelve successors." Ibn Hajar's As-Sawaiqul Muhriqa; page ۲۰

All the previous prove that the Prophet did provide the question of the next leadership during the Farewell Pilgrimage, and conveyed the Lord's mandate of those twelve 'ones

.being the legal leaders of this nation

This question will cite a number of questions and wonderments before the Quraishis and

:their reporters

First question: Why is it noticeable that narratives of that remarkable question are almostly restricted to a single narrator -Jabir Bin Samara As-Siwai- who was a ten year

old boy, maybe, during the Farewell Pilgrimage? Is it reasonable that any other individual could not hear these narratives except this boy? What for did the other ?companions attending there, avoid narrating this occurrence

Jabir's way of narration might have been attaining satisfaction of the Quraish

as it was proved as the most suitable. Therefore, its forms were recorded and admitted

under the supervision of the ruling authorities. Most surely, other individuals did

convey this occurrence, but in a style inappropriate to be publicized

Second question: Muslims were wont to ask the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) about the most diminutive features of each matter. They even interrupted his

speeches for addressing indicative questions. The narratives involved inform of the

Prophet's discussing a matter of a high importance. He (peace be upon him and his

p: ۳۵

family) was foretelling of a doctrinal, practical, momentous and futuristic matter.

These

narratives claim the Prophet's obscuring this most remarkable point of the issue

Finally, they claim that none of the Muslims asked or wondered about those godly

imams, and people's obligation towards them

How is it rational to believe that the Quraishis, who knocked the door of the Prophet's

house, in Al-Madina, for asking about those twelve imams, as the narrator himself

reported, did not ask him about these imam's identities and ages

Does the word 'Quraish' stand for Abu Bakr and Omar exclusively, in Al-Madina

Likewise, how is it rational that any Muslim, who attended the Farewell Pilgrimage

avoided asking the Prophet about those imams, their ages and people's obligation

?towards them

Third question: How come could the narrator not perceive the very important word that defined the identity of those twelve ones; so that he asked the man next to him

The same word could not be perceived by the narrator who reported the Prophet's addressing the same sermon in Al-Madina

Why do the reference books of hadith, authorised by the Quraishi caliphate, restrict Samara and Omar Bin Al-Khattab as the only persons who carried the missed word of the Prophet

Moreover, there are various questions insisting on revealing the hiddens of this narration, and urging scholars on scrutinizing in books of hadith and history

Hereinafter, we aim at focusing lights on the missed word, by providing a number of notes and questions

### First

Is (All shall be from my household), the origin of the statement (All shall be

p: ٣٤

? (from Quraish

?What is the reason beyond the absence of the most remarkable statement

?Who was that man the narrator asked about that word

In Ahmed's Al-Musned; ٥/١٠٠ and ١٠٧, it is recorded that the narrator himself could not perceive the statement; therefore, he asked about it

As I could not perceive the next statement, I asked my father. “He said: all shall be  
from Quraish,” asserted my father

He then said a word I could not perceive. My father was nearer to the Prophet. I ...  
-asked him about that word. He answered, “He said: All shall be from Quraish.” Al  
Hakim’s Al-Mustedrak; ۳/۶۱۷

In Ahmed’s Al-Musned; ۵/۹۰ and ۹۸, it is recorded that the Prophet himself intended to  
hide that word

He then said a word too silent to be heard. “What did he say?” I asked my father ...  
He said: All shall be from Quraish,” answered my father“

He then said a word with a silent voice. I asked my uncle, who was sitting before ...  
-me, about it. “O son! He said: All shall be from Quraish,” answered my uncle. Al  
Hakim’s Al-Mustedrak; ۳/۶۱۸

Jabir Bin Samara: The Prophet said, “For this nation, there shall be twelve custodians  
whom shall never be influenced by those who will frustrate them.” Then said a word  
with a silent voice that I could not perceive. “What was that word the Prophet had  
spoken quietly?” I asked my father. “It was: All shall be from Quraish,” asserted my  
father. At-Tabarani’s Al-Mujamul Kabir; ۲/۲۱۳-۴, hadith ۱۷۹۴

p: ۳۷

According to other narrations, it was people, not the narrator or the Prophet, who  
caused

.the word to disappear

This means that people –who were consecrating for their Lord on Arafat, living the last

moments of their Prophet and waiting for any word he would speak of– were noisy as if

they were in an auction, and some of them disturbed and shouted while the Prophet was

articulating the most sensitive word, so that the faithful believers would not perceive

People were crying, shouting, speaking loudly, making noise, standing and sitting while

:the Prophet was addressing his sermon

People began to shout ‘Allahu Akbar’ and make noise. Meanwhile, the Prophet ...

:pronounced a word I could not catch. “What did he say, father?” I asked. “He said

,All shall be from Quraish,” answered my father. Abu Dawud’s As–Sunan; ۲/۳۰۹

.and Ahmed’s Al–Musned; ۵/۹۸

Then, he pronounced a word I could not hear because of people’s noise. “What...

did he say, father?” I asked. “He said: All shall be from Quraish,” answered my

.father. Ahmed’s Al–Musned; ۵/۹۸

.People began to shout... Ahmed’s Al–Musned; ۵/۹۳ ...

People then began to make noise and speak aloud. I could not understand the ...

.word after ‘All...’ Ahmed’s Al–Musned; ۵/۹۹

This religion shall be kept in efficacy and power to twelve successors who shall“ ...

...be given victory over their opponents...” Then people began to stand and sit

.Ahmed’s Al-Musned; ٥/٩٩

Regarding those whom Jabir asked about the missed word, most of narrations affirm that he asked his father; Samara. Hence, the testimony of including the entire clans of

p: ٣٨

Quraish with the Hashemites, in the question of the next twelve imams, depends upon

authenticity of Samara. None could not prove that Samara’s being Muslim, even. This

fact is proved by narrations authenticated by Muslim and Al-Bukhari, and others

:However, there are other forms of the narration proves other things

”As I asked the entire people, they answered, “He said: All shall be from Quraish ...

.Ahmed’s Al-Musned; ٥/٩٢ and ٩٠

.I asked people, or the man next to me, “What...” Ahmed’s Al-Musned; ٥/١٠٨ ...

-As I could not perceive that word, I asked the one next to me... Ahmed’s Al ...

.Musned; ٥/٩٩ and ١٠٨

At-Tabarani, however, asserts that Jabir claimed people’s alleging that the Prophet ,said

.”All shall be from Quraish“

I could not understand what he said next; therefore, I asked people. They claimed ...

,his saying, “All shall be from Quraish.” At-Tabarani’s Al-Mujamul Kabir; ٢/٢٤٩

Is it credible that the most remarkable word identifying the twelve imams of whom the

Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) foretold, could be vanished in that quiet

?silent circumstance on Arafat, and none would ask the Prophet about

A scholar may approach the fact when he looks at the other narrations related by Jabir

Bin Samara himself, regarding that the Prophet was riding on his pack animal while he

was declaring these words. This asserts that the Prophet tried to make the entire

.attendants hear and listen

Then, the Prophet's voice vanished. I asked my father who was nearer to the ...

p: ۳۹

.Prophet's pack animal... Ahmed's Al-Musned; ۵/۸۷

They also relate that the Prophet ordered a man of sonorous voice to repeat his words as

.aloud as possible, so that people would hear

Rabia Bin Khalaf Al-Jamhi was a man of sonorous voice, the Prophet ordered of ...

repeating his words aloud on day of Arafat. He was standing before the Prophet's

she-camel. "O people! Do you realize this month?" said the Prophet and ordered

Rabia of declaring aloud. He did. "Yes, it is the sacred month," people answered

affirmatively. "God has surely deemed your blood and assets amongst you as sacred

as this month, till the day on which you shall meet,” said the Prophet and ordered

...Rabia to declare aloud

Ibn Abbas: ... When he halted on Arafat, the Prophet (peace be upon him) ordered

Rabia Bin Umayya Bin Khalaf, the man with a sonorous voice, to stand just before his

...she-camel and repeat his words aloud

.At-Tabarani relates this report to authentic narrators. Majmauz-zawaid; 3/27.

Although they relate the same narration to the same reporter in various forms, the

missed word, in the entire forms, is invariably the same. This matter contends the claim

that the statement was ‘All shall be from my progeny’ or ‘All shall be from my

’household’, not ‘All shall be from Quraish

They also relate that the narrator asserted the Prophet’s sermonizing so in Al-  
Madina

not Arafat. However, the missed word was the same. It is the identity of those twelve  
imams

Jabir Bin Samara: My father and I came to the Prophet (peace be upon him) who was

p: 40

”...saying, “This affair shall be kept in excellence till there shall be twelve princes

Then, he said a word I could not perceive. “What did he say?” I asked my father. “He

said: All shall be from Quraish,” asserted my father. Ahmed’s Al-Musned; 5/97 and

The same narration is moved to the small mosque of Al-Madina. Nevertheless, the missed word is invariably the same. Jabir Bin Samara could not understand it till he

asked Omar Bin Al-Khattab, the Quraishi caliph. Omar answered

The Prophet (peace be upon him) was on the pulpit when he addressed, "There shall

be twelve custodians from the Quraishis. They shall not be influenced by their

opponents." Omar Bin Al-Khattab (God be pleased to him) and my father were

among people. They all asserted the saying as same as I could perceive. At

.Tabarani's Al-Mujamul Kabir; ٢/٢٥٦, hadith ٢٠٧٣

(.The Prophet... (The same previous narration

Al-Bezar relates this narration to Jabir Bin Samara alone. He adds: When the Prophet

was back home, I followed him to ask about the stage following those twelve ones

.Commotion shall be coming next," said the Prophet"

.This narration is related by authentic narrators. Majma'uzzawaid; ٥/١٩١

The text became: 'Twelve custodians opposed by people.' A group among whom was

Omar Bin Al-Khattab and the narrator's father became the attesters of the text.

,Hence

place, time and persons of the occurrence were changed. Yet; the missed word is

.invariably the same

A stranger matter is that while they relate the narration to Abu Juheifa, the missed

word

.is still invariably the same! Yet, the narrator, here, asks his uncle, not father

Awn Bin Abi Juheifa: His father: I was accompanying my uncle to the Prophet (peace be upon him), when he spoke, “Affairs of this nation shall be kept in rectitude)

.till twelve successors go on...” He then pronounced a word I could not perceive

What did he say, uncle? I asked. “He said: All shall be from Quraish,” asserted my“

.uncle. Al-Hakim’s Al-Mustedrak; ۳/۶۱۸

(Awn Bin... (The same previous narration

At-Tabarani relates it in his Al-Mujamul Kabir and Al-Mujamul Awsat to authentic

.narrators. Al-Bezar also relates it. Majmauzzawaid; ۵/۱۹۰

Eventually, we find ourselves facing an unprecedented phenomena in the entire traditions of the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). It certainly refers to a highly exceptional matter. This matter is hidden beyond the statement, ‘All shall be from Quraish’.

It is also supposable that the original narrator is Omar himself. It was he who affirmed

.and corrected to Jabir Bin Samara; the boy

Al-Khezaz Al-Qummi in his Kifayetul Athar; page ۹۰, relates the same report to Omar

.only, without referring to Samara or his son or Abu Juheifa or his uncle

:Omar Bin Al-Khattab ...

”...I heard the Prophet (peace be upon him) say, “After me, Imams shall be twelve

,He then pronounced a word so silently that I could hardly perceive. I heard him say

All shall be from Quraish.”... Al-Khezaz Al-Qummi in his Kifayetul Athar; page“

.۹۰

Depending on this narrative, which is the most authentic for us, it is provable that

p: ۴۲

,generalizing the identity of those twelve imams to include the entire clans of Quraish

not the Hashemites dedicately, was invented by Omar. In addition, it coincides his

saying of “The Quraishis reject that the Hashemites join leadership besides  
”,prophecy

which he frequently addressed at the Hashemites during and after the Prophet’s  
.lifetime

## **Second**

.The divine promise of unknown leadership is an impracticable matter

The promise of the coming of twelve imams is a divine word of the Wise, the Aware. It

is a traditional promise of imams after a prophet. It was given to the previous nations,  
as

well. It is seen as a mercy to this nation by which people can settle their entire  
problems

they will certainly face after their prophet. How is it, then, practicable for the Lord to

?promise His Apostle of unknown leaders

It is understandable that the Exalted Lord did promise the previous nations of the  
advent

of an Apostle named ‘Ahmed’ after five centuries. This was conveyed by Jesus (peace

be upon him). This reveals the impracticability to admit that the Lord promised the seal of nations of godly custodians, without naming their leading one at least, or naming their clan. It is unacceptable for Him to promise of men coming amongst twenty three clans that are disagreeing with each other on the meanest mundane affairs. Giving credence to such a lie leads to imputing unwisdom to the Glorified Lord and His Apostle (peace be upon him and his family). This is a matter cannot be said by any

p: ۴۳

!Muslim, or any fair orientalist

It happened sometimes that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) addressed a general idea or foretelling at people, expecting their inquiry, so that his answer would be more effective. But, in our question, Muslims' inquiries, as well as the Prophet's answer, are nonexistent. They are existent in reference books of Shias only

**Third**

.From Quraish, but from the Prophet's progeny

Supposing the problematic points of the narration involved are disregarded, and the Prophet's nominating those twelve godly Quraishi custodians is acceptable, a question

?will be arisen: Which tribe of Quraish is intended

Clans of Quraish are more than twenty. According to authentic narratives recorded in

the most reliable reference books of hadith, God; the Exalted, has preferred the Quraishis to the Arabs, and preferred the Hashemites to Quraish. Is it then rational that God chooses those twelve imams succeeding the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) from a clan other than the Hashimites

:The following narrative is recorded in Muslim's Sahih; ٧/٥٨

Wathila Bin Al-Asqa: I heard the Prophet (peace be upon him) say, "God has chosen the Kenana amongst sons of Ishmael, and chosen the Quraish amongst the Kenana and chosen the Hashimites amongst the Quraish, and chosen me among the Hashemites

As he relates the same narration on page ٢٤٥ part ٥, At-Tirmithi decides it as a oneway qualified narration. On page ٢٤٣, he decides it as an authentic qualified narrative

:Following this, At-Tirmithi records a number of narratives of the same supposition

p: ٤٤

Al-Abbas Bin Abdil-Muttelib: I told the Prophet that the Quraishis discussed their lineages, and when they mentioned him, they likened him to a date palm tree planting in a junkyard. The Prophet (peace be upon him) commented: "When God created things, He made me with the best party. Then, He made me in the best tribe. Then, He made me in the best house. Hence, I am the best party, tribe and house

(.This is a qualified narrative)

Following this, At-Tirmithi writes an alike narrative with another series of narrators.

He

.decides as a one-way authentic narrative

Ibn Abbas: House of Imran, mentioned in God's saying, (Surely Allah chose Adam and Noah and the descendants of Abraham and the descendants of Imran above the

nations), are the believers among sons of Abraham, Imran, Yasin and Mohammed

.peace be upon him). Al-Bukhari's Sahih; ٤/١٣٨)

Quranic and prophetic texts respecting selecting, preferring, favoring and preceding

the

Hashemites to the Islamic nation, are too many to be covered in this discussion. This preference is by the reason that the Prophet's progeny are being part of them, and

they

are the diamond of the Hashemites and their best. Generally, they are the diamond of

.sons of Adam

Taking Al-Bukhari's testimony, a scholar can conclude, by processing a simple equation, that those twelve men are being the progeny of Mohammed (peace be

upon

him and his family). In the earlier narrative, it is proved that the twelve imams are chosen amongst the Quraishis. In the latter, it is proved that Mohammed's progeny

are

p: ٤٥

chosen, like Abraham's. Hence, the twelve expected imams should be Mohammed's

progeny whom are selected by the Lord. At a least criterion, those twelve men should be among Mohammed's progeny. This is also advocated by Al-Bukhari's narrative that

tells of Ali's being the first complainant on the Resurrection Day. This means that Ali shall be bearing an important issue preferred to the entire issues of this nation

The issue, however, can be understood from Ali's following saying recorded in Nahjul Belagha; ١/٨٢

By God I swear, the Quraishis bear malice against us for one and only reason. It is the

Lord's preferring us to them. Then, we permitted them to gain entry into our group Hence, they are applicable to the poet's saying

It is we who endowed you this elevation, and you were not elevated, and we encompassed you with swords and spears

Al-Bukhari's Sahih; ٥/٩

Qeis Bin Ebada: Ali Bin Abi Talib (God be pleased to him) said, "I will be the first one who kneels before the Beneficent God for litigation on the Resurrection Day

#### Fourth

Prophetic texts explain the narrative of the twelve men

It is unanimously agreeable that the Prophet's texts explicate each other, like the Quranic. This is a perceptual principal relied upon by the entire nations. Naturally, any nation should scrutinize the other practical and articulate texts of their prophet for

.recognizing the twelve men of whom the prophet had foretold

-A deep look at our Prophet's words about his progeny; Ali, Fatima, Al-Hassan and Al

Hussein (peace be upon them), removes any doubt in proving the fact that those

p: ٤٤

persons, whom were frequently praised and acclaimed by the Prophet who does  
never

,speak out of desire, are the very intended in the text involved. As a matter of fact

Muslims agree that those persons were frequently praised by the Prophet in various  
occasions. The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) declared that those  
persons

.were purified thoroughly by the Lord. This fact is recorded in an evident Quranic text

He also committed the Muslims to cherishing them and blessing them during their  
daily

prayers. He deemed unlawful for them to receive alms and, instead, he legislated  
their

enjoying a share of the one-fifth rate imposed upon Muslims. Finally, the Prophet's  
will

was adhering to them besides the Quran. He named them the minor weighty thing  
after

the Quran; the major one. These matters are proved by authentic reports mentioned  
in

.the most reliable reference books of hadith

The Prophet's words of praising and applauding his progeny, and warning against

wronging and opposing them, are too many to be covered in this discussion. At any rate

.these words are good examples for the mindful and the seekers of truths

## Fifth

.Twelve imams and twelve months

Narrations appertained to the Prophet's sermons during the Farewell Pilgrimage, assert

that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) referred to roundness of time to its

first creation when he mentioned the twelve imams. Thereafter, he recited God's ,saying

Surely the number of months with Allah is twelve months in Allah's ordinance since)

(the day when He created the heavens and the earth, of these four being sacred

p: ۴۷

:Al-Bukhari's; ۵/۱۲۶ and ۲۰۴, and ۶/۲۳۵

:Abu Bakra: the Prophet (peace be upon him) stated

Time has rotated to the first creation of the heavens and earth. A year is twelve ,months among which there are four sacred ones. These are Dhu'l-Qada, Dhu'l-Hijja

.Muharram and Rajab. The first three are successive

.Abu Dawud relates the same on ۱/۴۳۵. Ahmed relates it in his Al-Musned; ۵/۳۷

In Majma'uzzawaid; ۳/۲۶۵, the same narration is related in a style more accordant to

.the Prophet's eloquence than Al-Bukhari's

Time has rotated as same as the first day on which the Lord created the heavens...

and the earth. (Surely the number of months with Allah is twelve months in Allah's ordinance since the day when He created the heavens and the earth, of these four being sacred. That is the right reckoning; therefore, be not unjust to yourselves.) Do

...not apostatize after me that you will be killing each other

Sunni exegetes cited the custom of postponing the sacred months as the meaning suggested by the Prophet in this narration. Hence, he suggests a new beginning of time

.which leads to canceling that custom

As a matter of fact, this exegesis is unconvincing since custom of postponing the sacred

month leaves no effect on time and the universe, that its cancellation leads to creating a

new beginning to time. Secondly, there is no single indication to any relation between

rotation of time and the custom of postponing the sacred months. Each is an

independent topic. Hence, exegetes are mistaken when they establish such a .relation

p: ٤٨

As the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) was in a situation of bidding his people farewell and providing the next stage of guidance, aberrance, rulings, beliefs and

paths to the Paradise and the hell-fire, it is most likely that he intended to say that a new stage of the divine guidance and aberrance would be beginning since that day. He also intended to say that the material movement of time is based upon the twelve months while the mental movement is based upon acceding to the twelve imams. Material and mental existence of those imams coincides the system of the twelve months which is effective in the movement of this universe

This view is supported by sacredness and consecration of number twelve in the Quran

The Lord identifies twelve chieftains for the Israelites, and twelve apostles for Jesus. Similarly, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) asked Ansar to elect twelve chieftains in the earlier stage of their declaration of fealty. He also foretold his people of the coming of twelve imams. Moreover, holy texts assert that aberrance of this nation is originated by twelve misleading men from the Prophet's companions. Consequently, in the face of each imam there should be a misleading man, and in the face of each prophet

there should be a nefarious enemy whose function is inveigling people :God; the Exalted, says: (And the day when the unjust one shall bite his hands, saying

O! Would that I had taken a way with the Apostle. Woe is me! Would that I had not

p: ۴۹

taken such a one for a friend! Certainly he led me astray from the reminder after it had

come to me; and the Satan fails to aid man. And the Apostle cried out: O my Lord! My people have treated this Quran as a forsaken thing. And thus have We made for every prophet an enemy from among the sinners, and sufficient is your Lord as a Guide and a

(Helper

:Muslim's Sahih; ۸/۱۲۲-۳

The Prophet stated: "There are twelve hypocrites among my companions. Eight of them shall never see the Paradise until a camel passes through the eye of a needle

Eight of them shall be killed by an epidemic. And four shall..." I could not memorize the rest

The Prophet stated: "There are twelve hypocrites among my people. They shall never see or smell the Paradise till a camel passes through the eye of a needle. Eight of them shall be perished by an epidemic. A flaming lamp shall be emerging between their shoulders and flowing out of their chests

Abut-Tufeil: A sort of inconsistency was arisen between Hutheifa and one of people of Aqaba cabal. "I adjure you by God to answer me about the number of people of Aqaba cabal," the man asked Hutheifa. "You should answer him," people urged

Hutheifa spoke, “Well, we were told they had been fourteen men. They should be fifteen if you were one of them. By God I avow, twelve of them are foes of the Lord and His Apostle in this world and on that day when witnesses shall be arising

p: ٥٠

.The same is recorded in Ahmed’s Al-Musned; ٤/٣٢٠ and many other hadithists. Thus and so, it is not unacceptable to regard that the Prophet’s intention was telling people that the Exalted Lord has established mankind on laws of guidance and aberrance since the first day of creating the heavens and the earth. These laws are executed by elements of providing evidences and respiting people to choose either guidance or aberrance. Like positive and negative, elements of guidance and aberrance should be befalling together. The Lord then has inspired human souls to distinguish the right from the wrong. As He descended Adam to this earth, the Lord descended the Satan with him. With each prophet, there was a single or a number of misleading people. In this nation, the number of the leading imams is equal to that of the misleading hypocrites; which is twelve. Hence, a new rotation of guidance and aberrance has begun in the same way when it began with Adam and the Satan. This is the meaning of the new beginning of time that leads to termination of an age and .beginning of another

This idea is supported by the exegesis of the Quranic Verse, (Surely the number of

months with Allah is twelve months in Allah's ordinance since the day when He created

.the heavens and the earth), adopted by the Prophet's progeny

## Sixth

.Jabir As-Siwai; reporter of the narration

As the Sunni most reliable reference books of hadith relate the narration of the twelve imams to Abdullah Bin Masud, Abu Juheifa and Jabir Bin Samara As-Siwai, they

p: ۵۱

.depend upon mainly

Jabir Bin Samara Bin Jenada. It is said that he is son of Amr Bin Jundub Bin Hujeir

Bin Riab Bin Habib Bin Sawaa Bin Amir Bin Sa'saa As-Siwai. Others say he is one

.of Amir Bin Sa'saa's clan. Ibn Hajar's Tahthibut Tahthib; ۲/۳۵

.Jabir and his father are confederates of the Zuhra. At-Thehbi's; ۳/۱۸۷

This matter backs the doubt of Jabir's being Quraishi. If he had been one of the Amir

.Bin Sa'saa, he would not have confederated the Zuhra

-I myself read At-Thehbi's saying that Jabir was dead during the reign of Abdul

Melik. Ibn Sa'd alleges that Samara; the father, embraced Islam on day of conquest

.of Mecca. None else did mention his death. Ibn Hajar's Tahthibut Tahthib; ۴/۲۰۶

This takes us to the fact that Samara was one of the 'released'. It also points out that

-At

Thehbi doubts whether Samara embraced Islam or not. Therefore, he says, "Ibn Sa'd

”...alleges that

Al-Bukhari, in his At-Tarikhul Kabir; ٤/١٧٧, claims Samara’s being one of the

.Prophet’s companions

Jabir is the child of a ‘released’. He was an infant during conquest of Mecca. His death was in ٧٩ A.H. He relates that after the day of conquest of Mecca, the Prophet (peace be

upon him and his family) passed his hand over faces of the small boys who were performing prayer in Al-Madina. He was one of those small boys. This is recorded in

.Siyeru Alamin Nubela; ٣/١٨٧

-Jabir might have lived in the custody of Sa’d Bin Abi Waqas; his maternal uncle, in Al

p: ٥٢

Madina. It was related that he had participated in conquest of Madain before he moved

.in Kufa where he built a house for himself

,All the above proves that Jabir was a teenage during the Farewell Pilgrimage. Hence the only reliable narrator of this narration is a teenage son of a ‘released’, that was a confederate of Quraish

!How strange were the chiefs of this nation and masters of the Prophet’s companions They had not possessed intellectuality of that teenage ‘released’ boy who cared for the

future of his nation and the coming godly imams! Or how firm were the Quraishi ruling

authorities who had completed full control on the prophetic texts. They disallowed the Sunnis to record and publicize the narrations appertained to the coming twelve imams of whom the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) had foretold, except that of this teenage

### Seventh

.Marks of authenticity given to the three narratives

There are three forms and three narrators of the narrative regarding the twelve imams

in the Sunni reference books of hadith. They agree upon authenticating Jabir Bin Samara's narration. Some of them decide the authenticity of Abu Juheifa's narration while majority decide it as a qualified with a rather doubtful narrator. Regarding Ibn Masud's, they give opposite marks to his narration since, as they claim, Mujalid Bin Sa'eed, whom is ruled as trustful by An-Nisai and some of specialist scholars only while others rule his doubtfulness, is within the series of narrators

As a matter of fact, Samara; Jabir's father, and Omar Bin Al-Khattab should be added to

p: ۵۳

the three previous narrators. Majority of narratives affirm that those two men informed

Jabir of the missed word. Moreover, Omar Bin Al-Khattab should be regarded as a main

.narrator according to the forecited narration recorded in Kifayetul Athar

.The following is a number of the hadithists' opinions in Ibn Masud's narration

:Majma'uzzawaid; 5/190

:The Twelve Successors

Masruq: Ibn Masud taught us the Quran when a man asked whether they had asked the Prophet (peace be upon him) about the number of the successors who would be  
",ruling this state. "I have never been asked such a question since I was in Iraq  
asserted Ibn Masud, and went on, "It is yes. We have asked the Prophet (peace be upon him) this question, and he answered that they would be twelve, like the number  
of the Israelites' chieftains

This narration is recorded by Ahmed, Abu Yali and Al-Bezar. One of its narrators is)

.Mujalid Bin Sa'eed. Except An-Nisai, majority of hadithists rule his doubtfulness

(.The other narrators are authentic

The same is recorded in Al-Hakim's Al-Mustedrak; 4/501, who adds: I am too short to  
.regard narrations of Mujalid and his likes

:Ibn Hajar, in his As-Sawaiqul Muhriqa/20, rules eligibility of the narration. He records

...,Ibn Masud relates, in a qualified documentation

As-Suyouti, in his Tarikhul Khulefa/13, decides eligibility of the narration, too. He

...records: Ahmed and Al-Bezar records the qualified narration of Ibn Masud

Al-Bussiri, as the compiler of Kenzul Ummal; 6/189 records, rules eligibility of the

narrations. He says: Museddid, Ibn Rahawayih, Ibn Abi Sheiba, Abu Yali and Ahmed

p: ۵۴

...relate this qualified narration

:The narration is also recorded in the following Sunni reference books of hadith

Ahmed's Al-Musned; ۱/۳۹۸ and ۴۰۶

.(Kenzul Ummal; ۶/۸۹ (quoted from Ibn Sa'd's At-Tabaqat and Ibn Asakir's

Kenzul Ummal; ۱۲/۳۲ (quoted from Ahmed's, At-Tabarani's, Ibn Hemmad's and

.(others

If the excuse of distrusting Ibn Masud's narration is the existence of Mujalid within the

series of relators, the narration is related, in a number of Shiite reference books of

.hadith, to a series of narrations other than Mujalid

-As-Saduq's Alikhtisas/۲۳۳ and Al-Khezaz's Kifayetul Athar/۱۷۳ and An-Numani's Al

.Gheiba/۱۰۶, record the narration intended

Nevertheless, this matter does make no change for the judgment issued by the ;Sunnis

our brothers. The narration is given the degree of (qualified with a rather doubtful

narrator) whatever is proved

Further, this degree seems to be obscure for the Sunnis, since the original problem of

Ibn Masud's narration is evading adding 'All shall be from Quraish.' Erasure of this statement makes readers understand that those coming godly imams would

obligatorily

be rulers succeeding the Prophet. This fact draws a big red circle on procedures of Saqifa from which the Hashemites were absent and busy in preparing the funeral of the

!!(Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

## **Eighth**

.Contradiction of contexts of the three narrations

Sunni reference books of hadith record Jabir Bin Samara's narration in two different forms, one of which is accordant to Abu Juheifa's. Ibn Masud had his own form of .narration. On that account, there are three forms of the narration

p: ۵۵

The first form foreordains that those promised men shall be coming after the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family), and all shall be from Quraish. This context is in majority of Jabir's narrations. Sunni scholars, as forecited, decide authenticity of this form. Al-Albani, likewise, decides authenticity of this form and affixes it under No .of his series of the authentic prophetic reports ۱۰۷۵

The second form foretells that those twelve men shall be ruling after the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family), and all shall be from Quraish. It also tells that Islam shall be kept in power and protection as long as those men will be ruling. After that, it .will be weak and humble and, finally, collapse

This form is mentioned by a number of Jabir's narrations and all of Abu Juheifa's. Most of Sunni scholars decide its authenticity. Al-Albani affixes the form narrated by Jabir Bin Samara under number ۳۷۶ of his series of authentic hadiths. Abu Juheifa's narration is decided as qualified. Ibn Masud's is cited as a witness on authenticity of the previous

Finally, Al-Albani refutes Abu Dawud's additional wording in which he, as well as other scholars, affirms that the entire people of this nation shall be loyal to those coming imams, and regards it as deniable

The third form establishes that those imams shall be coming after the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) in a way similar to the situation of apostles of Moses and Jesus (peace be upon them). This form evades mentioning 'All shall be from Quraish

p: ۵۶

.This is the form depended by most of Ibn Masud's narrations

Divergence and contrast are the most remarkable notes to be recorded on the various forms of the narrations involved. This is not an easy or acceptable matter, especially in such a sort of narrations. In addition, this contrast is hardly answerable since it exists in

.the different forms of reports of the same narrator

Distortion in such reports, even said by an ordinary chief of a group, is decisively adjudged; therefore, we should never accept such reports that assert the Prophet's foretelling of the coming of unknown men, especially if we take in consideration stage and place of addressing that prediction

The main accusation is distortion of the identity of those twelve imams. The accused is none other than those who may gain advantage from hiding names and descriptions of the promised ones. It is the ruling authorities who came to power just after the Prophet and banished his progeny from area of competition by holding a secret meeting while the Prophet's household were engaged in the funeral of the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

A neutral student may approach the fact by conceiving that divergence and contrast in forms of these narrations are focused on a definite point, which is descriptions, identity, divine standing, lineage, age and period of those promised imams

This matter incites doubtfulness of the entire forms of the narrations depended by the

Sunni reference books of hadith. On the other hand, it involves authentication of the

concordant unanimous forms of the narration accredited by the Shiite reference books

of hadith. All these forms assert the same matter; those twelve imams shall be his progeny, and more definitely, they are Ali, Al-Hassan, Al-Hussein and nine men from .(Al-Hussein's offspring (peace be upon them all

## **Ninth**

The twelve imams are not nominated according to means of election and .declaration of fealty

,This is an indisputable affair. Since the Exalted Lord has chosen them for leadership people's obligation should be only complying with them. God says, (And it behooves not a believing man and a believing woman that they should have any choice in their matter when Allah and His Apostle have decided a matter.) Those imams acquire their .legality from the Lord and the Possessor of this nation, as well as the entire creatures He is the Wise and the Aware of His servants' advantage. Positively, the Lord's choice .?is more prosperous and obligatory than the servants

Like selecting prophets which does not necessitate election or declaration of fealty, the twelve imams are selected by the Lord. Accordingly, obeying them is a mandatory .duty

Similarly, even if people ignore, injure or kill a prophet, this should never harm his .being divinely chosen and obligatorily conformed

People's general compliance with a prophet, is not more than a matter of acknowledgment of his obligatory obedience that is divinely mandated, and declaration

.of corresponding to the Lord's instructions

On that account, people's swearing allegiance to the prophets and their successors is a

process of submission and obligation to those persons' right of adherence. People affirm

p: ٥٨

.that right only. They do never constitute it

This is the main reason beyond the Prophet's ordering Muslims of declaring fealty to him in the most remarkable curves in his nation's history, so that he would affirm their obligatory obedience and compliance with him in good and bad, war and peace and favorable and detrimental circumstances

For the same reason, the Prophet, after conveying the divine mandate of Ali's coming leadership in Ghadir Khum, gave orders of establishing a tent under which Ali would receive the entire Muslims who should offer him congratulations on this divine leadership, before they declare fealty to him

The divine choice has fallen. It does not require a public consultance or fealty. It only requires admission and congratulations. However, such declaration of fealty would be obligatory upon people if the Prophet or Ali asked people to provide

For this cause, the notion that the Prophet's demand was only offering  
,congratulations

not swearing fealty, to Ali, is unprofitable, since issuing the divine mandate of  
nominating Ali for the next leadership, evacuated the public declaration of fealty from  
its effective power, and, in the same time, restricted its value to admitting and  
.committing to that divine affair whenever the Prophet or his successor asked for it

The general rule in this regard is that people may have the option to choose their  
leaders

and rulers –according to boundaries of the Islamic legislation– only in case there is no  
previous divine mandate appertained to this point. In case the Lord has elected a  
,leader

p: ٥٩

then the whole matter is settled, and none has the authority of changing or altering.  
In

other words, choice of the public is meaningless unless they intend to philosophize  
.before their Glorified Lord or opposes His instructions

**Tenth**

**Tenth**

.The narrative's dedication to Quraish has been thrown away by Omar

An important notice should be recorded in this regard. Omar Bin Al-Khattab; the  
,caliph

was the bearer of the slogan that the Prophet's succession should be in Quraish exclusively. In Saqifa, Omar disputed Ansar that Quraish; the Prophet's tribe, were the most meritorious in holding his position and authority. He aimed at intercepting Ansar in whose land and hospitality the Muslim Quraishis were living, from claiming their most meritoriousness of holding the Prophet's position and power since they were his supporters.

By such a tribal disputation, Omar took the round of Saqifa, due to the Ansar's discord despite the heavy protestation of Sa'd Bin Ebada; their chief

This very principal by which Omar gained leadership of Muslims, was abandoned and thrown away by Omar himself. In his final hours, Omar asserted that he would have delivered leadership to Salim; the Persian slave of Abu Hutheifa, had this man been alive

:Tarikhul Madina; ۳/۱۴۰

Abdullah Bin Bureida: People advised Omar; the moribund stabbed, to nominate his successor. "Had one of those two men been alive, I would have certainly delivered

him this position with quite tranquillity and satisfaction. They are Abu Ubeida Bin

Al-Jarrah and Salim; the slave of Abu Hutheifa

:Majma'uzzawaid; ۴/۲۲۰

Abu Rafi: Omar was inclined to Ibn Abbas when he said to his son and Sa'eed Bin

Zeid: “You must recognize that I had issued no verdict about the ‘Kelala’ –inheritance of a person who has neither fathers nor sons–, and I have named none as my successor, and that the Arab captives are manumitted from the estates of God –the .–public treasury

Like Abu Bakr, People shall certainly trust your option if you name any as the new“ caliph,” suggested Sa’eed. “As I noticed the excess care of my companions, I am to .ascribe this affair to those six individuals who had attained the Prophet’s satisfaction

I should be secure if I named one of those two deceased; Salim; Abu Hutheifa’s .servant, and Abu Ubeida Bin Al-Jarrah

Thus, Omar opened the door to Abu Hanifa and others for canceling the term that a leader of the Islamic state should be Quraishi. Saljukians and Mamluks used such verdicts to come to power. For the very reason, the Ottomans adopted Abu Hanifa’s sect, and publicized his school of jurisprudence. Depending on so, they named .–themselves ‘caliphs’ –successors of the Prophet

### **WAHABISM AND TERM OF QURAISHI LEADERSHIP**

We, the Imamite Shias, specify being one the Prophet’s progeny as a term of holding leadership of the Islamic state. This is proved by prophetic texts concerning the ,names as well as the number, of those leaders. For us, leadership is proved by a divine text

only. Hence, the twelve imams are proved by Quranic and prophetic texts as leaders  
of  
the Muslims

Since the seal of the imams; Al-Mahdi the Expected, is materially absent, leadership  
of

Muslims in this stage should be determined by his commitment. The imam's

p: ٩١

representative should enjoy a number of terms of scholarship, justice and others.  
This

representative is not stipulatorily an offspring of Quraish. In this point only, we agree  
practically, not hypothetically, with those who invalidate the term of Quraishi  
leadership

For the Zaidite Shias; our brothers, they do not dedicate imamate to those twelve  
imams. They extend it to include any scholar belongs, in lineage, to Ali and Fatima  
peace be upon them). Hence, they specify being a Quraishi and Alawid, as a term of  
holding position of leadership of the Islamic state

Among the Sunni Muslims, there are some present scholars who agree with us on  
cancellation of the term of Quraishi leadership, according to verdicts of Omar and Abu  
Hanifa. Other non-Arab Sunnis are more fanatic to Quraish than Omar himself. They  
are the masters of Wahabism, such as Al-Albani who decides the authenticity of the  
narrative reporting specifying the Quraishi leadership as a term. He affixes the

:under the number ١٥٥٢, and comments on page ٧٠, part ٤

If Muslims are honest in working for reviving the Islamic state, they should show repentance to their Lord and keep hold on their religion and follow rulings of the

Sharia. Among these rulings is the term that leaders of the Islamic state should be

.offsprings of Quraish. This term is familiar in books of hadith and jurisprudence

On page ٧ part ٣, Al-Albani decides the authenticity of a narration showing obligation

:of Quraishi leadership, and affixes it under number ١٠٠٦. He then comments

These authentic narrations refute, clearly, claims of the old deviate parties, as well as

p: ٦٢

the present authors and Islamic political ones, who invalidate the term of the leader's

.being Quraishi and Arab

Moreover, a scholar bearing contention of Islamic radicalism, authors a thesis named

'The Islamic State' in which he begins with specifying terms of a caliph. He ignores

totally the term of the leader's being Quraishi and Arab. So, he disregards the entire

prophetic texts and verdicts that emphasized this term. When I reminded him of this

flaw, he just smiled and neglected providing any discussion. I wonder if he is one of

.those previously cited, or he is lacking any subjective knowledge in this respect

At any rate, each writer is required to seek the right in his writings, without being

influenced by any political trend or party. A writer also should disregard accordance

.with the public

:Under number ١٨٥١, Al-Albani decides the authenticity of another relation which is

Caliphate should be to the Quraishis', and judiciary should be to Ansar's and)

(.solicitation should be to the Abyssinian

This verdict exposes that leaders of the Islamic governments should be the offsprings  
of

the various clans of Quraish, and the ministers from the Ansar's offsprings, and the

,ministers of religious affairs and mass media should be from Africa and, especially

Ethiopia! Obligation mentioned in the previous narration, due to which Al-Albani issue

the verdict of the rulers' being Quraishi, treats leadership, ministration and solicitation

.equally

Al-Albani misses the fact that jurisprudence of a narration is more remarkable and

favorable to its context. The Prophet is too elevated to issue such illogical laws. This

p: ٩٣

narrative and its likes, if authenticated, reveals a definite previous stage of Islam. It is

.not a perpetual law at all

**Eleventh**

**Eleventh**

Exegesists' blundering in explaining the twelve imams

Being honest to that prophetic text, it is necessary to say that these twelve imams

should

come directly after the Prophet's decease. This is necessitated by the Prophet's phrase

after me.' It does in no means refer to that they would rule after him (peace be upon him and his family). The text foretells of their coming only, apart from being rulers or ruled. Furthermore, the forecited forms of Jabir and Ibn Masud's narratives refer to the

matter that those imams would be disappointed and opposed by people that they would

.be taken away from power. This matter, as the texts divulge, would not injure them

:In At-Tabarani's Al-Mujamul Kabir, the following forms are cited

For this nation, there shall be twelve custodians whom shall never be influenced by“  
”those who will frustrate them

From Quraish, there shall be twelve custodians whom shall never be injured of“  
enmity  
”of their opposers

This involves that there is no matter intercepts applying these forms to the twelve imams of the Prophet's progeny, even if they could not come to power. However, Ali and Al-Hassan could come to power. Sooner or later, Mahdi; the Expected, shall be .eventually ruling. This fact is predicted by the Prophet; Al-Mahdi's forefather

Furthermore, narrations predict the events that would be falling after the ages of those

imams, indicate that they would be lasting for long ages. Some mention that  
confusion

p: ٤٤

bafflement and hypocrisy, which would be leading to collapse of this nation, would be  
falling after their ages. Others refer that their age should be lasting along with the age  
of

this earth, and that with their termination, the earth would be foundering with its  
creatures

This matter is supported by hypotheses of the extension of those imams' age to the  
termination of this earth. This meaning is mentioned in a number of Shiite narratives

:Ab Salah Al-Halabi's Taqribul Maarif/١٧٣

Anas Bin Malik: The Prophet (peace be upon him) stated: This religion shall be ...  
prevailing as long as there will be twelve men from Quraish. If they pass away, the  
earth will be perishing with its inhabitants

.The same is recorded in Alamul Wara/٣٦٤

This is accordant to the narratives recorded in our reference books of hadith,  
regarding

the extraordinary importance of the existence of the Lord's conscript representative  
on

.this earth in every age

:Al-Kafi; ١/١٧٩ and ٥٣٤

Abu Hamza: I asked Abu Abdillah (peace be upon him) if the earth might proceed without the existence of an imam. "If the earth may stand without an imam, it shall .be perishing," answered Abu Abdillah

Correspondingly, the Prophet's goal beyond providing the question of the next twelve imams in the most remarkable congruity of Muslims attending the Farewell Pilgrimage was attracting people's attentions towards those imams, had they only been lucky and followed them

Furthermore, it is most likely to refer to the twelve imams of the Prophet's progeny as the only men intended by the Prophet's prediction. Any other reference is unacceptable

p: ٤٥

.for the many refuting questions

:Al-Kinji's Yenabiul Mawadda/٤٤٤

A number of scholars state that the Prophet's prediction of the coming of twelve successors is proved by the numerous ways of relation. By identifying the ages and investigating the place, it is provable that the Prophet's prediction was referring to the twelve imams of his household and progeny. It is impracticable to refer to the realistic rulers who came to power as the intended in the Prophet's prediction, since their number is less than twelve. In addition, it is impossible to refer to the Umayyid

rulers because they were more than twelve and they were excessive unjust and tyrants saving Omar Bin Abdul-Aziz. Besides, they were not Hashemites. According to Abdul-Melik's narration, that is related to Jabir, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) foretold that those imams would be from the Hashemites. The Prophet's lowering his voice gives greater weight to this narrative since the Umayyids were too short to resemble the Hashemites in leadership. At length, it is impracticable to identify the Abbasid kings as the rulers intended. Their number exceeds the one identified. Secondly, they did not revere God's saying, (Say: I do not ask of you any reward for it but love for my near relatives), and the Prophet's hadith .-of Kisa -the cloak

Correspondingly, it is constitutive to refer to the twelve imams of the Prophet's household and progeny as the intended in that prophetic prediction since they were the most knowledgeable, religious, godliest and most pious. Moreover, they were of

p: ٩٩

...the best lineage and the best family tree. They are the most favorable to the Lord Hadith of the two weighty things and the innumerable prophetic texts regarding the

.Prophet's progeny's merits support the meaning we have preceded

:In Nahjul-Belagha, Ali (God honor his face) says

Where are those who claimed being exclusively rooted in knowledge. It is we who are firmly rooted in knowledge exclusively. They claim such a fabrication due to

their envying us, since Allah has raised us and humiliated them, and endowed us and withheld them, and admitted us and dismissed them... By us the guidance is sought and by us blindness is discharged. After me, there shall come to you an age during which nothing shall be more hidden than the right, and nothing shall be more evident than the wrong, and nothing greater than forging lies against Allah and His Apostle (peace be upon him and his family). For people of that age, there shall be nothing more slumping than the Divine Book when written in the most appropriate form, and there shall be nothing more profitable than it when distorted. In the lands, there shall be nothing more forbidden than the good, and nothing more acceptable than the evil.

You should know that you will not realize the guidance unless you realize its neglecters, and you will not keep the covenant of the Divine Book unless you realize its violators, and you will not adhere to it unless you realize its scorners. Therefore

look for that at its real people. They are the life of knowledge, and the death of

p: ٤٧

ignorance. It is they whose wisdom tells of their knowledge, and whose silence tells of their eloquence, and whose appearance tells of their hidden. They never transgress

the religion nor do they engage in discrepancies about it. Among them, the religion is an incessant honest witness, and silent and speaking

Unfortunately, majority of the Sunni exegesists reject this explanation and warn their

followers against being convinced by the Shias' claiming that the intended men in the Prophet's prediction are the twelve imams of the Prophet's progeny. They confess before their partisans that the prediction is wholly authentic, but you should never accept the Shias' explanation since we, God willing, will find an authentic one. Up to now, Sunnis could not provide any persuasive explanation to the Prophet's prediction. They attempted to apply the twelve imams predicted to the caliphs who ruled after the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). They referred to the four Rashidite caliphs, Abdullah Bin Az-Zubeir, series of kings of the Sufians, the Marwans, the Abbasids... etc. They may refer to the Umayyid rulers who ruled Andalusia, Seljukians, Memluks, Ottomans...etc

When they feel that the number exceeded the intended one, they turn their faces towards hypotheses and pick up the best of the Umayyid and Abbasid caliphs for giving them the characteristics of the godly imams. They decide some names and reject others in such a personal way purposed only for fitting the number predicted. As others could not attain the number involved, they claim of coming rulers

Most surely, such applications would never stop or rely upon a ground. It is an

impossible to take since it is trivial to have the competency of choosing twelve leaders among tens, and claim their being godly leaders selected by the Exalted Lord and .(predicted by the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

For the following reasons, Sunni scholars should have not born such an unattainable :task

First, since those promised godly imams are selected by the Lord, they should be having the same path and goal. They should be leading to the same path supported by

the guidance of the Lord and His Apostle. The leaders chosen by the Sunni scholars were so discordant that they fought each other. It is completely impossible for prophets or divinely selected leaders to fight each other. It is impossible for them to assail, rule of

.aberrance or atheism, slay, abbacinate or amputate the limbs of each other

,A reading to history of struggle of power between the Umayyids and the Abbasids .reveals this nullity of the Sunni presuppositions

Second, Sunni scholars attach a quality to the rulers of which they themselves did not claim. Hence, they become partisans of that authority. None of those authorities did .claim being a divinely chosen leader

,Had any of them been a godly imam selected by the Lord as a representative or ruler they themselves would have referred to this elevated standing. It is impossible to be a

godly choice without realizing this standing. None of those caliphs claimed being elected by the Lord exclusively. Imams of the Prophet's progeny affirmed their being .selected and identified by the Lord

p: ٤٩

Third, we have already referred to the point that the Prophet did not mention that those imams should be ruling or coming to power after him. Therefore, it is unnecessary for the Sunni scholars to commit themselves to opting for the twelve promised imams from among the rulers only. Being bound by an unnecessary question leads to engagement in .an unanswerable matter

Fourth, most of those recorded in the list of the divinely selected imams, of whom it was predicted, are actually accursed by the Prophet (peace be upon him and his .family

How is it then admissible for the Lord to be represented by individuals accursed by His Prophet?! Similarly, how is it acceptable for the Exalted Lord to curse individuals and dismiss them from His mercy for their wickedness, and then select them or their sons as

!godly imams that guide His servants and rule His lands

In the Sunni reference books of hadith, it is proved that the Prophet (peace be upon him

and his family) had cursed Al-Hakam and his son; Marwan, and banished them out of Al-Madina till the reign of Othman who canceled the decision. It is also recorded that the Prophet had cursed Abu Sufian and his two sons when he saw them drive a camel. ((Y

As a matter of fact, this is a long matter full of witnesses and evidences. Yet, partisans of the Umayyids cannot stand it; therefore, we'd better leave it

For the previous reasons, the Sunni scholars had more than thirty contrary sayings regarding the identification of the twelve godly imams whom were predicted by the

p: ٧٠

.(Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

It seems that the foremost saying in this regard is that of Abu Hatem Bin Hebban which

:is recorded in Awnul Mabud Fi Sharhi Suneni Abi Dawud; ١١/٣٤١

Regarding the twelve promised imams, a group, among whom is Abu Hatem Bin

Hebban, suppose that those twelve men are sealed by Omar Bin Abdil-Aziz. They

are the four Rashidite caliphs, Muawiya, Yazid, Muawiya Bin Yazid, Marwan Bin

Al-Hakam, Abdul-Melik, Al-Walid Bin Abdil-Melik, Suleiman Bin Abdil-Melik and

.Omar Bin Abdil-Aziz whose death was in ١٠٠ A.H

This 'Umayyid' exegesis is repealed by the scholars who adored the Abbasids. They added some of the Abbasid caliphs to the promised imams and deleted some, if not ,all

\*\*\*\*\*

.Refer to Majmauzzawaid; ١/١٣٧

It is noticeable that this saying erase the name of Mahdi from the list while he is promised through prophetic texts authenticated by them. Besides, Mahdi is included in

”his forefather’s saying, “After me, there shall come twelve imams

They also erased the name of imam Al-Hassan who ruled for six months and admitted by the entire Muslims except the Syrian. The succeeding scholars added his name to the

.twelve imams

Since the Prophet affirmed that Al-Hassan and Al-Hussein are leaders –imams– whether

.they proceed or stand still, those scholars should have added their names to the list

On the other hand, Ibn Hebban’s supposition affixes the name of Yazid Bin Muawiya in

the list, and reckons him with the godly imams of whom the Prophet foretold!! This

p: ٧١

grade is not expected by Yazid himself, or his sane adorers who, incessantly, spare no effort for proving his being Muslim and not apostate which is proved by his personal ,statements. They also exert all efforts to convince people that Yazid was not deviant

since he had committed those awful crimes in Karbala, and plundered Al-Madina and  
.gave orders of demolishing Kaba; the Sacred House of God

They also entered the name of Muawiya Bin Yazid (Muawiya II). This man was given  
the leadership after his father. He addressed only unique sermon in which he acquitted  
himself from the evildoing of his father and grandfather, and affirmed that leadership  
is

a legal right of Ali (peace be upon him), and that Muawiya had wronged him and  
.usurped his right. Finally, he declared his abdication. The Umayyids assassinated him  
Had this man realized his being one of the twelve awaited imams, he would not have  
abdicated the power and exposed himself to be assassinated by his the tyrant royal  
family

Likewise, this supposition is contrary to Safina's narration regarding identifying the  
Prophet's succession to thirty years followed by despot kingship. Hadithists and  
.exegesists authenticate and regard this narration

Any attempt to pursuing the master scholars' words respecting this holy prophetic  
text

takes very much time. However, similarity of their words makes it easier. All of their  
.words, in fact, have been going round the pivot of the Umayyid exegesis

:The following are models of their words and their answers

:As-Suyouti's Tarikhul Khulefa/1.

Eyadh; the judge says: Probably, the twelve men mentioned in the prophetic texts

and their narrations are those during whose reigns authority is well preserved, and Islam is well protected and congruity is well kept. These matters had been falling till the disorder and sedition in the reign of Al-Walid Bin Yazid up to the Abbasid revolution and coming to power. The Abbasids massacred the Umayyids.

Ibn Hajar: Words of Eyadh are the best and the most preferable essay in this regard. They are supported by the Prophet's saying, "All shall be unanimously admitted by people." This narration is related to some authentic series of narrators.

The author) Accordingly, the twelve successors are identified. They are the four) Rashidite caliphs, Al-Hassan, Muawiya, Ibnuz-Zubeir and Omar Bin Abdul-Aziz. These are eight. Probably, Al-Muhtedi; the just Abbasid caliph, is included since he was as same as Omar Bin Abdil-Aziz; the Umayyid. The two Expected remain. One (of them is Mahdi; the offspring of Mohammed (peace be upon him

As-Suyouti and Ibn Hajar regard the statement, "All shall be unanimously admitted by people," which is an additional unproved remark. Al-Albani; the Wahabist, and many others decide the doubtfulness of that statement.

Besides, they violate Safina's narration which is completely authentic for them. In this narration, the Prophet allocates the period of thirty years as his succession. Accordingly eleven rulers in a period of thirty years will be the required, and the process of selecting

.among the Umayyid and the Abbasid rulers will be void

Furthermore, As-Suyouti's referring to the words of Ibn Eyad and Ibn Hajar was not accurate, in fact. Ibn Hajar's words, in which he dedicates the first twelve Umayyid

p: ۷۳

rulers, were neglected. "The twelfth is Al-Walid Bin Yazid Bin Abdul-Melik," Ibn Hajar decides. Meanwhile, As-Suyouti stops at eight Umayyid rulers only. Two Abbasid rulers are added

The errors committed by As-Suyouti in the field of his dishonest excerpt of Ibn Hajar's

:words are evidently shown in the following sections quoted from Fatihul-Bari

Ibn Bettal: Ibnul-Muhellab: No single scholar could give a definite opinion in this regard. Some claim succession of the twelve promised successors. Others claim their being in the same time, each proclaims leadership. The most accepted matter in this regard is that the Prophet wants to refer to the coming vicissitude that people shall be following twelve men, each claims leadership, in the same time. This fact is proved by that the Prophet (peace be upon him) does not mention any of these twelve leaders' acts

Ibn Hajar) The previous words show that the writer ignores the various ways of)

.relating the narration, and stops on that precised form mentioned in Al-Bukhari's

We have formerly referred to the different forms of relating this narration, recorded

by Muslim and others, in which the characteristic of Islam's being fortified and

.mighty is earmarked

.In other forms, it is said that people, unanimously, shall be obeying those successors

Abu Dawud records: Jabir Bin Samara: This religion shall be perpetually kept till the

.end of the ruling of twelve leaders whom shall be followed by people unanimously

,Ibn Hajar) At-Tabarani records this form, too. He relates it to Al-Aswad Bin Sa'eed)

to Jabir Bin Samara, with the following addition: (They shall not be injured by the

p: ۷۴

(.malicious ones

.Eyadh summarizes this perplexity

:Two questions are arisen from the number defined in the Prophet's saying

First, the saying is contradicted by the extrinsic meaning of Safina's narration

.admitted and authenticated by the grand hadithists, such as Ibn Habban and others

The narration says: "For thirty years after me, there shall be my succession. It shall

be followed by monarchy." These thirty years were ruled by the four Rashidite

.caliphs and Al-Hassan Bin Ali

.Second, more than twelve rulers did come to power after the Prophet

As an answer to the first question, it may be said that the succession intended in

Safina's narration is dedicated to the Prophet's succession. While in Jabir Bin

.Samara's, this is not proposed

About the second, the Prophet's form does not block the fact that more than twelve

.men would be ruling, since the number mentioned leads to peculiarity of persons  
Lest, the intended are the deserved just rulers. Four of them have passed away. The  
.others shall be indisputably coming before the Judgment Day

Other forms say that those twelve shall be coming, and each will be followed by a  
group of people. This did befall in Andalusia in the fifth century when six men, each  
claimed leadership, rose in the same time. at the same time, the ruler of Egypt, the

Abbasid ruler in Baghdad, the other Alawid and Kharijite leaders were claiming  
leadership. This explanation is also supported by Muslim's narration: "There shall be  
".numerous leaders

At any rate, it is probable that the twelve intended are ruling in the golden period of

p: ٧٥

Islam. This meaning is supported by some forms of the hadith, such as: "All shall be  
unanimously followed by people." Till Al-Walid Bin Yazid's reign when people  
were engaged in seditious matters, the Prophet's successors were followed by people

unanimously. This disorder lasted till the Abbasids could come to power and  
massacre the Umayyids. Correspondingly, the number befell. After all, there are other

.probabilities

Ibn Hajar) Al-Muhellab opts for the second probability, which is the befalling of the)

twelve rulers in the same time. Previously, we have referred to the answer of this  
question. Their being coming in the same time is sufficiently enough to prove their

.animosity; therefore, their unanimity is not materialized

:The following narrative contradicts Abu Dawud's inaccuracy

Ahmed and Al-Bezar: Ibn Masud: We asked the Prophet about the number of his successors. "They shall be twelve, like the Israelite leaders," answered the Prophet  
(peace be upon him)

.This is a qualified hadith, with a rather doubtful narrator

In his Keshful Mushkil, Ibnul-Jawzi says: I spared no efforts for scrutinizing this various formed prophetic saying, but, unfortunately, I could not attain a convincing answer. Undoubtedly, the confusion was caused by the narrators. Later on, I noticed

Al-Khattabi refer to an opinion that I have recently decided. Besides, Abul-Hassan

.Bin Al-Munadi and others had their own opinions

,This refers to the incidents falling after the reign of the Prophet and his companions since both are interrelated. This is a signal to the number of the Umayyid caliphs. This

is the meaning of his saying, "This religion shall be kept fortified till the end of the

p: ٧٩

.ruling of twelve successors." Then, he moves to a more rigorous characteristic

The Umayyids begin with Yazid Bin Muawiya and end with Marwan Al-Himar (the donkey). They are thirteen. Othman, Muawiya and Ibnuz-Zubair are omitted since they were within the Prophet's companions. Marwan Bin Al-Hakam is also omitted since it is doubtful whether he was a companion or not, or since he overcame after

people had been unanimously following Abdullah Ibnuz-Zubair. On that account, the  
number is concordant

As the Umayyids lost their control on power, seditious matters and massacres fell till  
the Abbasids could rule. Thus, manners came into a new stage

This opinion is supported by the narration recorded by Abu Dawud and related to Ibn  
Masud: The hand-mills of Islam shall be coming around for thirty five -or six or  
seven- years. If people perish, they will pursue their formers. If their religion is  
\*constituted, this will last for no more than seven years

This opinion is repudiated by the fact that stability of the Umayyid region lasted for  
more than ninety years, since it began in the year ٤١ A.H, when Muawiya came to  
power unanimously, till the first of the year ١٣٢, when Marwan Bin Mohammed was  
assassinated

-In the volume in which he compiles reports regarding Mahdi, Abul-Hussein Bin Al  
Munadi supposes that the twelve intended shall be coming after the ruling of Mahdi  
He adds, "In the book of Daniel, I could find the following: 'As Mahdi is deceased  
This narrative is ruled as authentic by none other than Al-Albani\*

p: ٧٧

five men from the offspring of the elder grandson will be ruling after him. They will  
be succeeded by five men from the offspring of the younger grandson. Their last  
shall be nominating a man from the offspring of the elder grandson as his successor

His son shall be coming to power after him.’ They shall be twelve kings, each shall  
”be Mahdi

:Abu Salih relates the following narration to Ibn Abbas

Mahdi is named Mohammed Bin Abdillah. He shall be a giant reddish man. By him

God shall relieve every misfortune of this nation. His justice shall be dismissing  
every wrong. After him, twelve men shall rule; six from Al-Hassan’s offspring, and  
,five from Al-Hussein’s. The last shall be from another lineage. When he is deceased  
.matters will be corrupted

Kabul-Ahbar: There shall be twelve Mahdis. Afterwards, the Spirit of Allah shall

”.descend to kill the Impostor

Another probability is that the intended are twelve just rulers who will come along

the period of Islam, no matter their reigns will be successive or not. This opinion is

supported by Abul-Jald’s narration, related by Abu Bahr and recorded in

Musedded’s Al-Musnedul Kabir: “This nation shall not be perished before the ruling

,of twelve successors, who will be acting by the divine guidance and the right belief

befalls. Two of them shall be from Mohammed’s household, one of whom will be

”.living for forty years while the other will be lasting for thirty

Correspondingly, the disorder intended to be controlling after so, is the matters

preceding the Judgment Day, such as the issue of the Impostor, Gog and Magog till

.the end of this world

.These were words of Ibnul-Jawzi, precisely

.Ibn Hajar) The first and last opinions have been previously discussed by Eyadh)

.This seems that Ibnul-Jawzi has not reviewed them

.Generally, a number of opinions can be referred to from the previous discussions

The third is the most acceptable since it is supported by the authentic forms of the

'narrative mentioning that 'All shall be unanimously followed by people

Unanimity intended means that people succumb to their leadership. People, as a

matter of fact, obeyed the leadership of Abu Bakr, Omar, Othman and Ali

respectively, till the incident of the two arbiters in Siffin. As a result, Muawiya was

nominated as the caliph. After the armistice of Al-Hassan, people followed

Muawiya. They followed Yazid; the son, afterwards. Al-Hussein could not attain

leadership since he was killed before that. After Yazid, disorder emerged and lasted

till the assassination of Ibnuz-Zubair and the ruling of Abdul-Melik Bin Marwan. His

four sons; Al-Walid, Suleiman, Yazid and Husham, were followed unanimously

Omar Bin Abdul-Aziz could come to power after Suleiman and before Yazid. Those

are seven rulers after the four Rashidite ones. The twelfth is Al-Walid Bin Yazid Bin

Abdil-Melik who was unanimously followed after the death of Husham; his uncle

,He ruled for about four years. Then, people mutinied and killed him. Since then

sedition matters came forth. People did not follow a single caliph after so. Yazid

Bin Al-Walid, who rebelled against Al-Walid Bin Yazid; his cousin, could not control leadership for a considerable time. Marwan Bin Mohammed Bin Marwan

p: ٧٩

revolted against Yazid. Ibrahim, who came to power after Yazid, was defeated by

.Marwan. The Abbasids revolted and could kill Marwan

-In addition to the great number of the groups who mutinied against Abul-Abbas As

Seffah; the first Abbasid caliph, he could not control power for long. Al-Mansur; his

brother, grasped power for a long time despite that he lost the furthest west of his

kingdom which was controlled by the offspring of Marwan in Andalusia. They kept

on controlling these territories till they were formally nominated as caliphs. This was

followed by a disorder all over the kingdom. The caliph became no more than a

name in some territories. This is quite contracted to the reign of Abdul-Melik Bin

Marwan when he controlled the entire countries of the lands conquered by the

.Muslims. A look to their history proves these facts

In due course, the disorder intended stands for the massacres spreadingly committed

.due to these seditious incidents. Unfortunately, it has been increasing

Al-Hussein Bin Al-Munadi's opinion is, indeed, not that clear since it is contradicted

At-Tabarani's following narrative related to Qeis Bin Jabir As-Sudefi, who relates it

to his fathers: "After me, there shall be successors followed by rulers. Those rulers

shall be followed by kings whom shall be followed by tyrants. Thereafter, a man

from my household shall approach. He shall fill the lands with justice, as they were filled in with inequity. Then, son of Qahtan will be given the orders. By Him Who .messed me with the right I swear, he shall not be less than him

p: ٨٠

.This narrative refutes Ibnul-Munadi's narrative quoted from Daniel's book

.Likewise, Abu Salih and Kab's opinions are extremely inapplicable

The most appropriate matter in this regard is considering the actual meaning of

after' mentioned in the Prophet's saying: "After me, there shall be twelve successors." Thusly, the entire rulers who succeeded the Prophet (peace be upon him) were fourteen persons, beginning with As-Siddiq and ending with Omar Bin Abdul-Aziz. Two of those fourteen were of void leadership and short reign. They were Muawiya Bin Yazid and Marwan Bin Al-Hakam. The others were twelve, as the Prophet had predicted. Omar Bin Abdil-Aziz died in ١٠١ A.H. After him, affairs ,of the Islamic nation were confused. Hence, the first century, which was the best .came to its end

The Prophet's saying, "They will be unanimously followed by people," does not controvert this opinion, since it fits the majority. Except for Al-Hassan Bin Ali and .Abdullah Bin Az-Zubair, this characteristics were existed in the entire successors Leadership of these two was valid. Meritoriousness of those who dissented them was still invalid till Al-Hassan delivered the leadership and Abdullah Bin Az-Zubair was

.assassinated. God, however, is the most knowledgeable

Almostly, affairs of the state were normal during reigns of these twelve leaders ,despite the fact that some irregular incidents had occurred. These irregular incidents

.however, are rare if measured to the normal

Ibn Hebban discusses the meaning of the narrative: “The hand–mills of Islam shall be

:coming around...” He states

The narrative refers to the Umayyids’ receiving the leadership. The first point at

p: ٨١

which the Umayyids grasped the leadership of Muslims was during Muawiyah’s

mutiny against Ali in Siffine and the arrangements of arbitration. Since then, the

Umayyids came to power for seventy years. In the year ١٠٤, the first waves of the

Abbasids appeared in Khurasan... Ibn Hebban discusses this point so detailedly that

he committed many errors. First, he claims the occurrence of the arbitration in the

last days of ٣٤ A.H. This is unlike what historians agree upon. In fact, the arbitration

...occurred few months after the battle of Siffine. That was in ٣٧ A.H

From the above, we can obviously see Ibn Hajar opt for an opinion different from that

As–Suyouti ascribed to him. Therewith, we should understand that As–Suyouti has not

read the whole words of Ibn Hajar, or rule As–Suyouti’s forging lies. We have also

noticed the perplexity and great number of the contrary probabilities they have

shown

during discussing the Prophet's words about the twelve coming successors. Most of them have betaken the addition, "they shall be unanimously followed by people," as an

axis for their discussions. This addition, however, is not authentic. A good deal of scholars deny it. Eyadh decides nothing. He uses the idioms 'it is said' and 'it is probable' in referring to the different probabilities of interpreting the prophetic saying

Ibn Hajar opts for the third probability. He says, "The third probability discussed by the  
...judge is the most acceptable

In abstract, scholars lead the reader to nowhere while they do their best to explain the

p: ٨٢

prophetic prediction which is, for them, authentic that carries a good tidings of the advent of twelve godly imams, guides and custodians in this nation. Scholars insist on suiting the saying to the Umayyid rulers. They also mix it to an additive inauthentic and doubtful statement. Besides, the addition is meaningless and far away from the Prophet's rhetoric

For more examples on their misguidance in finding an acceptable exegesis for the

:Prophet's prediction, readers can notice Awnul Mabud; ١١/٣٦٢-٤

Some scholars state that four of the twelve successors passed away. Before the

'Judgment day, the number shall be perfected. Others claim those twelve leaders occurring in the same time that each shall be followed by a group. At-Turbeshti states that the only way to interpret this prophetic saying and its likes is considering the just leaders only, since those are the only persons who deserve to be named caliphs. It is not necessary for them to be successive, lest, the metaphorical meaning should be the intended. The previous words are quoted from Al-Mirqat

:In his Qurratul Einein Fi Tafdhili Sheikhein, Waliyullah; the grand scholar states A perplexity occurred during explaining the Prophet's saying, "This religion shall be kept triumphed till God conveys twelve successors from Quraish." The problem is that the saying is concordant to the Ithnasharites who decide twelve imams as their leaders

Indisputably, the Prophet's words are similar to the Quranic texts that interpret each other. Ibn Masud, authentically, relates the following prophetic saying; "The handmills of Islam shall be coming around for thirty five -or six or seven- years. If people

p: ٨٣

perish, they will pursue their formers. If their religion is constituted, this will last for  
".not more than seven years

Many mistakes have been committed during explaining this prophetic saying. The following is our inferral conclusion

This period begins from the second year of Hijra -the Prophet's immigration to

Yathrib-; year of jihad. Accordingly, the Prophet's prediction came true. In the thirty fifth years of jihad, Othman's assassination befell and Muslims were engaged in discrepancies. God; the Exalted, adjusted the Muslims' affairs afterwards, and the jihad continued till the coming of the Abbasid state, and the eradication of the ...Umayyids

.Once, the Prophet (peace be upon him) foretells of the succession of the prophecy ,He dedicates thirty years. The next years are named despotic monarchy. Once more

...he foretells of his succession and names it the twelve successors

,For attaining the final result in this question, it is advisable to consider Muawiya

Abdul-Melik, his four sons, Omar Bin Abdul-Aziz and Al-Walid Bin Yazid Bin

.Abdul-Melik after the four Rashidite caliph

It is said that Malik; the master scholar, considers Abdullah Bin Az-Zubair as more meritorious in leadership. We have our own opinion in this concern. Omar Bin AlKhattab

-and Othman Bin Affan (God please them) mentioned that Abdullah Bin Az

Zubair's revolution and violation against the Holy Precinct should be one of the catastrophes in the Islamic nation. Ahmed records this saying and refers it to Qeis :Bin Abi Hazim

As Abdullah Bin Az-Zubair asked Omar Bin Al-Khattab's permitting him to participate in the battle, the latter said, "Sit in your house! You have participated in

the Prophet's battles." As Abdullah insisted on his demand, Omar said to him, "You should keep yourself in your house! By God I swear, I am about to see your companions and you revolt in the borders of Al-Madina, and you will injure  
 ".Mohammed's companions

.This narration is recorded by Al-Hakim

We can conceive that the battle of Jamal is not intended in Omar's saying, since he  
 'signified 'in the borders of Al-Madina

This very meaning was clarified in Ali's words addressed in the story of the answer  
 .of Al-Hassan (God please him). Hence, he could not manage the affairs of the state

For the unsettlement of his reign and his ill manners, Yazid Bin Muawiya can not be  
 .reckoned with those twelve successors

Despite the fact that the writer of Qurratul Einein confesses that the Umayyid reign  
 was

despotic monarchy and their state was not the Prophet's succession, he considers  
 them

during interpreting the Prophet's saying. He applies the prophetic prediction of the  
 .coming of twelve godly imams, who shall be divine custodians on the Prophet's nation

Secondly, he erases the names of Al-Hassan Bin Ali and Mahdi from the list. He also  
 erases the name of Abdullah Bin Az-Zubair while Malik; the master scholar, and  
 others

.register him

At any rate, the man criticizes those who committed mistakes in interpreting the  
:hadith

Many mistakes have been committed during explaining this prophetic saying.” As he“  
promises people to eradicate the problem and solve the question, he makes it worse

:The following are Ibn Kutheir’s words, recorded in his Al-Bidaya Wen Nihaya, ٣/٢٤٨

p: ٨٥

The twelve expected successors, who shall be from Quraish, are not those claimed by

the Rafidites. Except for Ali Bin Abi Talib and Al-Hassan; his son, none of those  
could attain the Muslims’ leadership. The last of them is, as they claim, Mahdi the  
Expected, who is hiding in a vault in Samarra. He has neither existence, trace nor

.pace

,In fact, the twelve predicted successors are the four imams; Abu Bakr, Omar  
Othman and Ali (God please them), and Omar Bin Abdul-Aziz, on whom the two

.parties of the scholars agree

Probably, Ibn Kutheir intends the two opinions about the consecutive ruling of those  
successors. However, each party has many opinions he has referred to some.

,Thereafter

he refers to the probabilities. He focuses lights on Al-Beihaqi’s discussions in this

:regard

Al-Beihaqi, supported by a group of scholars, opts for the opinion that the twelve

successors are those successively came to power after the Prophet (peace be upon him). Their seal is Al-Walid Bin Yazid Bin Abdul-Melik; the villainous, the bad manners of whom we have already discussed

This is problematic. For discussing so, we should say that the ruling of the first four caliphs; Abu Bakr, Omar, Othman and Ali are undiscussible for Safina's narrative "My succession shall be lasting for thirty years." After them comes Al-Hassan Bin Ali. Ali nominated him as his heir apparent. People of Iraq declared their fealty to him and accompanied him in the fighting against people of Syria till he signed the peace treaty with Muawiya. These incidents are proved by the narrative of Abu

p: ۸۶

Bakra in Al-Bukhari's Sahih. Muawiya comes next. Yazid Bin Muawiya, Muawiya Bin Yazid, Marwan Bin Al-Hakam, Abdul-Melik Bin Marwan, Al-Walid Bin Abdul Melik come next successively. These are fifteen persons. Finally comes Al-Walid

Bin Yazid Bin Abdil-Melik. Supposing Abdullah Bin Az-Zubeir's period of ruling before Abdul-Melik is considered, they will be sixteen persons. Anyhow, before

Omar Bin Abdul-Aziz, they are twelve. Accordingly, Yazid Bin Muawiya is considered, and Omar is taken out. The entire Muslims, including the Rafidites agree on the fact that Omar Bin Abdul-Aziz's reign was the best in justice. They praised him eminently and reckoned him with the Rashidite caliphs

Providing the leaders unanimously followed by people are considered, Ali Bin Abi

Talib and his son should be taken out. The Syrian entirely did not declare their fealty to those two men. Similarly, Muawiya, Yazid Bin Muawiya, Muawiya Bin Yazid Marwan and Abdullah Bin Az-Zubair should not be considered for the same reason -On that account, Abu Bakr, Omar, Othman, Muawiya, Yazid Bin Muawiya, Abdul Melik, Al-Walid Bin Suleiman, Omar Bin Abdul-Aziz, Yazid and Husham should be -considered. These are ten. They are followed by Al-Walid Bin Yazid Bin Abdil ;Melik; the villainous. This is unacceptable since it leads to taking Ali and Al-Hassan 'his son, out of those twelve predicted successors. This is contrary to the Sunnis texts, as well as the Shias'. Furthermore, it is contrary to Safina's narrative: "For thirty years after me, there shall be my succession. It shall be followed by monarchy." Safina, besides, mentions in detail these thirty years. He allots the reigns

p: ۸۷

of the four Rashidite caliphs. The six month period of Al-Hassan's reign is -considered, too. After that, Monarchy became Muawiya's. That occurred when Al Hassan Bin Ali delivered the leadership to him. This narrative materializes the fact that Muawiya should not be described as a caliph, and that caliphate was sealed after the thirty year period. This does not deny the existence of Rashidite caliphs .thereafter. Jabir Bin Samara's narrative evidences this fact Hutheifa Bin Al-Yeman stated, "After Othman, there shall be twelve kings from... ",sons of Umayya." "They are caliphs, aren't they?" they asked. "No, they are kings

.answered Hutheifa

Abul-Jald states, “This nation shall not be perished before the ruling of twelve ...

.successors, who will be acting by the divine guidance and the right belief, befalls

Two of them shall be from the household of Mohammed, one of whom will be living

”.for forty years while the other for thirty

Al-Beihaqi then refutes Abul-Jald’s words in unacceptable way and words. This is

strange from Al-Beihaqi. A good deal of scholars agree with Abul-Jald. His saying

seems to be the most preferable among our opinions. The man was wont to read the

old books. This meaning is recorded in the Torah that is with the Jews: “God; the

Exalted, did foretell Abraham of the birth of Samuel. He did foretell that He would

grow and increase his progeny, and would choose twelve great persons from his

”.offspring

Ibn Kutheir refers to what is inscribed in the real Torah – the Old and New Testament

p: ۸۸

: -۱/۲۵

.Abraham said to the Lord: Make Samuel live before Thee –۱۸

The Lord said: Sara; your lady, will give birth of a son you will call Isaaq. I will –۱۹

.constitute my eternal covenant with him and his offspring

Regarding Samuel, I respond your supplication. I will bless and fruit him. I will –۲۰

.grow him so largely. Twelve chiefs he shall bear. I will make him a great nation

But My covenant I constitute with Isaaq whom will be given birth by Sara, this –٢١

.time, the next year

Instead of ‘chief’, Kabul–Ahbar translated the word into ‘custodian’. Others translated it

.’into ‘imams

Hence, the text exists in the Torah, the Sunni’s books and the Shias’ book. It supports the good tidings of our Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). At any rate, it does

not settle the problem of the Sunni exegeists. On the contrary, it makes it more

.complicated

Ibnul–Arabi; the Malikite, died in ٥٤٣ A.H., is seen as the smartest and fairest among

the Sunni exegeists. In his Aridhatul Ahwadi Fi Sharhi Sahihit Tirmithi, the scholar admits that any application of the prophetic prediction takes to a dead–end way.

,Hence

he confesses that there must have been an addition to the saying since the present text is

.meaningless

Jabir Bin Samara: The Prophet (peace be upon him) said, “After me, there shall come

.twelve princes; all shall be from Quraish.” This is an authentic hadith

,As we consider the rulers after the Prophet, we find the following: Abu Bakr, Omar

p: ٨٩

–Othman, Ali, Al–Hassan, Muawiya, Yazid, Muawiya Bin Yazid, Marwan, Abdul

,Melik, Marwan Bin Mohammed Bin Marwan, As-Seffah, Al-Mansour, Al-Mahdi

,Al-Hadi, Ar-Rashid, Al-Amin, Al-Mamoun, Al-Mutasim, Al-Wathiq, Al-Mutawakil

-Al-Muntasir, Al-Mustain, Al-Mutaz, Al-Muhtadi, Al-Mutadid, Al-Muktafi, Al

,Muqtadir, Al-Qahir, Ar-Radi, Al-Mutteqi, Al-Mustekfi, Al-Muti, At-Taii, Al-Qadir

-Al-Qaim and Al-Muqtedi whom I caught in the year ٤٨٤. He nominated Al

Mustedhir; the son, as his heir apparent. He dies in Muharram, ٤٨٦. Al-Mustedhir

.nominated his son; Abu Mansur Al-Fadhl as his heir apparent. That was in ٤٩٥

-Supposing twelve of them are allotted, the number will stop at Suleiman Bin Abdil

Melik. Regarding the meaning is considered, we have only five persons; the four

Rashidite caliphs and Omar Bin Abdil-Aziz. Hence, I cannot perceive a definite

.meaning for the prophetic saying. Probably, it is a part of a prophetic text

From the above, we can conclude that the Sunni scholars spared no efforts for the  
sake

of applying the twelve men whom are promised in the Torah by Abraham, and  
predicted

by our Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) on the Umayyid rulers. As a matter  
of

:fact, they faced three principal unsolved problems

First, the number of those (successors) is more than twelve. However, they confess  
that

those men are not the Prophet's successors. Hence, they had to face the waves of  
opting

.and selecting depending on no objective criterion

Second, they feel that that divine apparel does never fit their acquaintances. And that their attempts to defend those rulers' acrs, who are not real successors of the Prophet

p: ۹۰

and covering up their deeds are nonsense since some of them committed fatal hideous

mistakes and ill deeds. Thus, it is impracticable to consider such persons as godly leaders and great custodians on this nation that God; the Exalted, has foretold of their coming by the seal of His prophets

Third, by this claim, scholars place those rulers in a divine position they themselves did not claim. Hence, they became as same as that who claims somebody's prophecy while

.that somebody denies it

Lastly, the Sunni exegesists warn their fellows not to regard the Shiite exegesises. They

.promise them to find, sooner or later, an exegesis more suitable than the Shias

Previously, we have seen how the Sunni scholars could not forward a single step for

.finding a convincing exegesis for the Prophet's prediction of the twelve imams

It is rightful for Sunnis to ask the scholars for a persuasive interpretation for the

Prophet's authentic prediction of the coming twelve godly imams who will be divinely directed and unique in knowledge, character and behavior, and will be custodians of

the

.same guidance and trend

In like manner, we are quite rightful to depend on our own interpretation, which is defining the immaculate imams of the Prophet's household as the persons intended in the Prophet's prediction. Those imams begin with Ali and ends with the Expected Mahdi (peace be upon them). The Prophet said, "With us the Lord begins and with us .He seals." Most truthful are the words of God and His Apostle

### **EXEGESISTS' INVOLVEMENT IN SAFINA'S NARRATIVE**

p: ٩١

Safina is the bondservant of Ummu Salama. Scholars decide his uthenticity in communicating the Prophet's sayings. Like Al-Bukhari, a many hadithists depend on .his narratives especially those related to the topic involved

:At-Tirmithi's, ٣/٣٤١

Sa'eed: Safina: The Prophet (peace be upon him) stated: "In my nation, the succession shall be lasting for thirty years, and shall be followed by despotic .monarchy

,Safina commentates: If you account the reign of Abu Bakr, Omar, Othman and Ali .they shall be thirty years

.Sa'eed: The Umayyids claim their succeeding the Prophet

.Safina: Liars are sons of that Zarqa –blue lady–. They are kings, the most evil kings

:Under the same title, At-Tirmithi records

Omar and Ali said: The Prophet (peace be upon him) did not will anything about his

(.succession (next leadership

This narrative is qualified but with a rather doubtful narrator. It is related by other

.than Sa’eed Bin Jamhan, but we recognize it from this way only

Ahmed, in his Al-Musned, ٥/٢٢٠-١, records this narrative although he cut off the last

,two sentences regarding the Umayyids’ reigns. Al-Hakim, in his Al-Mustedrak, ٣/٧١

.decides its authentic documentation

As he relates it in his Al-Bidaya Wen Nihaya, ٣/١٩٨, Ibn Kutheir records the following

:narrative after it

Abdurrahman Bin Abi Bakra: I heard the Prophet (peace be upon him) say, “For thirty years, there shall be the succession of the prophesy. After it, God shall give his

”.monarchy to whomever He desires

”.Muawiya commented, “We succumb to the monarchy

Supposing Safina’s narrative is authentic, the Prophet’s prediction should be regarded

p: ٩٢

as a foretelling of this nation’s deviation and illegality after thirty years. As long as rulers in the period of thirty years were not more than five persons, we understand that

the twelve imams should be others or, at least, they would not come to power. In other words, Safina's narrative decides evidently the inaccuracy of considering the rulers as the twelve expected custodians. Unfortunately, majority of exegesists are sick of cherishing the Umayyid rulers; therefore, they commit every contrasting act for the sake of changing the Umayyid despotic monarchy into godly custody. Likewise, they attempted to make the Umayyid tyrant and criminal rulers be divine imams, predicted by the Apostle of the Lord of the worlds

As a support for our opinion, we say that Sunnis admit Safina's narrative of defining the Prophet's succession to thirty years. Safina himself explains the narrative. He denies the Umayyids' being the Prophet's successors. He describes them as kings; the most evil kings. He also accuses them of bastardy. He accuses them of being the illegitimate sons (.-of a Roman prostitute. (sons of that Zarqa -blue lady

Despite, exegesists decide the Umayyids as godly leaders chosen by the Exalted Lord for leading this nation

Some scholars, such as Al-Albani, aims at denying Safina's explanation of the narrative. They rule its being an inauthentic redundancy. In the same manner, the

entire

,savage deeds of the Umayyid rulers, with which the entire pages of history are filled in

.are not authentic for such scholars

:In his Umdetul Qari, ١٤/٧٤, Al-Eini records

p: ٩٣

Providing some may claim that Safina's contradicting Jabir Bin Samara's (The Prophet said, "This religion shall be kept in efficacy and power to twelve successors from Quraish..."), recorded by Muslim, we say that this refers to the succession of

.the prophesy. It does not mean that there are no others

Others say that this prediction of the coming of twelve just Quraishi rulers does not

.guarantee consecution. In thirty years after the Prophet, this just leadership fell

Many ages later, just caliphs; such as Omar Bin Abdil-Aziz and Al-Muhtedi, could

.take leadership. Mahdi; the Expected, is within those promised successors

For nothing more than defending the Umayyids, scholars do their best in playing on

words. They divide the legal succession into two types. The first is the prophecy

,succession which lasted for thirty years. The second is a non-prophecy succession

although legal, which came next. This non-prophetic succession was promised by the

Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) when he predicted the coming of twelve

!successors or imams

The pro-Umayyid exegesists find their lost in this fabrication; therefore, they adhere to

since it enables them to play on words of the hadith, and make it applicable to their

rulers

:Ibn Kutheir's Al-Bidaya Wen Nihaya, ٣/١٩٨

As an answer for the question about the way of admitting Safina's narrative and that

of Jabir Bin Samara in the same time, we say

Some people claim that this religion is kept in efficacy and power till twelve  
'successors hold the leading position. After that, confusion befell in the Umayyids

p: ٩٤

reigns. Others contradict the previous saying and allege that the hadith was a  
prediction of the coming of twelve just Quraishi rulers, no matter they are successive

or not. In a period of thirty years only, the consecutive succession of the Prophet

befell. After that, just caliphs; such as Omar Bin Abdil-Aziz the Umayyid, could come  
to power. A number of master scholars decides the legality and justice of this man to

,the degree that they reckon him with the Rashidite caliphs. Ahmed Bin Hanbal says

'Except for Omar Bin Abdil-Aziz, the opinion of none of the Prophet's companions'

followers is admitted

.Al-Mahdi; the Abbasid, is one of those predicted successors

Mahdi; the Expected, is also one of those twelve, since he shall be from the

Prophet's household. He is named Mohammed Bin Abdillah. He is not that one

expected in a vault in Samarra. This one is originally not existed. Only the ill-minded

.Rafidites are awaiting him

Hence, Ibn Kutheir lacks any logical answer for the problem of Safina's narrative. He

ascribes the opinions to 'some' or 'others'. Had he only recorded Safina's narrative

completely as it is found in their reference books of hadith

His applauding Omar Bin Abdil-Aziz and Al-Mahdi; the Abbasid, cannot be taken as an

evidence on their being within the expected godly successors, lest, each praised man

can be regarded. Reckoning a person with the predicted and promised men

necessitates

an evident credentials proving his being one of those divine persons chosen by the

Lord

and given exclusively a standing unattainable by ordinary people

p: ٩٥

Regarding the repetition of the Shias' awaiting for Mahdi; the Expected, in a vault in

Samarra is a forged matter. Like him, we; the Shias, expect Mahdi to come forth in

Mecca. The vault of Samarra is no more than the house of his grandfather, father and

him. It is a blessed place in which we pray to God and seek blessedness. Ibn Kutheir

however, is blabbermouth

:The following text is quoted from the footnote of Awnul Mabud, ١١/٣٤١

Sheik Ibnul-Qeyim: As an answer for the question about the way of admitting

Safina's narrative (After me, the succession shall be lasting for thirty years,) and the

prediction of the coming of twelve leaders, we say: The two are not contrasted since the thirty year succession is the prophesy succession. This is supported by Abu Bakra's narrative

Neither Ibnul-Qeyim nor could anyone else define the succession other than that of the prophesy. Then, what a sort of succession was that? How should such a ruling carry a godly Islamic characteristic after the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) had described it as a despotic monarchy?! This matter is admitted by the writer of Qurratul Einein and others

Their admitting the fact that the Umayyid reign was no more than a despotic monarchy and that it was not Islamic in any means, is an admission of its being a non-Islamic despotic dominion. How is it applicable for any sane to perceive that the Exalted Lord and His Apostle (peace be upon him and his family) carry the good tidings of the

p: ٩٦

?coming of non-Islamic rulers who will injure the nation by their despot Had Ibn Hebban, Ibn Hajar, Ibnul-Qeyim and their likes stopped on their fanaticism for the Umayyid, the matter would have been easier. Unfortunately, they insisted on using the prophetic sayings for their support, and aimed for applying the prophetic good tidings on their despotic kings

Al-Albani decides the authenticity of a good deal of prophetic sayings respecting the deviation of rulers coming to power after the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). Under the number ٢٩٨٢, he rules the authenticity of the hadith, “Some of my companions shall never see me again after my departure

,Under the number ٢٨٦٤, Al-Albani decides the authenticity of the hadith “After me your affairs shall be in the hands of men who will extinguish my traditions and inject heresies

The hadith, “I am holding you from the neck so that you will not fall in the hell-fire you are pushing yourselves in like butterflies and locust. I am about to fling your necks,” is given the number ٢٨٦٥

The hadith, “A man from sons of Umayya shall be taking initiative in changing my traditions,” is authenticated by Al-Albani who lists it under number ١٧٤٩ of the title ‘The Prophet’s prediction.’ Al-Albani commentates, “This hadith stands for the change that occurred to the Islamic system from elections into succession. God, however, is the most knowledgeable

Under the number ٧٤٤, Al-Albani decides the authenticity of the hadith, “As soon as sons of Al-Aas attain thirty, they will betake the Lord’s religion as a instrument and the

p: ٩٧

”.Lord’s servants as slaves and the Lord’s fortunes as treasures

As he decides the authenticity of Safina's narrative, Al-Albani gives it the number ٤٥٩

under the title, 'the prophesy succession

.Nevertheless, Al-Albani defends the Umayyids. He says

This does not oppose the coming of other caliphs since they are not seen as the Prophet's successors. Evidently, those are the only intended in the hadith involved

:This matter is supported by the following wording of Sheikul-Islam

It is licit to call those who came -to power- after the Rashidite caliphs as caliphs

...although they were kings

Pursuing Ibn Teimiya; his master, Al-Albani rules that the twelve divinely custodian

imams of whom the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) had foretold, are

Muawiya, Yazid and sons of Al-Hakam Bin Abil-Aas at whom tens of frank, decisive

and authentic sayings of censure were addressed

See how fanaticism in cherishing the Umayyids incites this man to put himself in a

position deserving the Exalted Lord's censure, and His Apostle's curse

Such a person will not find an answer if an orientalist addresses at him that Muslims confess that their Lord and His Apostle are of fluctuating tempers! They curse, censure

and condemn persons, and then, please them and declare before Muslims that those

previously accursed persons and their offspring will be the choice among people, and

!!will be the divinely sinless custodians of this nation

The wicked orientalist, Salman Rushdi and his likes found themselves a hole for reviling at Islam through such false narratives respecting fanaticism to Quraish and the

p: ٩٨

.Umayyids and Kabul-Ahbar

## Twelfth

.Models of our narratives respecting the twelve imams

:In his Al-Khissal, As-Saduq records the following on pages ٤٦٦-٧

Ibn Masud's forecited narrative is related in different ways of narration, all related to

Mujalid Bin Sa'eed. At any rate, there is a number of ways in which Mujalid Bin

.Sa'eed is not a party

Qeis Bin Abd: We were encompassing Abdullah Bin Masud when a Bedouin...

came and asked about him. "I am Abdullah," answered he. "Did your prophet tell you about the number of his successors?" asked the Bedouin. "Yes, he did. They are

.twelve, like the number of the Israelite disciples," answered Abdullah

We were accompanying Abdullah Bin Masud in the mosque when a Bedouin ...

came and asked about him. "I am Abdullah. What is your need?" answered he. "O Abdullah! Did your prophet tell you about the number of his successors?" asked the Bedouin. "Well, you have asked me about a matter I have never been asked before since I arrived in Iraq. Yes, he did. They are twelve, like the number of the Israelite

.disciples,” answered Abdullah

”Abu Aruba: (Abdullah answered,) “Yes. Like the number of the Israelite leaders

,Jarir: Al-Ashath Bin Masud: The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) stated

”After me, the successors are twelve, like the number of the Israelite leaders“

In the same documentation, the narratives are recorded in Kemaluddin We

.Temamun Nima, ٢٧١

Among the comparative objective writings, I can recognize the precious book of

Kifayetul Athar Elel Eimmetil Ithnei Ashar, compiled by the expert hadithist Ali Bin

p: ٩٩

Mohammed Bin Ali Al-Khezzaz Al-Qummi Ar-Razi. He is one of the grand scholars in

the fourth century. This work is considered as the most remarkable respecting the

.Prophet’s traditions

In the introductory of the book, the compiler defines his course. On page ٧, he

:records

The main reason that urged me on compiling narrators of the Prophet’s companions

and his truthful progeny respecting the texts dealing with the immaculate imams, is

that I found some ordinary people of the Shias perplexed in this regard. They

doubted due to the firmness of the anthropomorphists and the Mutazilites who aimed

at confusing their credits. The matter attained its climax when those people denied

the divine texts regarding the imamate. Some exceeded when denied the entire

traditions of the prophet's companions in this regard... Therefore, I committed myself to scrutinizing in this field and clarifying whatever evidences I can obtain. I intended to repeal the antagonists' heresies. Finally, I seek the Lord's offers and the satisfaction of the Prophet and the imams succeeding him

First, I am to mention the narratives dealing with this topic, that are related to the

familiar companions of the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family), such as

-Abdullah Bin Abbas, Abdullah Bin Masud, Abu Sa'eed Al-Khidri, Abu Therr Al

,Ghefari, Selman Al-Farisi, Jabir Bin Samara, Jabir Bin Abdillah, Anas Bin Malik

,Abu Hureira, Omar Bin Al-Khattab, Zaid Bin Thabit, Zaid Bin Arqam, Abu Umama

Wathila Bin Al-Asqa, Abu Ayoub Al-Ansari, Ammar Bin Yasir, Hutheifa Bin

Asyed, Imran Bin Al-Hussain, Sa'd Bin Malik, Hutheifa Bin Al-Yeman, Abu Qetada

p: ١٠٠

Al-Ansari, Ali Bin Abi Talib and his two sons; Al-Hassan and Al-Hussein (peace be

upon him

Among women, I compiled the texts related by Ummu Salama, Aisha and Fatima the

daughter of the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

Thereafter, I am to record the imams' reports concordant to the Prophet's companions'. I am to mention each imam's nominating his successor. This work is

purposed for making people realize the real situation and take it as their religion

evading being like those described in God's saying, (And those did not show

(opposition but after knowledge had come to them, out of envy among them

Such narratives remove doubt and hesitancy, and repeal every excuse. In fact, the

.matter is more genuine than what they thought

The compiler (God bless his soul) collates the narrative of each companion he has

already mentioned under a definite title. He also records the narrative and its

documentation and series of narrators up to the Prophet (peace be upon him and his

,family). This work saved a great deal of narratives that have been, totally or partially

.lost in the reference books of the Sunnis; our brothers

:The following are models from the book

:On page ۲۳, Title: Narratives of Abdullah Bin Masud, the writer records

Abdullah Bin Masud: I heard the Prophet (peace be upon him) say: The imams ...

after me shall be twelve. Nine of them shall be from Ak-Hussein's offspring. Their

.ninth is their Mahdi

:On page ۳۷, Title: Narratives of Anas Bin Malik, the writer records

p: ۱۰۱

Anas Bin Malik: After leading the collective prayer, the Prophet (peace be upon ...

him and his family) orated, "O my companions! He shall be grouped with us that

whoever loves my household. He is adhering to the firmest handle that whoever

adheres to my coming successors." Abu Therr stood erect and asked, "O God's

messenger! How many will be the imams after you?" "Their number is the like of the

Israelite leaders’,” answered the Prophet. “All shall be from your household?” asked

Abu Therr. “All shall be from my household. Nine shall be from Al-Hussein’s offspring. Mahdi is one of them,” answered the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family).

On page ۱۳۳, Title: Narratives of Abu Ayoub Al-Ansari, Khalid Bin Zaid, the writer records

Abu Ayoub Al-Ansari: I heard the Apostle of God (peace be upon him and his ... family) say, “I am the master of the prophets. Ali is the master of the prophets successors. My grandsons are the best of the grandsons. The sinless imams are from

us. They are from Al-Hussein’s offspring. Mahdi of this nation is from us

A Bedouin stood up and asked about their number. “Their number is the like of the

grandsons -of Abraham- and the Disciples of Jesus and the Israelite leaders

.” (answered the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

:On page ۱۲۰, Title: Narratives of Ammar Bin Yasir, the writer records

Ammar: I was with the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) during a ... battle when Ali (peace be upon him) killed bearers of the pennons; Amr Bin Abdillah

p: ۱۰۲

Al-Jumjumi and Sheiba Bin Nafi. I came to the Prophet and expressed that Ali had fought for the sake of God in the very proper way. “This is because he is being a part of me and I am a part of him,” answered the Prophet, and added, “He is the heir of

my knowledge and the settler of my debts and the keeper on my promises. He is the leader after me. Without him, the pure believers are never recognized. Confronting him is as same as confronting me. And confronting me is as same as confronting Allah. Consenting to him is as same as consenting to me. And consenting to me is as same as consenting to Allah. He is really the father of my two grandsons. The imams .are from his offspring. From him, God; the Exalted, shall bring the prudent imams ”.Mahdi of this nation is being one of them

”?My father and mother be sacrificed to you, God’s messenger! Who is that Mahdi“  
I wondered

O Ammar!” answered the Prophet, “Allah; the Blessed the Elevated, has given me“ the covenant that He shall create nine persons from Al-Hussein’s offspring. Their ninth shall be invisible for them. This is God’s saying, (Say: Have you considered if your water should go down, who is it then that will bring you flowing water?) His invisibility shall take a long time that some people will apostatize while others shall be firm. In the last of time he shall come forth to fill in this world with justice and

p: ١٠٣

equity. He shall fight for the sake of the interpretation as same as when I fought for the sake of the revelation. He shall bear my name. He shall be the most similar to me O Ammar! After me, there shall come a heresy. When that occurs, you should follow Ali and his party. He is being with the right, and the right is being with him

O Ammar! After me, you shall be fighting with Ali two categories of people; the  
breachers and the deviants. Then, the despotic party will kill you  
"O God's messenger!" I asked, "Will that be for the satisfaction of God and yours"  
Yes, it will be for the satisfaction of God and mine. The last meal you will have in  
this world shall be a drink of milk," predicted the Prophet  
On the day of battle of Siffine, Ammar Bin Yasir came to Ali Amirul-Muminin, and  
asked his permitting him to fight. "Slow down, God may be merciful to you  
answered Ali. An hour later, Ammar came and repeated the same demand. Ali  
answered him the same answer. In the third time, Amirul Muminin wept and said, "It  
is the day the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) had described to me  
Hence, Ali (peace be upon him) rode off his pack animal, hanged Ammar and saw  
him off. He then said, "O Abul-Yaqdan! God reward you excellently for your  
defending God and His Apostle. You have been the best brother and the best  
acquaintance." Ali and Ammar wept for a while. "O Amirul Muminin!" worded

p: ۱۰۴

Ammar, "By God I swear, I followed you due to my being certain. I heard the  
Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) address at me on the day of Kheibar, 'O  
Ammar! After me, there shall be a heresy. You should follow Ali and his party. He is  
being with the right and the right is being with him. You will be fighting the  
breachers and the deviants.' O Amirul-Mumminin! May God reward you excellently

”for your defending Islam. You have truly consummated, conveyed and advised

Ammar then went to the battlefield. He asked for some water. A man from Ansar

,gave him a drink of milk since they had no water. As he drank it, Ammar shouted

This is the prediction of the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) to me. He“

”told that my last drink in this world would be a drink of milk

He attacked the enemies and could kill eighteen persons. Two Syrian men faced him

.and could stab him. He was killed

That night, Amirul-Muminin (peace be upon him) passed by the casualties of the

battle. He found Ammar’s body among them. He took his head and placed it on his

thigh and wept. He then cited a couple of verses in which he expressed his grief for

.the departure of his dear people

:On page ١٨٠, Title: Narratives of Ummu Salama, the writer records

Seddad Bin Aws: On the battle of Jamal, I decided not to join any of the two ...

parties. To the midday, I did not participate in the fighting. That afternoon, the Lord

p: ١٠٥

inspired my heart to fight with Ali. Therefore, I fought in his lines till the end of the

battle. When I was back in Al-Madina, I visited Ummu Salama. “From where have

you come?” asked she. “From Basra,” I answered. “Which party did you join?” she

.asked. “O Ummul-Muminin!” I expressed, “I retired the fighting for half a day

”.Then, the Lord inspired me to fight with Ali

You have done the very right thing,” she praised, and added, “I heard the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) state, ‘He is fighting me that whoever fights Ali (peace be upon him and his family) state, ‘He is fighting me that whoever fights me’.” And he is fighting the Lord that whoever fights me

“You see that Ali is the right, do you not?” I asked. “Yes, by God,” she affirmed “Ali is being with the right and the right is being with him. By God I swear” Mohammed’s nation did violate their prophet when they preceded those whom are detained by the Lord and His Apostle, and detained those whom are preceded by the Lord and His Apostle. They kept their harem in their houses and took out the Prophet’s lady to the deserts. By God, I heard the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) say, ‘My nation shall be in a concordance and in discrepancy. You should join them when they are concordant. And you should choose for the middle situation when they are engaged in discrepancy. You are to focus your eyes on my household If they fight, you should fight with them. If they opt for peace, you should follow

p: ۱۰۶

” them. The right is being with them whenever they are

“Who are his household?” I asked “They are those we are mandated to adhere to. They are the imams after him. Their number is as same as the Israelite leaders’. They are Ali and his two sons, and nine persons from the Al-Hussein’s offspring. They are the immaculate and the sinless imams,” answered Ummu Salama

.What a pity! People are perishing, then!” I expressed“  
.Every sect rejoicing what they had with them,” she commented“

### THIRD DISCUSSION

#### THE ISLAMIC PRINCIPALS IN SERMONS OF THE FAREWELL PILGRIMAGE

Previously, we have proved that the Prophet’s sermon of Arafat, in the Farewell Pilgrimage, included his prediction of the coming of the twelve imams. It also included his recommendations in this regard

Now, we are to discuss contents of the other five sermons; sermon of Mecca on day of

Tarwiya, sermon of the second day, sermon of Al-Kheif Mosque on day of Nafr and sermon of Ghadir

Although the references of narrations communicated, confusedly, a few reports about

contents of these sermons, it is possible to infer that the Prophet (peace be upon him and

his family), through these sermons, provided the entire affairs needed by his nation after

him. These prophetic sermons included statements dealing with the following five bases

1. Base of the humanitarian equity .1

Principal of the humanitarian unity among mankind, and the eradication of the racial – discrimination

.Principal of acting good toward women and the impermissibility of wronging them –

:Base of unity of the Islamic nation .۲

p: ۱۰۷

Principal of eradicating the traces, practices and regulations of the pre-Islamic era –  
that

.are violating the Islamic laws

.Principal of the Muslims' fraternity and equity –

'Principal of noticing the private ownership, and illegality of violating the Muslims –  
.properties

Principal of regarding the Muslims' souls, and illegality of shedding the Muslim's –  
.blood

Principal of regarding the Muslims' honor and dignity, and illegality of abusing each –  
.other

Principal of maintaining properties and souls of those who speak out the creed of –  
'Islam; 'There is no god but Allah

, (Principal of sealing prophesy with the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family –  
.and sealing the nations with his nation

Principal of the Prophet's being the witness on his people in the Hereafter, and their –  
.joining him on the Divine Pool

Principal of necessity of accuracy in acting, and admonishing against committing the –

.insignificant actions that lead to deviation

Principal of warning against forging lies against the Prophet (peace be upon him and –  
his family), and insisting on investigating whatever is ascribed to him

.Base of the unity of the Islamic law –Sharia– and the Muslims’ culture .۴

.Principal of fulfilling the trusts –

.Regulations of the heritage –

.Regulations of the blood money and the retaliation –

”.Laws of the rites of the pilgrimage. “From me you should learn the rites –

:Bases of the political affairs and the leadership after the Prophet .۴

Principal of the prediction of the coming of the twelve imams of the Prophet’s –

p: ۱۰۸

.progeny

Principal of the importunate adherence to the Quran and the Prophet’s progeny; the –  
two weighty things

Principal of nominating Ali as the next leader of this nation, and the first of the twelve –  
imams

Principal of keeping on performing the obligatory rites and compliance with the –  
leaders

Principal of immortalizing the treaty of Quraish and Kenana on blockading the –  
Hashemites

Principal of warning the Quraishis against playing the tyrant after the departure of –  
the  
.(Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

Principal of warning the Prophet's companions against breaking faith and struggling –  
.on power

:Base of punishment of the dissenters against the prophetic course .Δ

Principal of cursing those who ascribe themselves to other than their fathers or –  
.masters

Detailed discussion of these bases and principals is inapplicable. Therefore, we are to  
mention models of these blessed sermons before we refer to topics and examples  
.related

It is quite clear that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) referred to each  
of

these bases and principals in many occasions before the Farewell Pilgrimage. As a  
matter of fact, these bases and principals, together with the six sermons, form a  
coalescing topic that is inseparable. The Prophet's wording is a revelation completes  
and explains each other. In every topic, that wording formulates a perfect doctrinal  
and

legislative unity that is contributing in constructing the divine comprehensive edifice of  
.Islam

This base is too evident to need any further discussion. Previously, we have referred to

p: ١٠٩

.a number of related texts of the Prophet's sermons

## MODELS OF THE PROPHET'S SERMONS IN THE FAREWELL

### PILGRIMAGE

:Ibn Shuba Al-Harrani -died in ٢٥٠- records on page ٣٠ of his Tuheful Uqoul

:The Prophet's Sermon In The Farewell Pilgrimage

Praised be Allah. We praise Him and seek His support and forgiveness. We repent to

.Him and seek His protection against evils of our souls, and sins of our acts

He Whomsoever Allah guides, there is no misleading for him, and he whomsoever

,Allah causes to err, there is no guide for him. I do admit there is no god but Allah

lonelily without any associate, and admit that Mohammed is being His servant and

.apostle

O servants of Allah! I do advise you to keep god-fearing. I urge you on acting in the

.field of His obedience. I seek the Lord's opening the good before me

O people! Listen to what I am elucidating to you. I cannot guarantee whether I shall

.meet you the next year in this situation

O people! Till you shall meet your Lord, your blood and honor are prohibited to be

abused among you, and sanctified as same as the degree of sanctification of this day

.in this country. Have I conveyed? O Allah! Be the witness

.He whoever has a trust in hand, should defray it to the depositor

-Usury of Jahilism\* is revoked. The first usury I am to revoke is Al-Abbas Bin Abdul

.Muttelib's

Retaliation of Jahilism is revoked. The first retaliation I am to revoke is Amir Bin

p: ١١٠

.Rabia Bin Al-Harith Bin Abdil-Muttelib's

Except for custody of the Kaba and watering the pilgrimages, all the practices of the

.Jahilism are revoked

Retaliation is the ruling of murders. What is killed by a stick or a stone is decided as

a quasi-murder. Its blood money is one hundred camels. Any increase on that

.quantity is a Jahilite deed

.Jahilism is the pre-Islamic era\*

O people! The Satan despaired of being obeyed in this land. But he pleased to be

.obeyed in other acts. They are your insignificant sins

,O people! Postponing (of the sacred months) is only an addition in unbelief

wherewith those who disbelieve are led astray, violating it one year and keeping it

sacred another, that they may agree in the number of months that Allah has made

.sacred

Time has rotated as same as the first day on which the Lord created the heavens and the earth. Surely number of months with Allah is twelve months in Allah's ordinance since the day when He created the heavens and the earth, of these four being sacred

-Three are consecutive and the fourth is independent. They are Dhu'l-Qada, Dhu'l

Hijja, Muharram and Rajab that comes between Jumada and Shaban. Have I

.conveyed? O Allah! Be the witness

O people! Your women enjoy rights imposed upon you. You also enjoy rights imposed upon them. Your rights imposed upon them are that they should not let any take your places in your beds, and not permit those whom you dislike to be in your houses unless your permissions are obtained, and not to commit any ill deed. If they

p: ۱۱۱

do, the Lord allows you to prevent them and abandon them in the beds and discipline

them by unharmed beating. If they desist and obey, you then are obliged to bind yourselves to save their alimony and clothing in an acceptable way. You have taken

them by the trust of God, and you have consummated their privates by the God's Book. Hence, beware of your deeds respecting your women, and advise each other

.for their good

O people! The believers are brothers. It is illicit for any believer to take from his brother's property unless the satisfactory permission is obtained. Have I conveyed

.O Allah! Be the witness

Do not break your faith and return to unbelief by killing each other. I am leaving among you what protect you against deviation if only you accede to. It is the Book of Allah and my people; my household. Have I conveyed? O Allah! Be the witness O people! Your Lord is one, and your father is one. You all are from Adam, and Adam was created of mud. Surely the most honorable of you with Allah is the most careful of his duty. Except by means of god-fearing, no Arab is preferable to any non-Arab. Have I conveyed? Yes. You did," said they"

The witness should carry these to the absent

O people! God has partitioned the portions of each heir. It is illicit for heirs to will more than the one-third. Babies are the bed's, and the prostitutes' share is the stone Curse of the Lord, the angels and the entire people be on that whoever ascribes

p: ۱۱۲

himself to other than his father or master. God be not accept his excuse or compensation. Peace and God's mercy be upon you

:Al-Kafi: ۱/۴۰۳

a man from Quraish: With Sufian Athawri I went to Jafar Bin Mohammed. We ... found him on his pack animal. Sufian addressed at him, "O Abu Abdillah! Would you please relate to us the Prophet's sermon in Al-Kheif Mosque?" The imam apologized since he had already ridden, and promised he would answer Sufian's

question as soon as he would be back. "I adjure you by your kinship to the Apostle of God (peace be upon him and his family) to relate it to me," insisted Sufian. The imam rode off. Sufian asked for a pen and a paper to record the imam's wording. The imam spoke, "In the Name of Allah, the Beneficent, the Merciful. This is the sermon of the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) addressed in Al-Kheif Mosque. God may bloom the servants who will listen and understand my words, and convey them to the absent

O people! The witness should carry this to the absent. A bearer of a knowledge may happen to be illiterate, and a bearer of a knowledge may happen to carry it to the more knowledgeable

Hearts of Muslims should never act unfaithfully in three matters; sincere performance of God's duties, providing the advice to the Muslims' imams and committing to their congruity. Their congruity is binding. The believers are brothers of equal blood. They are one hand against their enemies

p: ۱۱۳

"The least among them can bear their situation. After he had recorded these statements, Sufian provided them before the imam. Hence, Abu Abdillah rode the pack animal and went. Halfway, I told Sufian that Abu Abdillah had bound him with an everlasting duty. What is that?" asked Sufian. "It is the three things in which a Muslim should never"

.act unfaithfully,” I said, “Sincere performance of God’s duties is a clear matter  
Regarding providing the advice to the Muslims’ imams, who are those imams? Are  
they Muawiya Bin Abi Sufian, Yazid Bin Muawiya, Marwan Bin Al-Hakam and the  
other rulers, the collective prayers led by whom are invalid? About committing to  
their congruity, who are those congruous people? Are they the deferrers who believe  
that persons who did not perform a single obligatory prayer, and did not fast a single  
day, and did not perform the obligatory bathing, and demolished the Kaba and marry  
their mothers, are bearing the same degree of faith born by Gabriel and Michael; the  
angels? Or are they the fatalists who believe that the Satan’s desire can be  
materialized while God’s cannot? Or are they the Harurites who deny Ali Bin Abi  
Talib and decide his atheism? Or are they the Jahmites who claim that faith is  
”?knowing God only

As he became perplexed, Sufian asked me an explanation of the Prophet’s saying  
reported by Abu Abdillah; the imam. “Ali Bin Abi Talib, by God, is the only imam  
before whom we are mandated to provide the advice. And the congruity stands for

p: ۱۱۴

.his household,” I answered

.Sufian tore the paper and asked me to keep it secret

:Ali Bin Ibrahim’s Tafsir: ۱/۱۷۱

The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) performed the Farewell Pilgrimage

:which was the tenth since he immigrated to Al-Madina. In Mina, he orated

.Praised and thanked be Allah“

O people! Listen and understand my coming wording. I cannot guarantee whether I

.shall meet you the next year

”?Do you realize which day is the most sanctified

.It is this day,” answered people“

”?Do you realize which month is the most sanctified“

.It is this month,” answered they“

”?Do you realize which land is the most sanctified“

.It is this land,” answered they“

Your souls, estate and honors are as sanctified among you as this day in this month“

!in this land till you shall meet your Lord Who will examine your deeds. O people

”?Have I conveyed

.Yes, you have,” shouted they“

O Allah! Be the witness,” commented the Prophet. After a while, he added, “Every“

regulation, heresy, revenge and debt that were founded in Jahilism, are under my

”?feet. None is preferable to another but by criteria of god-fearing. Have I conveyed

.Yes, you have,” declared they“

O Allah! Be the witness,” said the Prophet, and added, “Every usury that was“

concluded in the Jahilism is revoked. The first usury I am to revoke is Al-Abbas Bin

Abdil-Muttelib's. Every revenge that was in the Jahilism is revoked. The first

"?revenge I am to revoke is Rabia's. Have I conveyed

.Yes, you have," shouted they"

p: ۱۱۵

O God! Be the witness," said the Prophet, and added, "The Satan despaired of being"

obeyed on this land. But he pleased to be obeyed through your insignificant deeds. If

.the Satan is obeyed, he is then served

O people! A Muslim is the brother of Muslims. It is illicit for a Muslim to shed the

blood of the other Muslim, or to have from his estate unless satisfaction is obtained. I

am given the orders of fighting people till they say: There is no god but Allah. As

they speak this statement out, they will protect their souls and estate except in the

"?rightful ways. The Lord shall be their judge. O people! Have I conveyed

.Yes, you have," shouted they"

O Allah! Be the witness," said the Prophet and added, "O people! Keep my wording"

and you will harvest its benefits later on. Perceive my sayings and you will be

prosperous. Break not your faith after me, and be not unbelievers by beheading each

other for the sake of mundane affairs. If you do so, and you shall do it, you will find

me in a phalanx between Gabriel and Michael; the angels, striking your faces with

the sword..." For a while, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) kept peace

while he was turning to his right. Then, he continued, "...or Ali Bin Abi Talib, God

willing. I am leaving among you the two things that will enduringly protect you against deviation. They are the Book of Allah and my people; my household. The

p: ۱۱۶

Knower of subtleties, the Aware has informed me that these two things shall never separate until they will join me on the Divine Pool. He shall be saved that whoever accedes to them. And he shall be perishing that whoever dissents them. Have I

”?conveyed

.Yes, you have,” shouted they“

O Allah! Be the witness,” said the Prophet and added, “Men among you shall be“

occluded from joining me on the Divine Pool. I will say they are being my companions. I will be answered, ‘You lack knowledge of what they committed after

”!you.’ I will comment, ‘Far away! Far away

On the last day of Tashriq, God revealed Sura of Nasr. The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) understood that his death was about to fall. He declared people

:to gather in Al-Kheif Mosque for the prayer. When people came there, he orated

.Praised and thanked be Allah“

God may bloom the servant who will listen and understand my words, and convey

.them to the absent

A bearer of knowledge may happen to be illiterate, and a bearer of knowledge may

.happen to carry it to the more knowledgeable

Muslim's hearts should never act unfaithfully in three matters; sincere performance of God's duties, providing the advice to the Muslims' imams and committing to their .congruity. Their congruity is binding

The believers are brothers of equal blood. The least among them can bear their situation. They are one hand against their enemies. O people! I am leaving among "you the two weighty things." "What are the two weighty things, God's messenger

p: ۱۱۷

wondered people. The Prophet explained: "They are the Book of Allah and my people; my household. The Knower of subtleties, the Aware has informed me that .these two things shall never separate until they will join me on the Divine Pool

Their joining shall be like the joining of the forefingers of my two hands, not the "joining of the forefinger and the next one, since there is a little space may be left

Some of the Prophet's companions spoke to each other that Mohammed intended to dedicate the leadership to his household. Four of them traveled to Mecca and entered the Kaba where they concluded an agreement on preventing the Prophet's household

from holding any position of leadership as soon as Mohammed would be dead or ?assassinated. Hence, God revealed to his Prophet: (Or have they settled an affair

Then, surely We are the settlers. Or do they think that We do not hear what they conceal and their secret discourses? Aye! And our messengers with them write

(.down

:Abu Bakra: The Prophet (peace be upon him) stated

Time has rotated as same as the first day on which the Lord created the heavens and“

the earth. A year contains twelve months, four of them are sanctified. Three are

successive; Dhu'l-Qada, Dhu'l-Hijja and Muharram. And the fourth is Rajab which

”falls between Jumada and Shaban. Which month is this

.God and His Apostle are the most knowledgeable,” we answered“

The Prophet paused for a considerable while that we thought he would call another

p: ١١٨

.name to that month

.Is it not Dhu'l-Hijja?” asked the Prophet“

.Yes, it is,” we replied“

.Which land is this?’ asked he“

.God and His Apostle are the most knowledgeable,” we answered“

The Prophet paused for a considerable while that we thought he would call another

.name to it

.Is it not Al-Balda?” asked the Prophet“

.Yes, it is,” we replied“

.Which day is today?” asked the Prophet“

.God and His Apostle are the most knowledgeable,” we answered“

The Prophet kept peace for a considerable while that we thought he would call

.another name to it

.Is it not the Nahr Day?" asked the Prophet"

.Yes, it is," we answered"

The Prophet spoke, "Your souls and estate (Mohammed: He might said, "and your honor...") are sanctified among you as same as the sanctification of this day in this

.month on this land. You shall meet your Lord, and He shall examine your deeds

After me, return not to deviation by beheading each other. The witness should inform

the absent. It may happen that an indirect receiver is being more committed than the

".direct

It is noticeable that the narrator uses 'deviation' instead of 'unbelief' which was

.mentioned in the other ways of narration

:Al-Bukhari's: ١/٢٤

The Prophet (peace be upon him) sat on the back of his camel while a man was ...  
catching to its bridle. "Which day is today?" asked the Prophet. We kept peace for a

.considerable while that we thought he would call another name to that day

.Is it not the Nahr Day?" asked the Prophet"

p: ١١٩

.Yes, it is," we replied"

.Which month are we in?" asked the Prophet"

We kept peace for a considerable while that we thought he would call another name  
to that month

.Is it not Dhu'l-Hijja?" asked the Prophet"

.Yes, it is," we replied"

The Prophet added, "Your souls, estate and honor are sanctified among you as same  
as the sanctification of this day in this month on this land. The witness should inform  
".the absent. A witness may convey to a more committed

:Muslim's: 4/41

:The Prophet (peace be upon him) descended the valley and orated ...

Your souls and estate are sanctified among you as same as the sanctification of this"  
.day in this month on this land. Every affair of the Jahilism is being under my feet  
-Revenge of the Jahilism is revoked. The first revenge I am to revoke is Rabia Bin Al  
Harith's; ours. He was suckling in the quarter of Bani Sa'd, and the Hutheil killed  
him

-Usury of Jahilism is revoked. The first usury I am to revoke is Al-Abbas Bin Abdil  
Muttelib's; ours

Watch your Lord during treating your women. You have taken them by the trust of  
God. And you have consummated their privates by the word of God. Your rights  
imposed upon them are that they should not permit any you dislike to sit on your  
furniture. If they do so, you are permitted to beat them not heavily. Their rights

imposed upon you are to save their alimony and clothing in an acceptable way. I am

p: ١٢٠

leaving among you what will protect you against deviation as long as you commit yourselves to. It is the Book of Allah. You shall be asked about me. What will you

”?answer

.We do confess you have conveyed, accomplished and advised,” shouted people“

As he raised his forefinger to the heavens and shook it towards people, the Prophet

”.said thrice, “O Allah! Be the witness

.Ibn Madga relates the same previous narrative with an addition

:Al-Hakim’s Al-Mustedrak; ١٧٧

:The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) orated

O People! I will precede you to the Divine Pool. It is a pool of a distance as same as“  
.it between Kufa and the Black Stone –of the Kaba–. His vessels are as much as stars

As some people from my nation will approach, a man will come out and occlude

them from being close to me. Another group shall be occluded, too. None shall

”.escape but a few groups like the scattered animals in a cattle

.Am I one of them, God’s prophet?” asked Abu Bakr“

No, you are not,” answered the Prophet, “They are people of the coming“

”.generations who will move backward

,–Al-Hakim) According to the criteria of the two Sheiks –Muslim and Al-Bukhari)

this is an authentic narrative. Yet, they did not record it. Al-Hejjaj Bin Mohammed

.relates it to Al-Leith

:Ibn Madga's As-Sunan; 2/1016

Abdullah Bin Masud: While he was on the back of his she-camel in Arafat, the ...

Prophet (peace be upon him) said, "Do you realize which day, month and land are

p: 121

"?these

.These are sanctified day, month and land," answered they

Your estate and souls are sanctified among you as same as the sanctification of this

month, land and day," said the Prophet, and went on, "I will precede you to the

Divine Pool, and I will take pride in you before the other nations. Blacken not my

face. I will save some people, and some will be taken away from me. I will say, 'O

Lord! Those are my companions.' I will be answered, 'You lack knowledge of what

".they did after you

.In Majma'uzzawaid, this is an authentic report

:Ibn Madga's As-Sunan; 2/1300

:Title: After Me, Return Not To Atheism By Beheading Each Other

(Jarir Bin Abdillah: During the Farewell Pilgrimage, the Prophet (peace be upon him

asked people to keep silent. He said, "After me, return not to atheism by beheading

".each other

Ibn Omar: The Prophet (peace be upon him) stated, “Woe is you! After me, return  
”.not to atheism by beheading each other

As-Sennaj Al-Ahmesi: The Prophet (peace be upon him) stated, “I will precede you  
to the Divine Pool. I will take pride in you among the other nations. After me, do not  
”.fight each other

.In Majma’uzzawaid, this is an authentic report with trustful narrators

:At-Tirmithi’s As-Sunan; ٢/١٢٢

Abu Umama: During the Farewell Pilgrimage, I heard the Prophet (peace be upon ...

him) say, “Beware of your duty to Allah, and perform the five prayers, and fast on  
that month, and defray the poor rate, and comply with your leaders and you shall be

p: ١٢٢

”.taken to the Paradise of your Lord

Abu Umama confesses that he heard this prophetic saying when he was thirty years

.old

.Abu Isa: This narrative is qualified with a rather doubtful narrator. It is, however

.decided as authentic

:Ahmed’s Al-Musnad; ٥/٤١٢

A man from the Prophet’s companions: The Prophet (peace be upon him) was on ...

”?the back of his red she-camel when he asked, “Do you realize which day is today

.It is the Nahr Day,” answered we“

You are true,” replied the Prophet, “It is the Grand Pilgrimage Day. Which month is“

”?it

.It is Dhu’l-Hijja,” expressed we“

You are true,” commented the Prophet, “It is the palatial month of God. Do you“

”?know which land is this

.It is the Holy Precinct,” answered we“

You are true,” stated the Prophet, and added, “Your souls and estate are sanctified“  
among you as same as the sanctification of this day in this month on this land. (Or: as

(” .same as the sanctification of this day, month and land

I will precede you to the Divine Pool. I will look at you as I will take pride in you  
.among the other nations. Blacken not my face. You have seen and listened to me  
You shall be asked about me. He whoever deliberately forges lies against me, should  
seek himself a place in the hell-fire. I will save some people, and others will be taken  
,away from me. I will say, ‘O Lord! They are my companions.’ I will be answered  
”’.You lack knowledge of what they did after you‘

p: ١٢٣

:Majma’uzzawaid; ٣/٢٤٥

:Title: Sermons Of The Pilgrimage

Abu Harra Ar-Reqqashi: His uncle: In the middle of the Tashriq days, I was catching  
the riddle of the Prophet’s she-camel. The Prophet spoke, “O people! Do you realize

”?which day, month and land are these

.They are sanctified day, month and land,” answered people“

Your souls, estate and honor are as sanctified among you as this day in this month“

on this land, till the day on which you shall meet your Lord. Listen to me and you

will live. Wrong not each other. Wrong not each other. Wrong not each other. It is

.illicit for any to have from a Muslim’s property unless satisfaction is obtained

.Every blood and estate of Jahilism should be under my feet till the Resurrection Day

The first revenge I am to revoke is Rabia Bin Al-Harith Bin Abdil-Muttelib’s. He

was a baby at the Leith when the Hutheil killed him. Every usury that was in

Jahilism is revoked. The Exalted Lord mandates that the first usury to be revoked is

Al-Abbas Bin Abdil-Muttelib’s. You possess your capital, neither wronging nor

.wronged

Time has rotated as same as the first day on which the Lord created the heavens and

the earth. Surely the number of months with Allah is twelve months in Allah’s

ordinance since the day when He created the heavens and the earth, of these four

being sacred. That is the right reckoning; therefore, wrong not each other during

.them

.After me, return not to atheism by beheading each other

p: ۱۲۴

The Satan despaired of being obeyed by the performers of prayers; but he is working

.on creating antagonism among you

Fear God during treating your women. They are restrained at you. They have rights imposed upon you and you have rights imposed upon them. The rights imposed upon them are that they should not permit any to take your places in your beds, and they are not allowed to permit any you dislike to enter your houses. If you expect desertion of a women, you should admonish, and desert in the bed, and beat ineffectively. Their rights are that you should save their alimony and clothing. You have taken them by the trust of God, and you have consummated their privates by the

.word of God

”.He whoever had a trust, should deliver it to the depositor

?The Prophet then opened his hand and said, “Have I conveyed? Have I conveyed

The witness should inform the absent. An indirect receiver may happen to be more

”.receptive than a direct hearer

(Abu Dawud dedicates this narration to the statements of beating women)

Ahmed and Abu Harra Ar-Reqqashi relates the narration. Abu Dawud rules its authenticity, while Ibn Muin decides its doubtfulness. One of the narrators is Ali Bin

(Zaid about whom there are some points noted by experts

Abu Nadra: A man heard the Prophet’s sermon addressed in the middle of the

:Tashriq days

The Prophet (peace be upon him) stated, "O people! Your Lord is one. Your father is one. An Arab should not be preferred to a non-Arab, and a black should not preferred

p: ١٢٥

"?to a white except by criteria of god-fearing. Have I conveyed

.Yes, the messenger of God has conveyed," people shouted"

.Which day is today?" asked the Prophet"

.It is a sanctified day," people answered"

.Which land is this?" asked the Prophet"

.It is a sanctified land," people shouted"

God; the Exalted, has made your souls and estate (The Prophet might have added"

.and honor' to his statement.) as sanctified as this day in this month on this land"

.Have I conveyed?" said the Prophet

.Yes, the messenger of God has conveyed," people admitted"

.(The witness should inform the absent," ordered the Prophet (peace be upon him"

To a series of authentic narrators, Ahmed relates the previous report on page ٧٢ of)

(.part ٥

Ibn Omar: When this sura was revealed to the Prophet (peace be upon him) in Mina in the middle of the Tashriq days, he recognized the imminence of his death. He rode his pack animal; Al-Qaswa, and stood among people in Al-Aqaba. A great number of

:Muslims encompassed him. He orated

.Praised and thanked be Allah“

O people! Every revenge that was in Jahilism is annulled. The first revenge I am to annul is Rabia Bin Al-Harith's. The Hutheil killed him when he was a baby at the .Leith

Likewise, every usury that was concluded in the Jahilism is revoked. The first usury .I am to revoke is Al-Abbas Bin Abdil-Muttelib's

O people! Time has rotated as same as it was when the Lord created the heavens and the earth. Number of months with Allah is twelve, four of which are sanctified. They p: ۱۲۶

are Rajab which falls between Jumada and Shaban, and Dhu'l-Qada and Dhu'l-Hijja and Muharram. That is the right reckoning; therefore, wrong not each other during .them

Postponing of the sacred months is only an addition in unbelief, wherewith those who disbelieve are led astray, violating it one year and keeping it sacred another, that they may agree the number of months that Allah has made sacred. They were violating Safar a year and keeping Muharram sacred the other. That is the postponing .of the sacred months

.O people! He whoever had a trust, should deliver it to the depositor

O people! The Satan despaired of being obeyed on this land in the last of time, but he pleased to be obeyed in your insignificant deeds. Take care of your religion against

.your insignificant deeds

O people! Women are in your hands. You have taken them by the trust of God, and consummated their privates by the word of God. You have right imposed upon them and they have rights imposed upon you. Within your rights is that they should not let any take your places in your beds, and they should not disobey you in acceptable matters. If they do so, then you have no authority on them. They should enjoy their alimony and clothing in an acceptable way. If you beat them, you should not injure. It is illicit for any to have from his brother's property unless satisfaction is obtained

O people! Among you, I am leaving what will protect you against deviation if you

p: ۱۲۷

.adhere to. It is the Book of Allah. You should follow it

”O people! Which day is today

.It is a sacred day,” answered they“

.Which land is this?” asked the Prophet“

.It is a sacred land,” answered they“

.Which month is this?” asked the Prophet“

.It is a sacred month,” answered they“

Allah; the Blessed the Elevated, has made your souls, estate and honor as sacred as“

this day in this month on this land. The witness should inform the absent. There shall

”.be no prophet after me, and there shall be no nation after you

The Prophet then raised his hands to the heavens and said, “O Allah! Be the witness”.

In the Sahih books –the most acceptable books of hadith–, a part of this report is recorded. Al-Bezzar relates it, too. Musa Bin Ubeida; the doubtful, is within the (series of the narrators :Majmauzzawaid; ۳/۲۷۲

Al-Adda Bin Khalid Bin Amr Bin Amir: In the Farewell Pilgrimage, I was sitting ... :under the pulpit from which the Prophet (peace be upon him) sermonized. He said Praised and thanked be Allah. God says, (O you men! We have created you of a“ ;male and a female, and made you tribes and families that you may know each other surely the most honorable of you with Allah is the one among you most careful of his duty.) An Arab should not be preferred to a non-Arab, and a non-Arab should not be preferred to an Arab, and a black should not be preferred to a white, and a white p: ۱۲۸

.should not be preferred to a black except on criteria of god-fearing O the Quraishis! Do not shoulder the mundane affairs, while people shoulder the ”.Hereafter. I will not avail you in the least before God .In his Al-Mujamul Kabir, At-Tabarani relates this narration to doubtful narrators)

(Previously, we have referred to an authentic documentation of this report :Abu Qabila: In the Farewell Pilgrimage, the Prophet sermonized

There shall be no prophet after me, and there shall be no nation after you. Revere“  
your Lord, and perform the five prayers, and fast the month, and comply with the  
”.leaders and you shall be entering the Paradise of your Lord

(...In his Al-Mujamul Kabir, At-Tabarani relates)

:Ad-Darimi's As-Sunan; ۲/۴۷

The Prophet (peace be upon him) stated: “Your blood and estate are as sanctified...  
as this day in this month on this land. Every matter that was regulated in Jahilism is  
under my feet. Revenge of Jahilism is revoked. The first revenge I am to revoke is  
.the Rabia Bin Al-Harith's. The Hutheil killed him when he was a baby at the Sa'd  
-Usury of Jahilism is revoked. The first usury I am to revoke is Al-Abbas Bin Abdil  
.Muttelib's

Watch the Lord during treating your women. You have taken them by the trust of  
God, and consummated their privates by His word. Your rights imposed upon them  
are that they should not let any take your places in your beds. If they do, you are to  
beat them ineffectively. Their rights imposed upon you are that you should save their

p: ۱۲۹

.alimony and clothing in an acceptable way

”?You shall be asked about me, what shall you answer

.We acknowledge you have conveyed, accomplished and advised,” shouted people“

The Prophet raised his forefinger to the heavens and shook it at people while he said

... ”.thrice, “O Allah! Be the witness

:Ad-Darimi’s As-Sunan; ٢/٤٧

Abdurrahman Bin Abi Bakra: His father: ... “Which day is today?” asked the

.(Prophet (peace be upon him

We kept silent for a considerable while that we thought he would call another name

.for that day

.Is it not the Nahr Day?” asserted the Prophet“

.Yes, it is,” answered we“

.Which month is this?” asked the Prophet...etc“

## **SECOND BASE**

### UNITY OF THE ISLAMIC NATION

For a preliminary sight on the texts relating the Prophet’s last sermons, a reader believes

that the first five principals of this base: unity of the Islamic nation, are the only and the

most important topic. Muslims repeated paragraphs of the Prophet’s sermons dealing

with this topic so over again. This is by the reason that the society in which the Prophet

peace be upon him and his family) lived, was of an extreme racial discrimination. It)

was prevailed by laws of predominance and power. The dominant, whether a ruler, a

tribe, a knight or a vagrant, is always the right since he could overcome even if he used

.means of invasion, assassination, robbery, usurpation or trickery

The Islamic legislation repealed all these and declared equity of people before the  
.law

The entire sorts of abusing the private rights were prohibited. A concentration on

p: ۱۳۰

respecting souls, estate and dignity of people was legislated. This is why they  
memorized these words in a way distinguished from the other prophetic topics and  
words. They were highly admired by these ethics and principals. For the believing  
Muslims, these principals formed the radical solution of the issue of invasion and  
.murder suffered in the pre-Islamic era

These instructions, formed in a highly eloquent divine and prophetic style, had a great  
influence on regulations of respecting personal character, estate and opinion after  
the

Prophet's decease. Without these instructions, the Muslims' society would have been  
engaged in a situation extremely worse than what had actually occurred. In the same  
manner, the Jahilite regulations, regarding association with humanity, would have  
.floated to the surface anew

It is noticeable that the Prophet's immaculate household were preceding people in  
the

field of regarding humans and their legal freedom. Ali (peace be upon him) was the  
only ruler after the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family), who did not use the

emergency or the martial laws or any exceptional law, even with his rivals and those who abstained from declaring fealty to his leadership. Moreover, although Ali was engaged in three wars that covered the entire period of his ruling, he did not resort to violence or any exceptional policy.

On the other hand, Abu Bakr and Omar reverted to means of power and surmounting against Ansar in Saqifa of Bani Saida. They were about to kill Sa'd Bin Abada. Later on, they attacked the group who refrained from swearing allegiance to their leadership.

p: ۱۳۱

Those people were gathering in the Prophet's house for providing their consolation to the Prophet's family. Furthermore, the Prophet's funeral had not been put in the grave

yet, when the band threatened them setting the house on fire if they insist on confining

themselves there, and evade swearing fealty to the new leadership. When the group were late in going out and leaving the house, that band encompassed the house with ...firewood and set the door on fire

The sixth principal of this base, which is the principal of maintaining properties and souls of those who speak out the creed of Islam; 'There is no god but Allah', was related in this form: "I am given the orders of fighting people to say 'There is no god but Allah.' If they speak it out, they will protect their souls and estate against me

except

in lawful states. God then will be the Judge.” Ali Bin Ibrahim Al-Qummi relates this

.form

:As a matter of fact, this principal is of three dimensions

First all, he whoever speaks out the creeds of Islam, apart from his religion or national

belongness, is reckoned with Muslims whose souls, estate and honor is kept in

sacredness. In case regulations of being the despotic party, an evil in the land, a

murderer, an apostate, a fornicator or the like are applicable to that person, his soul

will

.be lawfully violated

Second, Jews and Christians are exempted from this rule. They enjoy private

.regulations in case of peace or war

Third, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) informed his people that he had

p: ۱۳۲

restricted himself to the divine orders of jihad –struggling for the Lord’s sake–. His

mission from this jihad was completing the revelation of the Quran and materializing

the declaration of the two creeds of Islam. In other words, his mission was forming

the

general appearance of this nation. He was not given the orders of fighting the deviate

or

those who mislead the Muslims, since this sort of fighting is reckoned with jihad for

.interpreting the Quran. This sort of jihad came after the Prophet's decease  
The seventh principal is sealing prophesy with the Prophet (peace be upon him and his  
family), and sealing the nations with his nation. The following wording of the Prophet  
has been previously forecited during providing the narration of Majmauzzawaid. It is  
.his saying, "There shall be no prophet after me, and there shall be no nation after you  
Beware of your duty to Allah, and perform the five prayers, and fast on that month,  
and  
defray the poor rate, and comply with your leaders and you shall be taken to the  
".Paradise of your Lord

It is the principal of the prevalence of Mohammed's doctrine over doctrines of the  
previous prophets. It also refutes the misclaims of prophesy a part of which emerged  
.during his reign while others came forth thereafter  
Furthermore, this principal grants the Islamic nation the honor of sealing the  
'prophets  
nations. It confines it with the responsibility of guiding the other nations. The Prophet  
peace be upon him and his family) outlined the general strings of worshipping the)

p: ۱۳۳

Lord, performing the prayers, fasting and complying with the leaders. It is not unlikely  
that the reporter related only the paragraphs he could memorize, and that he missed  
the

.Prophet's reference to others, such as the poor rate and the ritual pilgrimage

The most distinguishable point in this principal is that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) refers to complying with the rulers. When God mandates compliance with a person without citing conditions, this shall mean that this person is sinless that he does not wrong any, and does not say but the truth. Since this prophetic instruction is empty of any conditions and qualifications, it is most surely that he refers to the twelve imams whom are divinely nominated, and prophetically predicted

The eighth principal; principal of the Prophet's being the witness on his people in the Hereafter and their joining him on the Divine Pool, is mentioned in various narrations. Some mention the form of, "I will precede you to the Divine Pool, and I will take pride in you before the other nations. Blacken not my face." In other narrations, the following

form is recorded: "I will take pride in you among the other nations. After me, do not fight each other

This is a unique prophetic style persisting that people shall join their Prophet before their Lord, and each shall be in need of a drink from the Kawthar Pool. That drink will save him against any further thirst and make his body fit to enter the Paradise

p: ۱۳۴

This instruction is similar to a father's saying to his sons, "O sons! Fulfill my will. I am leaving you. You shall join me when I will be having a great fortune. You will be living

,in a poverty. I will surely realize the persons among you who will keep my will, and

”similarly, I will realize the dissidents

The ninth principal; principal of necessity of accuracy in acting, and admonishing against committing the insignificant actions that lead to deviation, attracts attentions to

a remarkable rule in individual and social behaviors. It is the rule that deviation begins with an insignificant deed or a group of simple deeds seen as meaningless and

unimportant. These deeds shall lead to others, till they lead to the abyss of the mundane

.or the supernal devastation

.This matter is practicable in individual and collective situations

A Muslim may permit himself to gaze at a foreign lady he liked, and gives himself the

,license to exchange conversation with her, and to participate her in some acts, and

.finally, this will lead him to perpetrate the obscenity

A man may permit himself to befriend a bad man. He neglects the sounds of his religious consciousness and the advise of his associates. This will lead him to sink in the

.ocean of wronging people and deviation and corruption

A nation may overlook assails of their enemies in states of political, economic or cultural power. This concern will lead the enemies to predominate and prevail this

.nation

A society may overlook an aspect of corruption that first occurs in a certain point or

p: ١٣٥

.among a certain group

A society may overlook a law dictatorially issued by the ruler or his men. This will lead

.to a comprehensive injustice that drives the society towards putrescence

The insignificant sins are those tiny situations and behaviors forming the invisible seeds

of the giant trees of evil on individual and social levels. Consequently, reference books

.Muslims insist on referring to this affair

:Al-Kafi; ٢/٢٨٨

:(Imam Jafar As-Sadiq (peace be upon him

The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) resided in waste land. He asked his

companions to fetch firewood. They apologized that the land had been barren. “Try

to find as much as possible,” ordered the Prophet. They fetched a good quantity and

provided the sum before him. As he saw the view, the Prophet (peace be upon him

and his family) commented, “This is the way how sins gather. Beware of the

insignificant sins. Everything has an observer. The observer of these sins records

whatever they acted and their deeds, and everything is registered in a clear

”.recording

:Al-Baiheqi’s As-Sunan; ١٠/١٨٨

Abdullah Bin Masud: The Prophet (peace be upon him) stated, “Beware of the insignificant sins. They accumulate against a man till they cause him to perish. Their like is a people who resided in a barren land. Each could fetch a small single wood till they gathered a considerable quantity sufficient for making fire and cooking their  
”.food

The previous prophetic sayings deal with the quantitative accumulation of the insignificant ill deeds and sins. They show how these deeds change into a great danger  
p: ١٣٦

.against the lives of individuals and societies

The following prophetic sayings deal with the qualitative accumulation of the insignificant sins in the core and personality of the individuals and societies

:Al-Kafi; ٢/٢٨٧

Imam Jafar As-Sadiq stated: “Beware of the insignificant sins. They are unforgivable.” “What are the insignificant sins?” I asked. Imam explained, “A man  
”.commits a sin and wishes if he had not committed others

:Ibn Madga’s As-Sunan; ٢/١٤١٧

Aisha: The Prophet (peace be upon him) addressed at me, “O Aisha! Beware of the  
”.insignificant sins. They have an interrogator from the Lord’s side  
.It is also recorded in Ad-Darimi’s; ٢/٣٠٣, and Ahmed’s; ٦/٧٠ and ١٥١

One of the remarkable bases, inferred from this prophetic instruction, is that the Satan

,when despairs of controlling a nation through misguiding them in the grand issues takes the road of ruining and deviating through the insignificant deeds. This is the Prophet's saying, "The Satan despaired of being obeyed on this land. But he will be obeyed in some sins you deem insignificant. He will be pleased by them." This saying is recorded in Ibn Madga's As-Sunan; ٢/١٠١٥

The Satan despaired of demolishing the fortified castle and the handsome structure of

Islam erected by the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family); therefore, he went towards prevailing on the individuals to drag a single brick of that building incessantly. This process resulted in dragging the entire constituents of that great structure

Another outstanding matter, deduced from Ali Bin Ibrahim's narration, is that obeying the Satan in the insignificant sins is reckoned as an adoration to him. This means that p: ١٣٧

those who commence aberration in a society are serving the Satan, not the Lord. As a result, they carry the advocacy to changing from serving the Lord into serving the Satan. This is the Prophet's saying, "But he is pleased to be obeyed through your insignificant deeds. If the Satan is obeyed, he is then served

The Prophet's declaring that the Satan is pleased to be obeyed through the insignificant

sins is an information telling the Satan's satisfaction for the success progressed in his project of deviating people and destructing their castles. This accords the exegesis of God's saying, (And certainly the Satan found true his conjecture concerning them, so

(.they follow him, except a party of the believers

The Prophet's household regarded people's struggle on power after the Prophet's

.decease as the most menacing insignificant sin

:Biharul Anwar; ۲۸/۲۱۷

Imam Al-Baqir (peace be upon him), through explaining God's saying, (Corruption

has appeared in the land and the sea on account of what the hands of men have

wrought,) said, "By God, that commenced when Ansar suggested to elect a leader

".from them, and the Quraishis elect another from them

The tenth principal; principal of warning against forging lies against the Prophet, and

insisting on investigating whatever is imputed to him, is referred to through the two

forecited narrations of Ahmed. In the Sunni and Shiite reference books of hadith, this

question is mentioned importunately, that means the existence of a serious trouble

during the Prophet's lifetime. The Prophet insists that this problem shall find a larger

p: ۱۳۸

.scope after his final departure. The number of fabricators shall increase after him

A deep look in this problem leads to an abhorrent feeling towards such fabricators

since

their satanic action defames and deforms Islam, and precludes the next generations from receiving its genuineness. A more serious matter is the fact that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) was not given the orders of unmasking and punishing such fabricators for their past or coming forgery. As an acceptable treatment of this problem, the procedure of warning them against forging lies, and warning people against receiving such falsification, was taken.

It is evident that such a procedure affects only in a quantitative reduction of the problem. Hence, the Prophet's recognition of the problem existence, and prediction of its continuity and increase are evidences on the fact that he constitutes a sufficient treatment for the problem, by means of divine instructions.

This treatment was the obligation of presenting every text ascribed to him, before the two weighty things he left in his nation and ordered of adhering to; the Book of Allah and his household. Any text that contradicts the Book of Allah must be decided as worthless, since the Prophet does never belie the Quran. Correspondingly, every text that contradicts whatever is asserted by his progeny, who are being incessantly with Quran, is worthless, too. The Prophet's household are being perpetually with the Quran, since they are the heirs of the Prophet and the explicators of his knowledge.

,Through various paragraphs of the Prophet's sermons of the Farewell Pilgrimage

p: ۱۳۹

principals of this base are mentioned. Previously, we have referred to fulfillment of trusts and laws of heritage, blood money and pilgrimage. At any rate, there are other laws in the prophetic sermons involved

In spite of the countering factors, the main element in the materialization of the cultural

unity of the Islamic nation, disregarding racial and national difference, was the unity of

their creed and legislation. It is an undeniable fact that Islam could achieve a unity of conceptions and behavior among people in a form unattainable for the entire states and civilizations

#### **THE FOURTH BASE**

PRINCIPALS OF THE POLITICAL AFFAIRS, AND

THE NEXT LEADERSHIP

.Principal of the prediction of the coming of twelve imams of the Prophet's progeny –

Principal of the importunate adherence to the Quran and the Prophet's progeny; the –  
.two weighty things

Principal of nominating Ali as the next leader of this nation, and the first of the twelve –  
.imams



and, presumably, the others. This fact is forecited through Ali Bin Ibrahim's narration  
Comprehensively, the Sunni reference books of hadith record the Prophet's assertion  
on  
adherence to the two weighty things; the Quran and the Prophet's progeny, during  
sermon of Ghadir only. They decide the authenticity of the reports relate this affair.  
-At

Tabari compiled a two-volumed book in this regard. He refers to the various series of  
.narrators and ways of documentation of the sermon involved  
;Regarding the other sermons of the Farewell Pilgrimage, At-Tirmithi, in his As-Sunan  
:records ,5/328

;Jabir Bin Abdillah: I saw the Prophet (peace be upon him) on the pack of his shecamel  
:Al-Qaswa, on day of Arafa, orate

O people! I am leaving among you what will constantly protect you against“

.deviation if only you adhere to; the Book of Allah and my people; my household

The same is related by Abu Tharr, Abu Sa'eed, Zaid Bin Arqam and Hutheifa Bin)

Useid. The narration is decided as strange and qualified, but with a rather doubtful  
-narrator. Sa'eed Bin Suleiman and many other scholars, however, relate Zaid Bin Al

It is also noticeable that a number of Sunni reference books record the Prophet's will

of

.the Quran only, disregarding his household

:Muslim's; ٤/٤١

I am leaving among you what will protect you against deviation as long as you ...

.commit yourselves to. It is the Book of Allah

The same is recorded in Abu Dawud's; ١/٤٢٧, and Al-Beihaqi's; ٥/٨. Ibn Madga

records a similar thing on page ١٠٢٥ of part ٢. The following form is recorded in

:Majma'uzzawaid; ٣/٢٦٥

O people! I am leaving among you what will perpetually protect you against“ ...

”.deviation if you only adhere to. It is the Book of Allah. Apply its instructions

Through a scrutinizing look at the narratives involved, it is easily understood that

'mentioning the Prophet's household is deleted in such reports due to the narrators

oblivion or the firm supervision the Quraishis imposed upon the prophetic texts. This is

evidenced by the fact that the same reference books relate the same text completely

in

.other positions. As a rule, the imperfect should be compared to the perfect

Muslim, Al-Beihaqi, Ibn Madga and Al-Heithami record various narratives regarding

the Prophet's repetitive importunate recommendation of adhering to the Quran and

his

.progeny together

:Muslim's Sahih; ٧/١٢٢

-Zaid Bin Arqam: In a place called 'Khum' and situated between Mecca and Al  
:Madina, the Prophet (peace be upon him) addressed at us

...Praised and thanked be Allah“

O people! I am not more than a human. The apostle of my Lord is about to come to  
me, and I will respond. I am leaving among you two weighty things. First is the

p: ١٤٢

Book of Allah that contains the guidance and the illumination. Hold fast on the Book

of Allah and adhere to it. Second is my household. I bind you with the Lord in the

.question of my household. I bind you with the Lord in the question of my household

”.I bind you with the Lord in the question of my household

”?Hussain asked Zaid: “O Zaid! Who are his household? Are his women included

Yes, his women are reckoned with his household,” answered Zaid, “But his“

”.household are exclusively those whom are prohibited from receiving alms

.Who are they?” wondered Hussain“

.They are sons of Ali, Aqeel, Jafar and Abbas,” identified Zaid“

.All those are prohibited from receiving alms?” asked Hussain“

.Yes, they all,” replied Zaid“

.Al-Beihaqi relates the same narration in his As-Sunan; ٧/٣٠ and ١٠/١١٤

:Majma'uzzawaid; ١/١٧٠

:Zaid Bin Thabit: The Prophet (peace be upon him) stated

I am leaving among you two successors; the Book of Allah and my household. They“

”.shall never leave each other till they join me on the Divine Pool

In his Al-Mujamul Kabir, At-Tabarani records this narrative the narrators of which)

(.are trustful

He also records it on page ١٤٢ of part ٩, and commentates that Ahmed records it in an

.acceptable documentation

,Abu Dawud does not refer to a clear narrative respecting the two weighty things. Yet

he writes an independent title given the name of ‘Al-Mahdi’, in his As-Sunan; ٢/٣٠٩, in

which he records hadith of the twelve imams and the Prophet’s prediction of the

coming

p: ١٤٣

of Imam Al-Mahdi and his being from the offspring of Ali and Fatima (peace be upon

them). He also relates the Prophet’s saying, “Even if there will be only a single day

from the age of this earth, God shall send a man from my household, who shall fill in it

”.with justice, as it is filled in with wrong

We provide the following point as an evidence on our claiming the Prophet’s ordering

people, during the Farewell Pilgrimage sermons, of adhering to his household besides

.the Quran

The prophetic statements are the most eloquent and articulate since they enjoy

unique

specifications. One of these specifications is that there are definite structures

dedicated

to definite occasions. This point is common between the Quran and the prophetic texts

The prophetic structure, "...protect you against deviation if only you adhere to..." is dedicated to his instructing his nation to adhere to the Quran and his household. The

Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) had never used this structure in any occasion except the recently concerned

,In the same manner, the structure, 'I am leaving among you the two weighty things' had never been used in a situation other than the concerned

When the Prophet gave his orders of fetching a pen and a paper so that he would record

a document 'protecting them perpetually against deviation,' during his final disease, the

Quraishis perceived that he had intended to commit the Muslims to complying with the

imams of his progeny in a written form. So, they rejected this order very frankly and

p: ۱۴۴

.insolently

In six positions of his Sahih, Al-Bukhari refers to this incident. The other reference books of hadith report Omar's taking pride in playing the greatest role in the process of

.depriving the Prophet of recording his will

At any rate, we aim only for attracting attentions to the fact that isolating the Prophet's household from the Book of Allah, during reporting some narratives respecting sermons of the Farewell Pilgrimage, violates the prophetic style and his unequaled expression during referring to his instruction of adhering to the two; the Book of Allah and his household, together. At-Tirmithi, moreover, relates the two together

In abstract, none can deny the authentic truth that the Prophet predicted the coming of the twelve imams, and instructed people to adhere to the two weighty things and considered his immaculate household; Ali, Fatima, Al-Hassan and Al-Hussein, as equal to the Quran in the field of the obligation of complying with them. All these matters were asserted through the prophetic sermons of the Farewell Pilgrimage. These fact may be denied only by those who intend to be fanatic to the Quraishis in the face of the Exalted Lord and His Apostle (peace be upon him and his family

The third principal of this base, which is the declaration of Ali's being the next religious and political leader, is evident through hadith of Ghadir. We lack enough scope to refer to the numerous documentations and texts concerning this topic. A great deal of reference books of theology and hadith, beginning with At-Tabari's Al-Wilaya and

.ending with Allama Al-Amini's Al-Ghadir, discuss this topic thoroughly

The fourth principal of this base; principal of keeping on performing the obligatory rites

and compliance with the leaders, has been discussed during mentioning paragraphs of

the second base. Al-Fakhr Ar-Razi, as well as many others, admits that God shall never

,instruct us to comply with other than sinless people without specifying conditions otherwise, this shall be an instruction of a disobedience. This admission comes through

discussing God's saying, (O ye who believe! Obey Allah and obey the Apostle and those in authority from among you.) Hence, men in authority intended in the Holy Verse, must be sinless. Similarly, the intended in the Prophet's sermon of the Farewell Pilgrimage, as well as other occasions, must be sinless

The fifth principal is immortalizing the treaty of Quraish and Kenana on blockading the Hashemites. This is recorded in Al-Bukhari's; ٥/٩٢

Abu Huraira: The Prophet (peace be upon him) stated, "God willing, we shall reside ".in Al-Kheif, the place where they concluded the treaty of atheism and swore it

On pages ٢٤٦ and ١٩٤ of parts ٤ and ٨, Al-Bukhari records narratives concerning the same matter. On page ١٥٨ of part ٢, he records a narrative with a more evident point

Abu Huraira: On the Nahr day, the Prophet (peace be upon him) was in Mina when

he stated, “Tomorrow, we shall reside in Al-Kheif of Bani Kenana, where they concluded the treaty of atheism and swore it.” He meant Al-Muhassab. The -Quraishis and Kenana concluded a treaty against the Hashemites, sons of Abdul

p: ١٤٤

Muttelib and sons of Al-Muttelib. They agreed upon abstaining from giving in marriage or marrying any individual belonging to these houses, and abstaining from .(selling them anything unless they give up the Prophet (peace be upon him

.The same is recorded in Muslim’s Sahih; ٤/٨٤, Ahmed’s; ٢/٣٢٢, ٢٣٧, ٢٤٣, ٣٥٣ and ٥٤٠.

It is also recorded in Al-Beihaqi’s As-Sunan; ٥/١٤٠, in another form, in which he commentates, “This report is recorded in Al-Bukhari’s and Muslim’s who relate it to

”Al-Awzai

Muslim does relate it to Al-Awzai, while Al-Bukhari relates it to Abu Huraira. It seems that Al-Beihaqi errs in this point, or the report is not found in the copy of Al-Bukhari’s

.Sahih we depend upon

:In any event, the following addition exists in Muslim’s report related to Al-Awzai

They should not give marriage or marry any individual of these houses, and no deal“...

should be concluded between the two parties till they give up the Prophet (peace be

”.(upon him

Furthermore, in the two forms of the report, there is a difference in the place of the

(Prophet’s residence. Al-Bukhari mentions that the Prophet (peace be upon him

declared so while he was in Mina, after performing the rites of Arafat. At-Tabarani mentions that it occurred in Mecca, before the commencement of the pilgrimage rites. This is more acceptable, since it accounts for the Prophet's concern in the subject and his caring for concentrating it in the Muslim's mentalities. Moreover, the Prophet had resided in that place and passed the night before performing rites of Arafat there when

p: ١٤٧

.he was in his way to that mountain

.This matter has been previously mentioned during discussing Ad-Darimi's narration

.All the Tashriq days, the Prophet (peace be upon him) resided in that place

:Majma'uzzawaid; ٣/٢٥٠

Ibn Abbas: A day before Tarwiya day, the Prophet (peace be upon him) stated, "God

willing, we shall reside in Al-Kheif, the place where the atheists concluded their

".treaty and swore it

In his Al-Mujamul Kabir and Al-Mujamul Awsat, At-Tabarani relates this narrative)

(.to trustful narrators

The most remarkable point in this discussion is the Prophet's purpose beyond reminding

the Quraishis and Muslims generally, of a great incident took place in that place

fourteen years ago. The Quraishis aimed at burying that incident, and make people

'forget it. Allah; the Exalted, and His Apostle intend to eternalize it in the Muslims

mentalities and history. The entire incident brings humiliation to the Quraishis, and elevates proudly, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) and the Hashemites. It

is a sketch showing the ceaseless efforts of the pharaonic Quraishi masters who could achieve unanimity of the clans, and convince tribes of Kenana, who were lodging near the Holy Precinct, to put the Hashemite under a complete blockade. This blockade lasted for long years. They practiced a comprehensive economic and social blockade against the Hashemites for coercing them on giving Mohammed up, so that they would .be able to kill him, or making him retreat from his divine mission

Those pharaonic masters felt in sublime cheer for their achieving the great success of p: ١٤٨

congregating clans of Quraish and Kenana for that satanic purpose. Their conference was held in Al-Muhassab in Al-Kheif of Bani Kenana where they swore, by Lat and Uzza, keeping on achieving their purpose. The document they wrote was signed by .eighty chiefs and celebrities. The next day, they went on applying its paragraphs Hence, that blockade lasted for four years, and ended few days before the Prophet's .immigration

The Hashemites, including the unbelieving, combined with the Prophet (peace be upon

him and his family) and tolerated years of blockade, poverty, hurt and insult. That occurred in col of Abu Talib. Till God relieved their suffering by a miracle, none of the

.Muslims participated with them

'The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) aimed at opening the new Muslims minds on the history of their religion and prices of the divine revelation, in order that they may appreciate the value. Besides, he wanted them to pay attention to the core of

Islam and the core of atheism, so that they may recognize each. Another purpose is that

the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) aimed at sending a practical message to

the rest of the pharaonic masters of Quraish, who were still alive, to inform them that they shouldered the offense of that atheism and shame. Nevertheless, they committed

greater sins afterwards. They did not change their situation till the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) gathered them under swords of the Hashemites and Ansar on

day of conquest of Mecca. Only then, they evaded being killed by declaring their

p: ۱۴۹

embracing Islam. Thereafter, they planned for prevailing the heritage of the Islamic

.state that had been constructed by Allah and His Apostle, against their desires

Death and sword of Ali Bin Abi Talib were the Lord's means of killing a few number of

the masters of that satanic treaty of Al-Kheif conference. A considerable number of them; such as Suheil Bin Amr, Abu Sufian, Ikrima Bin Abi Jahl, Safwan Bin Umayya Bin Khalaf, Hakeem Bin Hizam, Suheib Bin Sinan, Abul-Awar As-Selemi and others were still alive. They accompanied the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) in the Farewell Pilgrimage. They were listening to his statements and could remember their near past. They were admired by his pardoning them and stopping at submitting them to his full evidences

, Their extrinsic and hidden behavior, induction, the Prophet's household's testimony course of history; all these things proved their delight for the Prophet's declaring his imminent final departure. They were preparing for a new method of blockading the Hashemites in the next stage

Hence, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) purposed for reminding them of their old plan, and how the Lord foiled it, and He would foil the coming ones

The seventh principal of this base, which is warning the Quraishis against playing the tyrant after departure of the Prophet, is recorded in our reference books of hadith.

The forecited narration recorded in Al-Heithami's Majma'uzzawaid and related to Fahd Bin

Albahiri who listened to the sermon of Arafah Day and related the Prophet's saying, "O

the Quraishis! Do not shoulder the mundane affairs, while people shoulder the

.Hereafter. I will not avail you in the least before God,” asserts this principal

Thanks God, Fahd was a Bedouin. Had he been from Quraish or Kenana, he would have

!substituted the Hashemites for the Quraishis

The Quraishi narrators were wont to remove every statement that might injure or censure the Quraishis. Therefore, the Sunnis’ reference books of hadith, are full of such

authentic’ reports regarding the Prophet’s blaming and censuring the Hashemites’ and

sons of Abdul-Muttelib. In like manner, we could see tens of narratives dealing with the

Prophet’s praising the Quraishis and ordering of selecting the leadership from them. No

single prophetic saying concerning blaming or criticizing the Quraishis was saved from distortion into a prophetic blame addressed at the Hashemites, or repealing it by

.inventing another saying, or changing it into a prophetic praise for the Quraishis

Son of Albahiri’s narrative respecting the Prophet’s forewarning the Quraishis during sermon of the Farewell Pilgrimage, comes in its proper time and place. The Quraishis

occupied a distinctive location among the Arabs. They were the leading of people the Arab Peninsula during and after the Prophet’s lifetime. Consequently, any danger that

might face the Prophet’s household would certainly be originated by the Quraishis. As

well, any movement of averting Islam, and any wrongdoing Muslims may suffer would

certainly be originated by the Quraishis. Other people would always be following them

The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) is not more than a bearer of the Lord's

p: ١٥١

message, and a materializer of His claim on people. His mission is warning and admonishing so that he who would perish might perish by clear proof, and he who would live might live by clear proof

The eighth principal of this base; warning the Prophet's companions against breaking faith and struggling on the power, is recorded in the reference books of hadiths of the two sects directly and indirectly

The indirect way of relating this principal is the Prophet's saying, "After me, return not to deviation by beheading each other

In his As-Sunan; ٢/١٣٠٠, Ibn Madga dedicates an independent chapter to the prophetic sayings regarding this topic. He titles it, 'After Me, Return Not To Deviation By Beheading Each Other.' He records the Prophet's sayings, "Woe is you! After me return not to atheism by beheading each other," and "Kill not each other after me," and the like

This foreordains that this process would be falling after him. As a matter, the Prophet  
peace be upon him and his family) frankly foretold them of their struggle after him.)

He

used the maximum degree of his eloquence, as well as sympathy, and applied the  
entire

styles of forewarning and admonition for materializing the Lord's evidence on them;

so

that they will not provide their unfamiliarity of the topic when they shall be submitted

.before the Lord

Those forewarned and admonished people were none other than his companions.

They

.were not the Jews, or the other Arab tribes, or chiefs of Quraish exclusively

.The Islamic state prevailed and affected its centering all over the Arab Peninsula

p: ۱۵۲

Hence, the Prophet's anticipation of struggle for power was not addressed at the

tribes

that were, coercively or voluntarily, submitted to Islam, such as the Hawazin and the

.Ghatafan, since these tribes had nothing to do with the leadership of the Islamic state

Supposing they did, they would not obtain any unless the Prophet's companions

.permitted

Regarding the Jews, they were defeated, and a part of them was banished out of the

Arab Peninsula. They had no considerable military power at that period. Despite the

firmness and effectiveness of their trickeries, they would not thrive unless they  
passed

.by the Prophet's companions

Chiefs of Quraish lacked the dare to demand with a position of leadership in the  
Islamic

states although they had the predominance upon majority of Quraishi tribes, as well  
as

'two thousand warriors. That was because of their being the Prophet's 'released  
individuals whose souls had already been in the hand of the Prophet. This meant that  
the

.Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) had had the right to kill or enslave them

Hence, he opted for the second when he released them afterward. They would have  
no

hope to hold a position of leadership unless that small number of the Quraishi  
Muhajirs

.permitted so

This proves that the Prophet's forewarning against struggling for the power after him,  
is

.restricted to his companions, Muhajirs, and Ansar exclusively

Here comes the role of the direct forewarning which lacks the personal names only. It  
came in the form of a portrait from the unseen world. It provided the end result of  
those

.deviating and deviate companions

This portrait was the Lord's, Who committed Gabriel the angel, to carry it to the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). It showed the coming day on which the Lord shall choose Mohammed (peace be upon him and his family) for chiefship of the grand assemblage. Gabriel shall hand him the pennon of Hamd. The Prophet shall deliver that pennon to Ali Bin Abi Talib, since this man is the bearer of the Prophet's pennon in this world and the Hereafter. The entire assemblage will be under the leadership of Mohammed in whom Adam will take pride. He will be called 'Abu -father  
'of- Mohammed

The Lord shall give Mohammed exclusively the right of intercession and the Divine Pool of Kawthar. Then, delegations of the entire nations will approach him for seeking .intercession. He will intercede and grant the card of drinking from that Divine Pool That water will change their physiological structure so that they will be fit to abide in .the Paradise forever

When it will be his companions' role, a surprise will occur. The Lord's order of disallowing the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) to intercede for those individuals and grant them the card of drinking from that Pool will come. Then, the .angels of anguish will be ordered of taking them to the hell-fire  
This is the morrow of those companions, communicated by the ever most true-  
tongued

.individual on this earth

It is indeed a terrible scene. Gabriel; the Chaste, carried it to the Prophet, so that he

p: ١٥٤

.would inform his people,during the Farewell Pilgrimage, of its destined occurrence

It is the gravest catastrophe to the companions of the greatest prophet. The reason

beyond this is certainly their causing the Prophet's nation falling in the greatest

.catastrophe in the morrow

Excepting the like of scattered animals of a cattle, none of those companions will  
escape. This picture is recorded in the most authentic narratives of the most adoring  
to

those companions. It is an extraordinary expression. Those scattered animals are  
those

.escaping the cattle

,This means that the entire group of the Prophet's companions shall be in the hell-fire

.and only few shall escape

Moreover, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) explained that the  
companions, who should be in the hell-fire, are of two groups. This indicates that  
there

.are two lines taken by two parties of the companions

This is proved through the forecited report recorded by Al-Hakim, who decides it as  
authentic on the criterion depended by the two Sheiks –Muslim and Al-Bukhari-. In

this

report, he records, "Another group shall be occluded, too. None shall escape but a few  
".groups like the scattered animals in a cattle

It is a distressing question, indeed. It is hardly acceptable and credible, especially for  
;the Muslims who are brought up on cherishing the entire companions of the Prophet  
the best century, the unique generation, the statement of "My companions' like are  
the

stars, you will be guided if you follow any," and the splendid representations and  
examples of those companions. It will be a great shock for such a Muslim if he is faced

p: ۱۵۵

.by that horrible satanic picture of those companions

Had it been any person other than the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family)  
who

uttered these words, they would have reckoned him with the enemies of Islam, who  
aim

.at ruining this religion by means of maligning the Prophet's companions

It is most surely the Prophet himself who uttered these words. His words, as an  
undeniable reality, are not produced due to his personal caprice and not spoken out of  
desire. Nevertheless, the Quraishis claim the Prophet's speaking in states of  
satisfaction

.and rage. And his words in states of rage are not decided as evidences

As a matter of fact, the Prophet's words involved, are a revelation of the Lord of the  
!!worlds

.This truth is grievous. However, it is not necessary for truths to be always delightful

.Similarly, the right is not always designed as we like or inherit

How can we behave before the fact that the prophetic texts regarding the  
companions

,whom shall be deposed, rejected and precluded from having from that Divine Pool

!occupy numerous situations in the most authentic Sunni reference books of hadith

Furthermore, they occupy more numerous situations in the other reference books of

hadith. All these say that none of those companions shall escape except a few like the

.scattered animals of a cattle

According to the Arabic-Arabic dictionary compiled by Al-Jawhari, the Prophet's

.wording refers to the animals of a cattle that lost their supervisor

At any rate, the most remarkable point in this discussion is recognizing the reason

p: ١٥٦

.beyond the Prophet's submitting that topic during the Farewell Pilgrimage

Primarily, the reason is that the Exalted Lord had given him the orders of submitting  
this topic in that very time. The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) does never

speak out of desire, and lacks awareness of his companions' next deeds and their

.coming judgment on the Resurrection Day unless he is informed by the Lord

The following questions can be provided here. What did those companions commit after

the Prophet's decease? Did they return to atheism? Or did they apostatize, as the prophetic text describes? Did they misrepresent this religion? Did they kill each other for power

A simple answer for all these questions can be said here. You should admit what your Prophet said, and keep peace, and evade being Rafidite -rejecter and protester

Another question is cited. What for did the Lord opt for this style in forewarning? What for did He not extinguish those individuals, who will deviate thereafter, or give His Prophet the order of killing them, or scandal them before the entire Muslims so that they would be avoided

The answer is that this is being the Lord's policy in materializing the claim thoroughly on His slaves, and leaving them to their free deeds, so that he who would perish might perish be clear proof, and he who would live might live by clear proof. God, at length is not to be asked for an explanation for His deeds, while people shall be asked for theirs. The Exalted Lord is the Owner of His servants, and He enjoys the full freedom to

p: ١٥٧

interrogate them. The Elevated Lord does not make errors; therefore, He is not submitted to inquiry. He; the Praised, is the most Knowledgeable. The non-most

.knowledgeable is not applied to inquire or impeach the most knowledgeable

Another question is cited here. What were the consequences of that prophetic forewarning? Did Muslims, as well as the companions, hurry up towards the Prophet asking for showing the straight path? Did they ask him to nominate a man they would follow thereafter, so that those dangerous companions would not lead them astray? The answer is that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) did nominate the two

weighty things for people to follow. He named the Book of Allah and his household. He also foretold of the coming of twelve godly imams

Before and after the Farewell Pilgrimage, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) defined his household several times. He named them; Ali, Fatima, Al-Hassan (and Al-Hussein (peace be upon them

Reports of the most authentic reference books of hadith declare that the Prophet did identify them materially when he covered them with a Yemeni cloak, and declared "Those are my people; my household"

Sufficed not by these procedures and declaration, the Prophet (peace be upon him and

his family) caused the Muslims to halt under the harsh heat of sun in Al-Juhafa in Ghadir Khum, and took Ali from the arm to announce his being the next religious and political leader. He then installed a tent for him, so that the entire Muslims would greet

him confessing his being the prince of the believers, and congratulate him on his being nominated, by the Lord, as the next leader. They all congratulated and acclaim him.

The

Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) then ordered his women to congratulate Ali

for gaining that position. They approached the tent and offered congratulations. They

.admitted their loyalty to Ali's chiefship of the nation

In his final disease, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) aimed at attesting

that evidence on his nation in a written form. He asked the retinue to fetch him a pen

and a paper so that he would record a document protects them against deviation

perpetually. Unfortunately, they rejected unrelentingly. They said to him, "Well

Thanks, Apostle. We decided to deviate after you. This decision is taken while we are

enjoying full awareness, intention and option. We do not want you to record a document

that we should comply with Ali, Hassan, Hussein and nine individuals from Hussein's

offspring; their progeny. Hence, shamelessly, they said, "Fetch not any pen or paper

How can the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) provide a more consistent

?evidence

**THE FIFTH BASE**

PUNITION OF THE DISSIDENTS OF THE PROPHET'S

INSTRUCTION OF ADHERING TO HIS HOUSEHOLD

This punishment shall befall in the Hereafter. It fits the Prophet's responsibility of conveying and witnessing his nation's acts. The expression of this punishment is firm and unbending. It came in the form of a divine decision of cursing and condemning the dissidents of the Prophet regarding his instruction of revering his household. It indicated

p: ١٥٩

that the repentance of such individuals shall never be admitted, and they shall be .deserving the eternal torment in the hell-fire

Its being the last paragraph in the Prophet's sermon might give it another dimension .referring to its firmness and decisiveness

In the report recorded in Tuhaful Uqoul; the Shiite reference book, this paragraph is cited. A good deal of Sunni reference books of hadith refer to this topic. They assert that

.it was mentioned during the Prophet's sermon in the Farewell Pilgrimage

:Ibn Madga's As-Sunan; ٢/٩٠٥

Amr Bin Kharija: The Prophet (peace be upon him) was on the back of his pack :animal, while it was breathing heavily due to the hot weather, when he sermonized

Curse of the Lord, the angels and the entire people be on those who ascribe ...“ themselves to other than their fathers or masters. God be not accept their excuse or ”.compensation

:At-Tirmithi's As-Sunan; ٣/٢٩٣

Abu Umama Al-Bahili: I hear the Prophet (peace be upon him) say, in his sermon addressed during the Farewell Pilgrimage, "Ceaseless curse of the Lord be on those  
".who ascribe themselves to other than their fathers or masters

:Ahmed's Al-Musned; ٤/٢٣٩

Amr Bin Kharija: The Prophet (peace be upon him) was in Mina, riding his pack  
:animal which was breathing heavily due to the hot weather, when he sermonized  
Curse of the Lord, the angels and the entire people be on who ascribe themselves to"  
".other than their fathers or masters, as a desire to neglect them

:Ahmed's Al-Musned; ٤/١٨٧

Curse of the Lord, the angels and the entire people be on those who ascribe ..."

p: ١٤٠

themselves to other than their fathers or masters. God be not accept his excuse or  
".compensation

Ahmed relates the same meaning in different reports and records them in the same  
.previous page book and the preceding ones. He also records it on pages ٢٣٨ and ١٨٤

;For Ad-Darimi, he records it in his As-Sunan; ٢/٢٤٤ and ٣٤٤. In Majma'uzzawaid

the narration is related to Abu Masud. Al-Bukhari records the reports in his ,٥/١٤

.Sahih; ٢/٢٢١ and ٤/٤٧

The reader may wonder the relationship between such a prophetic statement and the  
Prophet's instruction of adhering to his household. The forecited paragraphs

emphasize

that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) cursed those who ascribe themselves to other than their fathers, and the slaves who deny their loyalty to those who manumit them and ascribe it to another master

As an answer of this wonderment, we have to cite that as a jurisprudential ruling, it is that if a son disavows his father and claims another man's filiation, then he regrets and returns to his real father, his repentance is admissible. In like manner, if a slave leaves his master and claims of his slavery to another man, but he repents and returns to his master after a while, his repentance is jurisprudentially acceptable

These jurisprudential rulings contradict the Prophet's asserting that the divine curse, in its harshest form, is ceaselessly poured on those who ascribe themselves to other than their fathers or masters

Such a divine punishment is admitted in cases of serious excess, such as apostasy and the

p: ١٤١

like. It is unfit to issue such a judgment against an ignorant son or slave who disavow their father or master

Moreover, some reports refer that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) ruled

the atheism and apostasy of such individuals. This reports are recorded in Al-Beihaqi's

As-Sunan; ٨/٢٤, Majma'uzzawaid; ١/٩٧, Kenzul Ummal; ٥/٨٧٢ and many others. As

,an example we cite that the following report is recorded in Kenzul Ummal; ١٠/٣٢٤, ٣٢٤

:and ١٤/٢٥٥ respectively ٣٢٧

”He whoever disavows his masters is ripping the bind of Islam out of his neck“

”He should find himself a place in the hell-fire that whoever disavows his masters“

”He is an atheist that whoever disavows his masters“

He is decided as a disbeliever of what the Lord has revealed to his Apostle, that“

”.whoever disavows his masters

The recent authentic prophetic sayings support the fact that such decisive rulings do

in

no means relate those who disavow their fathers or masters, unless fathers and

masters

.intended in such sayings are not the proper ones

This meaning is also supported by the forecited reports and many others, in which the

Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) does not refer to fathers and sons at all,

but

he stops at mentioning masters and their servants. Naturally, a son's disavowal of his

father is more serious than a slave's disavowal of his master. Nevertheless, such

reports

.informed of a more serious punishment

In addition, this meaning is supported by the fact that this ruling, in a good number of

p: ١٤٢

reports communicating the Prophet's sermons during the Farewell Pilgrimage, is mentioned directly after referring to the dedicate competency given exclusively to the Prophet's household and progeny. This is the one-fifth rate. The Prophet's progeny are

.prohibited from receiving the alms and the poor rate

:Ahmed's Al-Musned; ٤/١٨٩

:The Prophet (peace be upon him) was on his pack animal when he sermonized

Alms is not allowed for my household and me. Any sum of alms even if it was as

much as this." Meanwhile, the Prophet (peace be upon him) took a single hair from

the back of his pack animal, and went on: "God curse that whoever ascribes himself

"to other than his father or master

The same is recorded on page ٢٩٣ of part ٥ of Kenzul Ummal. On page ٢٣٥ of part ١٠

:of the same book, the following form is recorded

He should find him a place in the hell-fire that whoever ascribes himself to other ..."

".than his master

In the Shiite reference books of hadith; the Prophet's progeny's reports, this prophetic

wording is frequently and authentically recorded during mentioning the Prophet's

sermons of the Farewell Pilgrimage. Besides, it is a part of the Ghadir sermon

Al-Mufid's Al-Amali: ... Zaid Bin Arqam: I hear the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) say in Ghadir Khum: "Alms is not licit for my household and me God curse those who ascribe themselves to other than their fathers or masters. The .baby is the bed owner's. The prostitute's share is the stones. An heir is not to will

p: ۱۶۳

You have heard and seen me. He must find him a place in the hell-fire that whoever forges lies against me

I will be preceding you to the Divine Pool. I will take pride in you before the other nations on the Resurrection Day. Blacken not my face. I will save men from the ,hellfire

.and others shall be taken from my hands and sent to the hell-fire

.Allah is my Master, and I am the master of each male and female believer

".He whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master

An alike report is recorded on page ۱۸۶ of the same book, and quoted from Bisharetul .Islam

:In his Al-Umda/۳۴۴, Ibnul Bitriq, the Shiite, comments

Reports recorded in the most authentic books of hadith, that regarded the Prophet's saying, "God curse those who ascribe themselves to other than their fathers or masters," do intend the great urge on adhering to Amirul Muminin Ali after the

Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). The clear evidence on this fact is the most authenticated saying of the Prophet: “He whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master”.

As he asserts so, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) adds, “O Allah, Accede to whomever accedes to him, and antagonize whomever antagonizes him” and support whomever supports him, and disappoint whomever disappoints him

These assure the most acceptable matter that Ali is being the master of those whose master was the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). Likewise, Ali is being

p: ۱۶۴

the master of the believers entirely, this is proved by Omar Bin Al-Khattab’s saying to Ali after that prophetic declaration, “Congratulations, Ali! You have become the master of every male and female believer.” Other narratives report Omar’s saying to Ali in the same occasion, “You have become my master, and the master of every male and female believer”.

This position is the Lord’s exclusively. He; the Exalted, gave it to his Apostle Mohammed (peace be upon him and his family) and ordered him of dedicating it to

Ali Amirul Muminin after him. This meaning is supported by God’s saying, (Only Allah is your Master and His Apostle and those who believe, those who keep up

\* (prayers and pay the poor rate while they bow

On that account, the Prophet’s saying, “...those whoever ascribe themselves to other

than their fathers,” stands for those who disavow loyalty to Amirul Muminin Ali Bin  
Abi Talib (peace be upon him). We can refer this to the Prophet’s saying, “O Ali  
You and I are fathers of this nation.” Curse of the Lord be on the disobeyer of his  
father

Reference books of hadith of both sects relate that the forecited saying was a part of  
the

-script hanged to the Prophet’s sword given to Ali in heritage. In his Sahih; 4/67, Al  
Bukhari records this narrative. Similarly, Muslim, in his Sahih; 4/115 and 216, records  
this narrative in various ways of narration. Like many others, At-Tirmithi also records  
it

in his As-Sunan; 3/297. As a matter of fact, they insist on these narratives since they  
p: 165

contained, as they claim, Ali’s confession that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his  
family) had not inherited his household any knowledge except a copy of the Holy  
Quran

and that paper hanged to his sword. The narratives, however, assure the Prophet’s  
.cursing those who disavow their masters

In the Shiite reference books of hadith, we could find a fourth occasion inciting the  
Prophet’s uttering this wording of curse. The Quraishi ‘released’ individuals moved to  
Al-Madina and partook the hypocrites in their efforts against the Prophet’s household  
Once, they uttered, “Regarding his existence among the Hashemites, Mohammed’s

like

is a date-palm tree planted in a junkyard.” When he was informed of this saying, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) ordered Ali to ascend the pulpit and answer them.

:Biharul Anwar; ۳۸/۲۰۴

:(Al-Isbigh Bin Nebata: Ali Bin Abi Talib (peace be upon him ...

Once, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) summoned me and ordered of ascending his pulpit and declaring the following statements: Curse of Allah, and curse of His favored angels and messaged prophets, and my curse be on that whoever

.disavows his father or master, and that whoever wrongs his hireling

-As I did the mission, none commented except Omar Bin Al-Khattab. “O Abul

.Hassan! You have conveyed. But they were unclassifiable words,” said he

I was back to the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) to inform of this

:commentation. The Prophet asked me to convey the following words

O people! We should never communicate words to you unless we have their

p: ۱۶۶

interpretation. It I who is your father. It is I who is your master. It is I who is your

.hireling

A fifth occasion of this wording we found through a narrative recorded in Furat Bin

This is a word-for-word translation of the Verse. The following is the meaning of\*  
:the Verse

Only Allah and His Apostle and the believer who gave alms while he was in the  
.ritual genuflection of a prayer, are your masters

Fatima Bint Al-Hussein: Al-Hussein Bin Ali: When the Prophet (peace be upon ...  
him and his family) was in Al-Madina, some Muhajirs offered him a part of their  
.estate to help in managing any unexpected matters he might counter

For a while, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) nodded his head down  
and, finally, refused their offer saying, "I am not ordered of taking any of your  
".properties

Soon after that, Gabriel; the angel, descended carrying God's saying, (Say: I do not  
(.ask for you any reward for it but love my near relatives

.As the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) conveyed this Verse to them  
Muhajirs went out grumbling at this mandate, and saying to each other that the  
.Prophet had intended only to submit them to sons of Abdul-Muttelib forever

The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) summoned Ali Bin Abi Talib and  
:ordered of ascending his pulpit and addressing at people the following statements

O people! He should seek himself a place in the hell-fire, that whoever wrongs a

hireling in his wage. He should seek himself a place in the hell-fire, that whoever disavows his master. He should seek himself a place in the hell-fire, that whoever .denies his parents

.A man stood up and asked for an interpretation for these words

Ali was back to the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) for conveying that ”,man’s commentation. “Woe is the Quraishis from the interpretation of these words the Prophet repeated thrice. “O Ali!” ordered the Prophet, “Go and tell them that I am the hireling whose commitment is mandated in the heavens. You and I are ”.masters of the believers. You and I are fathers of the believers

#### **FOURTH DISCUSSION**

#### **THE PROPHETS’ NEED FOR PEOPLE’S PROTECTION DURING CONVEYING THEIR MISSIONS**

During their explaining the Verse of Isma; (O Apostle! Deliver what had been revealed to you from your Lord; and if you do it not, then you have not delivered His message, and Allah will protect you from the people; surely Allah will not guide the unbelieving people,) the advocates of the Quraishi caliphate committed two principal :mistakes

First, they misrepresented the actual conception of the prophets’ missions, including .(Mohammed (peace be upon him and his family

.Second, they attempted to conceal the Quraishis’ actuality after conquest of Mecca

They intended to draw the Verse away from these incidents. They also tried to

,persuade the Muslims that the Quraishis; that polytheist clan and center of the devils changed into those pious people who received god-fearing in a period of a single

p: ١٤٨

.night and day, and that they went on leading people to Islam and the right path

### **QURANIC SENSE OF CONVEYANCE**

'The Holy Quran carries a simple meaning of conveyance. It means the messengers explicating the divine mission, and leaving the option for people, and the Lord, not .the prophets, shall be the judge and the remunerator

.A number of principals can be concluded from this deep base

First, a prophet is in great exigency for guaranteeing the right of free expression of opinions, so that he will be able to transmit and convey his Lord's mission to the .servants. This was the prophets' preliminary demand from their nations

Second, the prophets' mission is nothing more than conveyance. Before Abraham ,peace be upon him), jihad was not imposed upon the prophets. God; the Exalted) imposed it upon Abraham and the coming prophets.\* This jihad was purposed for removing the obstacles that impeded the process of conveyance, or facing the atheists' assaults against the believers who opted for the divine religion and .organized their lives according to it

Third, none should be coerced on embracing the religion. It is quite free to choose any course. Hence, law of guidance and deviation ought to be effective, and

.capability of doing good and evil ought to be available

Fourth, the purpose beyond practicing the conveyance of the divine missions is providing the Lord with clear, complete and perfect claims on people, in order that they will not have acceptable excuses when they shall be resurrected for judgment

Hence, providing claims in the divine religions is an original and perpetual pivot in

p: ١٤٩

.the tasks of prophets, whether on level of the atheists or the believers

When a prophet conveys creeds and rulings to people, and explicates clearly their beliefs and duties; he will prompt his Lord's claim. This will perfect the mission and

.release him from any responsibility

Their positive or negative response to that prophet, and their deeds and behavior are

their own concern. A prophet is not responsible in this regard at all. This is God's

.interest

God says: (Say: Then Allah's is the conclusive argument; so if He pleased, He would

(.certainly guide you all

.The entire prophets who came after Abraham are his sons and progeny\*

We are to refer to some evidences on the forecited discussion, quoted from the Holy

.Words of God

Noah; the prophet, says to his people: (I deliver to you the messages of my Lord, and

(.I offer you good advise and I know from Allah what you do not

Shueib; the prophet, says to his people: (So he turned away from them and said: O my people! I delivered to you the messages of my Lord and I gave you good advice; how  
(?shall I then be sorry for an unbelieving people

Hud; the prophet, says to his people: (But if you turn back, then indeed I have delivered to you the message with which I have been sent to you, and my Lord will bring another people in your place, and you cannot do Him any harm; surely my Lord  
(.is the Preserver of all things

p: ١٧٠

God, as He refers to the common point in the prophets' missions, says: (Is then aught  
(?incumbent upon the apostles except a plain delivery of the message  
They said: Our Lord knows that we are most surely messengers to you. And nothing)  
(.devolves on us but a clear deliverance of the message

In fact, concepts and rulings of the divine conveyance are too many to be discussed in this discussion. As they are cited from Quranic and prophetic texts, concepts and rulings of conveyance form a perfect hypothesis. God; the Exalted, describes His religion and Book as a conveyance. He says, (This is a conveyance for people and that they may be warned thereby, and that they may conceive that He is One God and  
(.that those possessed of understanding may mind

The Quran is also described as a conveyance for the coming generations who will receive Islam. God say: (Say: what is the weightiest in testimony? Say: Allah is

witness between you and me; and this Quran has been revealed to me that with it I

(.may warn you and whomsoever it reaches

The Lord praised His prophets for their trust and courage in conveying His messages

in spite of people's resistance and mockery. He says: (Those who deliver the messages of Allah and fear Him, and do not fear any one but Allah; and Allah is

(.sufficient to take account

God; the Praised, reckons the process of receiving and conveying the divine revelation as one of the most serious and critical deeds that require distinctive

p: ۱۷۱

personalities and precise divine guardianship. He says: (The Knower of the unseen

So He does not reveal His secrets to any except to him whom He chooses as an apostle; for surely He makes a guard to march before him and after him so that He

may know that they have truly delivered the messages of their Lord, and He

(.encompasses what is with them, and He records the number of all things

### **MISSION OF OUR PROPHET IN CONVEYANCE**

;The most interesting concern in this regard in the conveyance acted by our Prophet

Mohammed (peace be upon him and his family). God describes his mission and

responsibility by saying: (And obey Allah and obey the Apostle and be cautious; but

if you turn back, then know that only a clear deliverance of the message is incumbent

(.on Our apostle

Say: Obey Allah and obey the Apostle; but if you turn back, then on him rests that) which is imposed on him and on you rests that which is imposed on you; and if you obey him, you are on the right way; and nothing rests on the Apostle but clear (deliverance of the message

so, if they submit then indeed they follow the right way; and if they turn back, then) (upon you is only the delivery of the message, and Allah sees the servants

But if they turn aside, We have not sent you as a watcher over them. On you is only) (to deliver the message

Hence, the Lord sent our Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) on bases of the

p: ١٧٢

divine message formulation and conveyance with which the entire prophets were sent. It is the rule of substantiating the Lord's claim and instituting it upon people and avoiding coercing them to admit it. This is the very meaning of God's saying: (On (you is only to deliver the message

The Prophet said: "I have given the orders of fighting people till they utter 'There is no god but Allah.' As soon as they utter, they will guard their souls and estate against".me

The coercion carried by the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) is compelling

Christians and Jews to live peacefully with the Muslims, not embrace Islam, and

.compelling the paganists and polytheists to enter the general frame of Islam

Whatever else is people's concern, in the limits of this frame. When an individual obeys, another disobeys, another takes the right path and another deviates, this is God's concern, since He is the Judge

On that account, it is naturally that the conveyance of the divine message will be in need for protection, otherwise the Quraishis would assassinate him, defame his advocacy or preclude people from listening to him as soon as possible, because they realized the real size of danger caused by this advocacy on their authority and gods. Despite the fact that the secret, as well as the seen, divine attention to the prophets is of various forms and sorts, the Lord's norm in His apostles is leaving their protection for the natural factors, in addition to that divine attention

p: ١٧٣

As a matter of fact, there is no single proof on the claim of the Lord's guaranteeing His prophet's safety from injuries or assassination, as well as the other sorts of harm he countered in his lifetime

Previously, we have referred to reports respecting the continuity of guarding the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) to the end of his honorable life. It is to add that he asked the Arab clans to guarantee his protection for conveying his Lord's message

:Ibn Husham's As-Sira; ٢/٢٣

Rabia Bin Ebbad: I was a young boy when I accompanied my father in Mina

where the Prophet (peace be upon him) was used to attending in the quarters of the Arab clans, and addressing at them: “I am the messenger of Allah to you. I instruct you to worship Allah alone, and avoid considering any associate with Him, and give up the adoration to what you are worshipping except Him, and believe in me and give me credence and protect me so that I will be able of carrying my Lord’s message”.

The same is recorded in At-Tabari’s Tarikh; ٢/٨٣ and Ibn Kutheir’s As-Sira; ٢/١٥٥

Al-Yaqubi’s Tarikh; ٢/٣٦

The Prophet was wont to provide his advocacy before the Arab tribes every year during seasons of pilgrimage. He used to speak to chiefs of these tribes, asking for nothing other than protection and guard. He was saying, “I do not coerce any on admitting my advocacy. But I only want you to protect me against assassination so that I can deliver my Lord’s messages”.

p: ١٧٤

None admitted him. They used to excuse that his people are more knowing in this regard

Moreover, reports assert that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family), during the declaration of fealty of Al-Ansar, asked them to protect his household and him as same as they protect their families and souls

:Ibn Husham’s As-Sira; ٢/٣٨

-After he recited some Quranic Verses and invoked Islam, the Prophet said to Al Ansar: "I conclude with you a covenant that you should protect me as same as you  
".protect your sons and women

Al-Bera Bin Muarwir took the Prophet's hand and shouted, "Yes, by Him Who  
.sent you with the right. We will protect you as same as we protect our people  
Confirm your covenant with us, God's messenger! We are, by God, men of wars  
\*".and heroism. We have been inheriting so from our great fathers

This matter arranges the topic involved. The Prophet (peace be upon him and his  
family), according with norms occurred to the previous prophets, asked for protection  
so that he would be able to carry the divine message

Al-Ansar contributed this protection. The Lord gave victory to His Prophet who  
,defeated his enemies; the polytheists and the Jews. He prevailed the Arab Peninsula  
Yemen, Bahrain and the Gulf. His state extended to the edges of Syria, and the  
.Islamic military forces went on threatening the Romans in Syria and Palestine  
(In the tenth year of his immigration, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family  
was about to depart to the Exalted Associate. That was during the Farewell

p: ١٧٥

Pilgrimage. In these final moments, he received sura of Maida, in which he was  
ordered of conveying the message. In addition, he was relieved that he would be  
.protected against people

What changes occurred? What incited on the revelation of orders of conveying in the (last stage of conveyance? What made the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

?in need for protection against people after he had been ruling that great state

For scholars, it is inapplicable to suppose that the Prophet was in need for a physical protection, since the Exalted Lord had already willed that such a material protection

would endure naturally. Furthermore, it was available so acceptably. Hence, the

.protection intended in this regard, should be mental

Secondly, a student is bound by the conclusion that conveyance intended in the Verse

should contemplate such a remarkable matter that it was very much difficult for

people to accept. It is also binding to name the hypocrites that declared their being

Muslims, as the only indication of ‘people’ intended in the Verse. This is by the

reason that the entire serious matters had been already communicated to the ,atheists

and the mission had no other serious matter to convey. Besides, after the revelation of

that Verse, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) did not declare any

.expected remarkable matter

,The same report is recorded in At-Tabari’s Tarikh; ٢/٩٢, Usdul Ghaba; ١/١٧٤\*

.Uyounul Athar; ١/٢١٧, Ibn Kutheir’s As-Sira; ٢/١٩٨ and Ahmed’s Al-Musned; ٣٤٤١

As he records it in his Majmauzzawaid; ٤/٤٤, Al-Heithami comments that Ahmed

and At-Tabarani recorded it. Ahmed relates it to narrators admitted in the most authentic reference books of hadith except Ibn Isaaq

.The report is also registered in Kenzul Ummal; ١/٣٢٨ and ٨/٢٩

Consequently, except for protection against doubting the prophesy, the revealed protection in this Verse was meaningless. At any rate, definite people would doubt

Mohammed's prophesy after they would have listened to him when he would nominate his household as the coming political and religious leaders of this nation

.This is the only meaning coincides the general text of the Verse

:As an interpretation, we are to explain the Verse as follows

O Apostle! You are only a conveyor and messenger. You are not responsible for the coming events or the result. This is your Lord's concern

Deliver what had been revealed to you from your Lord; by Gabriel in the matter concerning Ali; the matter you have frequently intended to refer to, but the hypocrites prevented you

And if you do it not, then you have not delivered His message, or substantiated your Lord's claim. Leadership of your progeny is not a personal matter, as the hypocrites think. It is a basic part of this sealing united epistle. When a part fails, the mass will fail. Similarly, when a part of the claim fails, the entire claim will fail

And Allah will protect you from the people; the Quraishis who may doubt your prophesy due to your conveying this matter that is very difficult for them to admit

This process will be completed peacefully. No interruption and no apostasy will

p: ۱۷۷

occur. Hence, you shall be seen as a perfect conveyor of your Lord's message, and

you will complete your Lord's claim on you nation as well. However, Ali shall be in

need for fighting these people for the sake of interpreting the Quran, in the same

.course you fought for the sake of its revelation

Surely Allah will not guide the unbelieving people, who will wrong your progeny

after you, and subsequently, will wrong your nation. They will change God's favor

.into atheism, and drive this nation into combats and collapse

## **FIFTH DISCUSSION**

### **THE QURAIISHIS ARE THE REASON BEYOND THE PROPHET'S NEED FOR AN ADDITIONAL PROTECTION**

From the Holy Verse and various narratives, we can conclude that the Prophet's

conveyance of his Lord's message regarding the leadership of his progeny might

.have caused a grave quake in the nation, and a serious threat against his prophecy

What are the reason and circumstances that might have caused such a sweeping

?catastrophe

Neither the Arab tribes, the Jews nor could the Christians have any opinion nor

intrude themselves in the matter of the Prophet's nominating his progeny for the

coming leadership. The only source of danger that might have precluded this affair

.was the Quraishis

It seemed that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) despaired of executing this affair. This matter is evidenced by the fact that the Prophet anticipated people's dissenting Islam as soon as he would declare this affair frankly and formally. The reason beyond this are the character and the tribal structure of Quraish

p: ۱۷۸

### **QURAISH IS ROOT OF VILLAINS**

The Quraishi chiefs are the evil side of Samuel's offspring. Yet, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) and Abu Talib; his uncle, doubted those chiefs belonging to Samuel; the prophet. They joined the intricate characters of the Jews their cousins, to tyranny of the violent chiefs of the Bedouin tribes. Excepting the Hashemites and few others, the Quraishis are the source of tyranny and Satanism. The Exalted Lord decides those chiefs as a perfect assembly of Pharaohs. God says Surely We have sent to you an Apostle, a witness against you, as We sent an apostle (to Pharaoh. But Pharaoh disobeyed the apostle, so We laid on him a violent hold As he was watching the victims of the battle of Badr, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) stated, "God may reward you; the evil band, badly. You belied me while I was true-tongued, and imputed treachery to me while I was trustworthy As his eyes fell on the dead body of Abu Jahl Bin Husham, the Prophet said, "This one is more tyrant than Pharaoh. As Pharaoh despaired of his life, he recognized the

oneness of Allah. But when this one despaired of his life, he called forth Lat and

\*.Uzza; the idols

On page ٢٠٧ of part ٣ of his book, Ibn Husham records the following saying of Abu

:Jahl

Sons of Abd Menaf and we competed on honor. We served food when they served

it. We combated when they combated. We bestowed when they bestowed. When

p: ١٧٩

we both had the same scale and became like two race horses, they claimed the coming of a prophet receives revelation from the heavens among them. How can

we ever have such a privilege? Nay, by God. We will never believe him, nor will

\*\*we give credence to him

:Al-Qummi's Tafsir; ١/٢٧٤

The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) addressed at the Quraishis: "The

Lord has sent me to destroy kings of this whole world and drag their realms to you. Respond to what I am calling forth, and you shall be kings of the Arabs, and

".the non-Arabs shall submit to you and you shall be kings in the Paradise

Out of his envy to the Prophet, Abu Jahl spoke: "O Allah! If Mohammed's words are being the right of Thee, then rain skyey stones upon us or inflict painful agony upon us." He then added: "The Hashemites and we were like two race horses. We

,This report is recorded in Hilyetul Abrar; ١/١٢٧ and At-Tusi's Al-Amali; ١/٣١٤\*

from which the compiler of Biharul Anwar quotes the report and registers it on page

.of part ١٩, under number ١١. It is also recorded in Majmauzzawaid; ٤/٩١ ٢٧٢

.The same is recorded in Uyounul Athar; ١/١٤٤ and Ibn Kutheir's As-Sira; ١/٥٠٦\*\*

combated when they combated, and speared when they speared, and cooked when

they cooked. When they and we were of the same scale, they claimed prophesy

among them. Nay, we will never admit such a thing among the Hashemites, or

”sons of Makhzum

p: ١٨٠

:In his Al-Mustatraf; ١/٥٨, Al-Abshihi records

What ill minded people are yours, when they selected a woman for their“

leadership!” Muawiya addressed at a Yemeni. “But I know people more ill

minded,” replied the Yemeni, “they are your people. When the Prophet (peace be

!upon him and his family) called them to embrace Islam they answered, ‘O Allah

If this is being the truth of Thee, then rain us with skyey stones, or inflict painful

agony upon us.’ They should have said, ‘O Allah! If this is being the truth of

”Thee, then guide us to it

:In his As-Siratul Mustaqim; ٣/٤٩, Al-Beyadi records

Muawiya spoke, “Allah favored the Quraishis in three things. They are his

sayings, (And warn your near clans,) and (Surely it is a remembrance for you and

”(your people,) and (For the protection of the Quraish

A man from the Ansar answered, “Slow down, Muawiya! God said, (And your people belied it,) and you are one of his people. And said, (Your people precluded against it,) and you are one of those people. And said, (My people deserted this Quran,) and you are one of his people. These are three for your three. We are to .add if you add.” Thus, Muawiya was ashamed

;When God inflicted years of agony upon Pharaoh and his people, they asked Moses .the prophet, to implore the Lord for alleviating the anguish they had suffered

Analogously, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) cursed the Quraishis and supplicated God to inflict years of agony upon them. The Lord responded. They

p: ١٨١

were impoverished and suffered famine till they had to have ‘Alhaz’, which is a meal of camel hair and blood. Nevertheless, they neither submitted to their Lord nor did .they implore Him

:Al-Hakim’s Al-Mustedrak; ٢/٣٩٤

:(Ibn Abbas: Abu Sufian came to the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

”.O Mohammed! I adjure you by the Lord and the kinship. We have had Alhaz“

Hence, God revealed, (And already We overtook them with chastisement, but they (were not submissive to the Lord, nor do they humble themselves

Recruits of the Umayyid caliphate are not admired by this report, nor do they exert any effort for interpreting this Verse. They claim the opposite. They assert that the

.Quraishis were actually submissive to their Lord, and humbled themselves to Him

.Furthermore, they claim the Prophet's blessing them

The following narrative, recorded in Ibn Kutheir's *As-Sira*; ٤/١٠١, is cited as an

:example

When the Prophet execrated the Quraishis, they suffered such a harsh year that

removed everything. They had to have bones, dogs and Alhaz. Abu Sufian came

to the Prophet and adjured him for supplicating God to relieve their crisis. The

.Prophet did, and the crisis was relieved

The problem is that Ibn Kutheir was fond of Abu Sufian's smell. As a historian, Ibn

Kutheir did realize that Abu Sufian's attendance at the Prophet (peace be upon him

and his family) occurred only after the latter had felt pity for the Quraishis, and sent

them food stuff and some money. The Prophet expected them to submit to the Lord

p: ١٨٢

and believe in Him and His Apostle. The Quraishis exploited that prophetic mercy

and compassion when they selected Abu Sufian to be before him and provide a plan

of reconciliation that was as same as plans of reconciliation frequently suggested by

the Israelites nowadays. This plan was rejected. As a second attempt, Abu Sufian

sought Ali and Fatima to intercede for his good, but they rejected, too. Yet, Abu

Sufian suggested that the intended treaty of reconciliation would be recorded in the

names of Al-Hassan and Al-Hussein so that they would take pride in this among the

Arabs. The replication of Ali and Fatima was that they would never protect any  
against the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

### .CLANS OF QURAISH

Quraish was more than twenty clans. They are sons of Hashim Bin Abd Menaf, sons  
of Umayya Bin Abd Shams, sons of Abdud-dar Bin Qusay, sons of Makhzoum Bin  
Yaqada Bin Murra, sons of Zuhra Bin Kelab, sons of Asad Bin Abdul-Uzza, sons of  
Al-Harith Bin Fihir Bin Malik, sons of Amir Bin Luay, sons of Sahl Bin Amr, sons  
of Jamh Bin Amr, sons of Anmar Bin Bugheid, sons of Teim Bin Murra Bin Ka'b  
sons of Edi Bin Ka'b and others

As a matter of fact, affairs and influence were in the hands of the most remarkable  
clans and chiefs. They are few clans. To great extent, the rest were mere followers  
As he describes the meeting of Darun-Nidwa -house of congress- which was held for  
discussing the matter of Mohammed Bin Abdillah Bin Abdil-Muttelib Bin Hashim's

p: ١٨٣

:prophecy, Ibn Husham, in his As-Sira; ٢/٣٣١, records

The meeting was attended by the celebrities of Quraish. Utba Bin Rabia, Sheiba  
Bin Rabia and Abu Sufian Bin Harb represented sons of Abd Shams. Tueima Bin  
Edi, Jubeir Bin Mutim and Al-Harith Bin Amir Bin Nawfal represented sons of  
Nawfal Bin Abd Menaf. An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith Bin Kilda represented sons of  
Abdud-Dar Bin Qusay. Abul-Bukhtari Bin Husham, Zumma Bin Al-Aswed Bin

.Al-Muttelib and Hakim Bin Huzam represented sons of Asad Bin Abdul-Uzza

Abu Jahl Bin Husham represented sons of Makhzum. Nabih Bin Al-Hejjaj and

Munebbih, his brother, represented sons of Sahm. Umayya Bin Khalaf represented

.sons of Jamh

Many other individuals were attendant there. Some spoke, "You have clearly seen

concerns of this man. I cannot guarantee that he will not lead his followers against

".us. You should decide something in this regard

As they consulted the matter, some suggested that they should detain him and

.wait... etc

As he refers to those who endures the disbursements of the polytheists' army in the

:battle of Badr, Ibn Husham, on page ٤٨٨ of part ٢ of his As-Sira, records

The Quraishi benefactors were Al-Abbas Bin Abdil-Muttelib Bin Hashim from

the Hashemites. And Utba Bin Rabia Bin Abd Shams from sons of Abd Shams

Bin Abd Menaf. And Al-Harith Bin Amir Bin Nawfal and Tueima Bin Edi Bin

Nawfal from sons of Nawfal Bin Abd Menaf. And Abul-Bukhteri Bin Husham

Bin Asad and Hakim Bin Huzam Bin Khuweilid Bin Asad from sons of Asad Bin

Abdul-Uzza. And An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith Bin Kilda Bin Alqama Bin Abd Menaf

p: ١٨٤

.from sons of Abdul-Dar

The following is the order of Quraishi clans, depended by Omar; the caliph, in

records of his state during contribution of the imports. It is to mention that this order evidences the complicated structure of these clans, and the precedence of the Hashemites

:Al-Beihaqi's As-Sunan; ٤/٣٤٤

(When he registered the records of his government, Omar (God be pleased to him decided to begin with the Hashemites. He commented, "I saw the Prophet (peace be upon him) precede them and sons of Al-Muttelib." Hence, their names were recorded in the top of the list. He contributed them equally

As he noticed the lineage of sons of Abd Shams and Nawfal, Omar added, "Sons of Abd Shams are the Prophet's full brothers. Sons of Nawfal are half brothers". Hence, the previous should be preceded

Then, he looked upon sons of Abdul-Uzza and Abdud-Dar. "Sons of Asad Bin Abdul-Uzza are the prophet's maternal relatives. They were within 'the odorizers.'" Thus, Omar preceded them to sons of Abdud-Dar. Sons of Zuhra followed sons of Abdud-Dar, as Omar saw

Sons of Teim and Makhzum came next. "Sons of Teim were a party in the treaty of 'Fudoul'. Besides, they were within 'the odorizers among whom was the Prophet (peace be upon him). Finally, they enjoyed favors." Accordingly, sons of Teim were preceded to sons of Makhzum

Sons of Sahm, Jamh and Edi Bin Ka'b came therewith. Some suggested that he

should begin with sons of Edi. “No, I should settle myself in its place. Sons of

p: ١٨٥

Sahm and we were of the same affair when Islam came forth. You should choose

between sons of Jamh and Sahm in precedence.” Finally, sons of Jamh were

.preceded

Sons of Sahm and Edi were recorded under the same name. When they were

separated, Omar shouted, “Allah is the greatest! Praised be Allah Who bestowed

” .me my share from His Apostle

-Then came sons of Amir Bin Luay. Abu Ubeida Bin Abdillah Bin Al-Jarrah Al

Fihri objected and blamed Omar for preceding all those to him. “Well, Abu

Ubeida,” Omar answered, “you either succumb, like what I had done, or you

should discuss this matter with your people. I will accept their decision if they

precede you to themselves. For me, I am to precede you to sons of Edi; my

” .people

In the reign of Muawiya, sons of Al-Harith Bin Fihri were preceded and located

.between sons of Abd Menaf and Asad Bin Abdul-Uzza

In the reign of Al-Mahdi; the Abbasid caliph, a quarrel occurred between sons of

Sahm and Edi. Therefore, they separated. For their standing, Al-Mahdi preceded

.sons of Edi

It is generally admissible that the Hashemites were distinctive among the other

Quraishi clans, due to their unique mentality, behavior, activities and values. It is also evident that the other tribes and kings respected them exclusively. This was the reason beyond the other Quraishi clans' envying them. Since days of Hashim and Abdul-Muttelib, the Hashemites were antagonized. It was Hashim who constituted Summer journey to Syria, Palestine and Egypt for the Quraishis. He toured in deserts

p: ١٨٤

and countries, and negotiated chiefs and kings of tribes and countries by which their caravans had to pass. He concluded treaties of nonaggression for conserving safety of the Quraishis' caravans who expressed their delight for this achievement and took initiative in benefiting it. Nevertheless, they envied Hashim and hoped had that been their own achievement so that they would have obtained that pride

.Hashim was deceased in Ghaza in obscure circumstances that a historian may doubt Hashim's house, however, was not extinguished. Abdul-Muttelib; the son, proved his active existence and could dominate his people, continuing his father's qualities. He constituted the Winter journey to Yemen. He concluded treaties of nonaggression

with chiefs and kings of tribes and countries by which the Quraishis' caravans passed. Like his father, Abdul-Muttelib took pride in this act

From the mental side, clans of Quraish noticed that the Hashemites generally, and Abdul-Muttelib particularly, were used to taking pride in their being Samuel's sons and followers of Abraham's creed, as if they were the only offspring of Samuel and

Abraham and, in more concentrating vision, as if they suspected the others' lineage  
Abu Talib and the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) applied this idea in  
.the most tangible view

The chasm between the Hashemites and the other Quraishi clans increased largely  
when Abdul-Muttelib claimed receiving divine inspiration via the true coming  
dreams. Once, he informed his people of the Lord's ordering him of digging well of  
Zamzam which was derelict long time ago. When he dug, water sprang anew by the

p: ۱۸۷

permission of God; the Exalted, and he could find two golden statues on the form of  
gazelle there. Abdul-Muttelib adorned the gate of Kaba with these two golden  
statues. This added a new feature to Abdul-Muttelib who exclusively took the task of  
serving the pilgrims with food. He was named 'waterer of pilgrims and the Holy  
.Precinct' due to scarcity of water

When the Abyssinian army were in their way towards Kaba, Abdul-Muttelib told  
.people that they would never touch it since God; the Elevated, would defeat them  
This prophesy came true when God rained the army of Abyssinia with tiny birds that  
.cast them with backed stones; hence, He caused them to be like a ruined nest

As if he was a prophet, or an introducer for a prophet, Abdul-Muttelib legislated a  
number of laws and regulations. He issued that the ritual Circumambulation of the  
pilgrimage should be seven times. As some of the Arab were used to going around

Kaba naked, because they presumed the profanity of their clothes, Abdul-Muttelib prohibited this practice. He warned people against burying the she-babies alive. He

issued the obligation of fulfilling the vows and reverencing the holy months. He prohibited consuming intoxicating drinks. He prohibited fornication, and constituted a definite punishment for the perpetrators of such a sin. He banished the notorious prostitutes out of Mecca. He prohibited marriage of the blood relations. He issued the provision of amputating the larceners' hands. Finally, he constituted unmerciful regulations against the murderers. He identified one hundred camels as the blood

p: ١٨٨

.money of bloodshed. All the previous regulations and laws are legislated in Islam Abdul-Muttelib occupied the greatest status among Quraish, as well as the other Arab tribes. This standing caused the Quraishi chiefs to envy him excessively. They dragged him to be the other party in a contest for showing the most honorable by the

governance of priests. Through a new property, God caused Abdul-Muttelib to overcome twice. This increased his standing and good reputation among people

The most matter that arouse the Quraishi chiefs against Abdul-Muttelib was his providing one of his sons as a corban for the Lord of Kaba, like Abraham (peace be ...upon him); his forefather

The Quraishi chiefs could not enjoy a moment of relief. As soon as Abdul-Muttelib was deceased, Abu Talib; the son, mastered his people, Quraish and the entire tribes

of the Arab. He took the place of his father and forefather. He kept his father's maxims. During the reign of Abu Talib, the grandest dole on the Quraishi chiefs took place. It is when Mohammed; Abu Talib's nephew, claimed prophesy and demanded with believing and complying with him. The dole expanded when a number of the Hashemites and sons of Al-Muttelib gave credence to this prophesy, and Abu Talib declared his responsibility of protecting Mohammed (peace be upon him and his family) during his mission of conveying his Lord's message freely. He also threatened the Quraishis a comprehensive war if they touch a single hair of Mohammed.

Sparing no efforts for supporting his nephew, Abu Talib stood in the face of the

p: ۱۸۹

cabals managed by the Quraishi chiefs. He also composed poems through which he divulged the ill intentions of the Quraishi chiefs, and suspected their being belonging to Samuel; the prophet. His poems of glorifying Mohammed (peace be upon him and his family); his nephew, and slurring the Quraishi chiefs, were carried to the other Arab tribes. Abu Talib named Abul-Hakam; chief of the Makhzum, 'the tiny (ignorant of the Makhzum', while the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) named him 'Abu Jahl -man of ignorance

In spite of their various attempts to incite and threaten Abu Talib and his nephew, the Quraishis failed to achieve any progress in the process of defeating that divine

They decided to persecute any Muslim they catch; therefore, most of the Muslims fled to Abyssinia. This was another failure for the Quraishi chiefs. Accompanied by sons of Kenana, the Quraishi chiefs determined to blockade and besiege the entire Hashemites comprehensively. They arrested them in a col for three or four years. Through a miracle, the Lord undid their blockade. When the Hashemites lost Abu Talib, the Quraishis issued a decision of assassinating Mohammed (peace be upon him and his family) since he lost the protector and backer. God defected their consensus, and moved His Apostle to Yathrib; the city that most of its people embraced and admitted Islam. Besides the Jews, means of beseeching and menace were taken by the Quraishi chiefs for pressing people of Al-Madina. They failed since that city, which lied on the main way of their economic exchange with Syria and the neighboring territories

p: ١٩٠

.(was prevailed by the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). In conclusion, they decided to declare war against son of the Hashemites. They battled him in Badr, Uhud and Al-Khandaq. As usual, they failed. They also failed when they used the Jews, the Romans and the Persian against him. Unexpectedly, Mohammed (peace be upon him and his family) surprised them when

he conquered their capital; Mecca, with great numbers of unbeatable soldiers. That was in the eighth year of his immigration to Yathrib. So, the Quraishis had to .(surrender and succumb to the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

.People of Mecca formed two lines to watch the parade of the Prophet and his army

The pennon of conquest was raised by Abdullah Bin Ruwaha, the young man from

:Al-Khazraj; the Yemeni tribe. He was shouting

O sons of atheists! Clear the way to him

Today, we shall strike you for the revelation

So abruptly that your heads will be removed

And friends will be engaged against their revered

.My Lord! I do believe his maxim

”?O son of Ruwaha! Is it before the Prophet and in God's Precinct you are poetizing“

Omar said unto him. “Leave him alone, Omar!” said the Prophet, “These verses are

\*” .more piercing than spear-heads

.Omar intended to alleviate the Quraishi chiefs and relieve the chock of their defeat

He also intended to avoid challenging them in their capital. It is to keep in mind that

Omar was son of that worthless clan of Edi. He was brought up on revering and

p: ١٩١

,(respecting the Quraishi chiefs. For the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

those pharaonic chiefs understood nothing other than the prose of swords and

,spears

and that Abdullah Bin Ruwaha's act had been quite correct and highly appreciated by the Exalted Lord since it was more piercing upon foes of the Lord than spearhands

### CONQUEST OF MECCA BEWILDERS THE JURISPRUDENTS

The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) had secured the Quraishis before he gathered their chiefs in the Holy Mosque, under swords of God's soldiers. He reminded them of many things; their arrogance, tyranny, belying the miracles and portents of God, dissenting God and His Apostle, persecuting the Hashemites and the Muslims and their conflicts and cabals against Islam and its embracers

:At-Tabari's Tarikh; ٢/٣٣٧

:The Prophet (peace be upon him) stood on the gate of Kaba and orated ,There is no god but Allah, lonelily with no associate. He fulfilled His promise“ triumphed His servant and defeated the parties alone. Any claimed revenge or estate should be under my feet excepting custody of House of God and watering .of the pilgrims

O the Quraishis! God has saved you from practices of Jahilism and taking pride in the forefathers. People are from Adam, and Adam was created from mud. (O people! We have created you from male and female, and We have made you peoples and tribes so that you will associate each other. The most honorable of (you to Allah is being the most careful of his duty

”O the Quraishis and people of Mecca! What do you expect me to do with you

p: ۱۹۲

Good! You are but a generous brother, and son of a generous brother,” answered“

.they

Go free! You are released,” responded the Prophet (peace be upon him). After“

they had been within the spoils of war the Prophet possessed, they were

.?manumitted and released. Hence, people of Mecca are called ‘the released

This matter perplexed the pro-Quraishi jurisprudents. A release is materialized only after capture and enslavement. This proposes that those people were manumitted by the Prophet who had enslaved them. Accordingly, they should be followers and loyal to his family for good. Their islamization saved them from being sentenced to death

This narration is recorded on page ۲۲۸ of part ۱۰ of Al-Beihaqi’s As-Sunan, and\*

of part ۴ of At-Tirmithi’s, and ۲۳۵ of part ۱ of At-Thehbi’s Siyeru Alamin ۲۱۷

.Nubela

penalty only. It did not cancel legitimacy of being enslaved. This rulings are applied

to the Quraishis exclusively. In rulings of jihad and Islamic conquest, these rulings

:are nonexistent. The following is a depiction of the Prophet’s practices

Ten thousand Muslims under the Prophet’s leadership surrounded Mecca. The

Quraishis were too frightened to counter that army. As an Islamic rule, people of ,Mecca, if they were Jews or Christians, should choose one of three; embracing Islam

.fighting or defraying the tribute and keeping their religion

.As they were polytheists, they had only two choices; either to islamize or to fight

They opted for the former under the menace of swords. They should have been treated as Muslims. But the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) submitted

p: ۱۹۳

.them to rulings of the prisoners of war , and released them

As a matter of fact, this sort of release is unfamiliar for the jurists. A prisoner of war should be either killed, released or compensated. The ruling of release without

manumission or compensation is dedicated to the Quraishis during conquest of

.Mecca

Another jurisprudential unsolved problem comes to the surface. It is the Prophet's statement of security benefit to every individual keeps himself beyond his doors, or throws his weapon, or confines in Abu Sufian's house. This decision of security was given to the polytheist foes without specifying their converting to Islam as a term

A third question is provided in this regard. It is the rulings respecting lands of

Mecca. There is a number of probabilities. These lands are prohibited to be

possessed because they are within the holy House of God. These lands are

conquered, and the entire Muslims have rights in them forever. These lands were

possessed to the Quraishis since they islamized. People then purchased some from

.the owners

As much as a personal viewpoint is concerned, lands of Mecca should be out of possession, since they are under the custody of the Prophet and the imams (peace be upon them). The security benefit was no more than an order of saving polytheist foes from killing

Their release supposes that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) did capture and enslave them according to laws of Islam. He did not manumit them. He released them, as if a master says to his slaves; 'Go and do whatever you like

p: ۱۹۴

However, they, as well as their progeny, are still decided as slaves of that master and his heirs. In other words, he did not make them choose either islamization or fighting. They were compelled to choose for the latter. Hence, they were overcome and captured

The Prophet regarded their islamization when he ordained them to take part in the battle of Hunein. Besides, he committed their women to declaring fealty to him. On other occasions, they were regarded as polytheists when their sons and slaves, who could find their way out to the Prophet after conquest of Mecca, were not given back to them

It is too sufficient to add to this topic. Hence, we are to refer to a number of texts of our imams in this respect

Nahjul-Belagha; ۳/۳۰

:Imam Ali's answer for Muawiya's words

How come do you intrude yourself in the matter of categorizing the leading ... and the late, and the follower and the guide? How should the 'released' and sons of the 'released' have a concern in the question of discerning the foremost ...? Muhajirs and classifying and identifying them

:Al-Kafi; ۳/۵۱۲

Lands of those who islamize willingly should be kept in their hands. Whatever is seized by sword should be belonged to the imam who conducts what he sees. This is the Prophet's procedures in respect to lands of Kheibar... When people of Taif islamized, they were imposed to pay the tithe and its half. Mecca was conquered by the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family); therefore, people of Mecca are

p: ۱۹۵

..his prisoners. He manumitted them and said, "Go free! You are released

Sunni jurisprudents rule that the Quraishis embraced Islam; therefore, they are under

.its rulings

When they are asked about the name 'released' and application of rulings of fighting to people and lands of Mecca, the Sunni jurisprudents claim that these right of applying these rulings was given exclusively to the Prophet

:Ashafii's Kitabul-Umm; ۷/۳۸۲

Al-Awzai: The Prophet (peace be upon him) conquered Mecca by force. He permitted Muhajirs to occupy their own lodges and lands there. He did not decide them as spoils

Abu Yousuf: The Prophet (peace be upon him) pardoned people of Mecca when he declared that security is given to each individual keeps himself in his house or joins the mosque or Abu Sufian's house. He asked his army not to kill but definite names, or when defending. He gathered them in the mosque and said, "What do you expect me to do with you?" "Good. You are the generous brother, and son of that generous brother," replied they. "Go free! You are released," said the Prophet

He did not regard any part of their possessions as spoils. I have already explicated that the Prophet in this very regard is not like others. The Prophet's norms should be carefully understood, since they bear various meanings

This indicates that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) disregarded rulings of Islam when he neither reckoned lands of Mecca with spoils of war, nor did he take its people as servants and slaves. He pardoned them and admitted their

p: ۱۹۶

converting to Islam. It is a ruling dedicated to the Prophet. It is illicit for any conqueror to take such procedures to polytheist foes

Thus, they claim the Prophet's respecting the Quraishis when he distinguished and

.applied them to particular rulings

At any rate, an immovable obstacle stands there. It is the name of ‘released’ the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) stamped on necks of the Quraishis and .their partisans. This name befits the slaves only

Some of the Nassibites\* understand that problem of Quraish with the Prophet’s progeny would enduringly remain unsettled as long as the name of ‘released’ is kept as a prophetic mark on their foreheads. This name means that the Quraishis have become legitimate slaves of the Prophet and his household and progeny, and that he had only released, but not manumitted them from slavery. Even if they were .manumitted, their loyalty should be kept for the Prophet and his household .Nassibites are antagonists of the Prophet’s progeny and their adherents\*

They spare no efforts for eradicating the name of ‘released’, in order that they might .release the Quraishis from their slavery to the Prophet and his household

Sheik Nasiruddin Al-Albani exposes his reluctant fanaticism to the Quraishis when he decides doubtfulness of the narrative involved on page ۳۰۷ of part ۳ of his :Selselatul Ahadithil Dhaeefa. He lists it under number ۱۱۶۳. He adds

This doubtful narrative is recorded in Ibn Isaaq’s As-Sira; ۴/۳۱-۲. At-Tabari, in .his Tarikh; ۳/۱۲۰, relates it

As he records it in his Al-Bidaya Wen Nihya; ۴/۳۰۰-۱, Ibn Kutheir does not

.comment on the report

Its documentation is doubtful and suspended since Ibn Isaaq did not name the man from whom he received. In addition, he was not one of the Prophet's ...companions

It is evident that this (hadithist) shows shortcoming in reviewing the other principal reference books of hadith in which this report is registered. Similarly, he could not perceive that hadithists and jurists dealt with this report as an undeniable fact

We wonder if it was such an extreme historical blemish, or it was such a fanaticism to the Quraishis that made this hadithist attempt to deny this fact. It might be an attempt to save them from that everlasting name of slavery to the Prophet and his household

Question of the released Quraishis is so certain and famous to the entire Islamic sects. The name 'released' is called exclusively on the Quraishis. It is frequently used in the reference books of hadith. This name had definite rulings discussed by the master Muslim jurists

:Al-Bukhari's; 5/105-6

Ten thousand warriors, besides the released, were with the Prophet (peace be ... upon him) during the battle of Hunein. They all absconded

:Muslim's; 3/106

...The released were with him. They absconded and he remained alone ...

The same is recorded in Muslim's; 5/196 also, and Ahmed's; 3/190 and 279. The truth is that the Hashemites were the only persons who stood firm and fought with the Prophet in the battle of Hunein

:Ahmed's; 4/363

The Prophet (peace be upon him) said: "Muhajirs and Ansar are wardens of each

p: 198

other. The Quraishi released and the manumitted of Thaqif are wardens of each

.other till the Resurrection Day

;Al-Hakim, in his Al-Mustedrak; 4/80, and Al-Heithami, in his Majmauzzawaid

.decide the authenticity of the previous report, 10/15

:The same report is authenticated in the following reference books

.Ibn Qudama's Al-Mughni; 7/321

.As-Serkhesi's Al-Mabsutt; 10/39

.Ahmed's Al-Musnad; 3/279

.Al-Beihaqi's As-Sunan; 6/306, 8/266 and 9/118

:Kenzul-Ummal; 12/86 and 5/35

Omar stated, "This affair should never be held by the released and sons of the

...released

#### **THE QURAISHIS AFTER CONQUEST OF MECCA**

.The rest of the Quraishi tyrants and 'released' were coerced on converting to Islam

Feelings of malice and arrogance were confined in hiddens of most, if not all, of them. On the other side, they adopted the claim that Mohammed's state was theirs since Mohammed was that generous man and son of that generous man, and his state

is Quraish's. Similarly, they adhered to the statements that Mohammed's nobility and pride were theirs, since he was son of Quraish, and his state was more prevailing and superior than state of Quraish

At any rate, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) pardoned them and permitted celebrities of Quraish to enter his state; therefore, it is illogical for them to fight or stand against or leave that state in the hands of the strangers; people of the

Aws and the Khazraj. Likewise, the question of Mohammed's succession is discussible since it was seen as a municipal issue

It is quite understandable that the Quraishis directed their efforts towards the coming

p: ۱۹۹

stage; after Mohammed's departure. The most significant aim they had to treat was precluding him from nominating the Hashemites for the next leadership. They expressed this trend in few words; forbidding the Hashemites from joining leadership to prophesy. They decided that leadership should be the share of the Quraishi clans other than the Hashemites who had already enjoyed prophesy restrictively

Furthermore, there are many texts and confessions leading to the fact that the

Quraishis spared no single effort, whether on the external or internal fronts, for achieving the previous plan. Yet, most of them despaired of the Prophet's granting them any amount in the leadership. This because he had been working industriously for preparing his household for the next leadership of his state

On that account, they plotted for assassinating the Prophet. They did commit such endeavors as soon as they had an opportunity. That commenced during the battle of Hunein

The Quraishi pharaohs have never practiced faithfulness, as if they would feel sick if they evaded exploiting any scope of betraying that who pardoned them benevolently

After they had declared their being Muslims, and volunteered for joining the Prophet in his war against the Hawazin and the Ghatafan in Hunein, they absconded at the initial throw of spears in the battlefield. They were two thousand and the Prophet's army were ten thousand. Nevertheless, they were the main reason beyond the beating

of the Prophet's army in that battle. They caused the rest to abscond, just like what had happened in the battle of Uhud

p: ۲۰۰

Predictably, the Hashemites were the only warriors who stood fast with the Prophet

They fought so courageously that they could repulse the attack. Only then, a few number of the absconding Muslims returned to the battlefield. God gave them

At the same time as the Muslims were absconding, the Quraishis plotted a number of .(processes aimed at assassinating the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

This matter drags to the matter that they had already planned for many things with .the Hawazin

Ibn Kutheir; the affectionately fond of the Quraishis and the Umayyid, records the -following saying of his dearest; An-Nudeir Bin Al-Harith, chief of sons of Abdud .Dar

:As-Sira; 3/691

An-Nudeir Bin Al-Harith Bin Kilda was a famous foe of the Prophet (peace be... upon him). During the battle of Hunein, he joined his people who were still keeping their beliefs. An-Nudeir spoke: "We intended to attack Mohammed as soon as the Hawazin would beat him. But, we could not do it. When we resided in Jarana, the Prophet (peace be upon him) called at me while I was still keeping my beliefs. "O An-Nudeir! May I guide you to a practice more beneficial for you than "that you had intended during the battle of Hunein, and the Lord stopped you offered the Prophet. I came to him so hurriedly. "Now, it is the proper time to ,understand the infirmity of your previous intention," added he. I confessed: "Yes indeed. I do realize that had there been a god other than Allah, he would have

...".influenced. I do declare there is no god but Allah, lonelily without associate

It is noticeable that the previous words of this Quraishi chief involved his declaration

and claim of believing in God; the Exalted. A man's declaration is a sufficient

evidence. It is also noticeable that he declared the first creed of Islam only, and

neglected the other, which is the declaration of Mohammed's divine prophesy and

.apostleship. A claim is not provable unless others testify it

The point here is this chief's recognition that their declaration of converting to Islam

during conquest of Mecca had been false. Two thousand warriors were under the

commandment of this chief during the battle of Hunein, while he was planning for

assassinating the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). This indicates that the

whole warriors were parties in this plot. In addition, these words revealed that they

had actually implemented processes of assassinating the Prophet, but their activities

were failed by the Lord; the Exalted, and communicated to the Prophet (peace be

.(upon him and his family

Other narratives attest that the Quraishi chiefs, during the flight of the Muslims in the

battle of Hunein, could no longer keep the secret; therefore, they shouted of their

.rooted atheism and divulged their intentions

:Ibn Husham's As-Sira; ٤/٤٦

When Muslims fled, some the Quraishis could no longer hide malice that ...

disturbed their hearts. Abu Sufian Bin Harb shouted, while pieces of pagans were

”kept in his bag: “Let them be thrown in the sea

Jibilla Bin Al-Hanbal and Safwan Bin Umayya; the polytheists, shouted: “Sorcery

p: ۲۰۲

”has failed

Sheiba Bin Othman Bin Abi Talha, whose brother was killed in the battle of

”Uhud, cried: “Today, I will retaliate Mohammed. Today, I will kill Mohammed

He, later on, narrated, “I searched for the Prophet as I intended to kill him. But

something strange locked my heart; therefore, I realized that I would never have

”the ability of carrying out my intention

Moreover, Sheiba; the Muslim leader and son of Quraish (the striving faithful and

Muslim tribe), conceded that he went around the Prophet several time as he intended

.to kill him. That was after the flight during the battle of Hunein

A deep look in the identities, ways of thinking and interests of the Quraishi chiefs

clearly exposes their hypocrisy, and that they had decided to belie the entire portents

and miracles introduced by Mohammed (peace be upon him and his family), and

gainsay the whole humanitarian values and norms he called for and installed. They

also decided not to join his religion in any case except when they would be

.threatened by swords or when his state would be in their hands

No single means did they save during their fighting the Prophet (peace be upon him

and his family). Regardless, they had to show shortcoming and, finally, were

defeated. As a second stage, they kept on plotting cabals and attempting to assassinate him. But they had to show shortcoming, too. Then, they specified terms of holding leading positions in his state. They were defeated. At length, they claimed their right to control his state, since they were his people

p: ۲۰۳

Structure of this sort of people who predominated the Islamic state and precluded the Prophet's household from holding their proper positions of leadership, necessitates a discerning study

:Menaqibu Ali Abi Talib; ۲/۲۳۹

:In his Tanzihul Anbiya (page ۱۶۷), Asharif Al-Murteda comments

As soon as the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) nominated Ali Bin Abi

Talib for the next leadership, a group of Quraishi people came and stated: "O God's messenger! People have no long span in Islam. They displease that your cousin; Ali Bin Abi Talib, will hold the leadership while you held the prophesy

".You'd better have another decision

The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) replied: "That was not my decision that I may alter. It was the Lord's. It is He Who ordered me of and imposed it upon me

They suggested: "Well then. You may conjoin a man of Quraish to him, so that people will be satisfied, and your affairs will be affirmative

Soon afterwards, God revealed: (Surely, if you associate, your work would  
(.certainly come to naught and you would certainly be of the losers

Imam As-Sadiq (peace be upon him): The Quraishis were under the leadership of  
a man from the Edi when they appeared before the Prophet and said: “O God’s  
messenger! We have abandoned our paganism and followed you. Conjoin us in  
”.the leadership you have given to Ali exclusively

Gabriel; the Angel, descended to the Prophet and revealed: (Surely, if you  
associate, your work would certainly come to naught and you would certainly be

p: ۲۰۴

(.of the losers

### **THE QURAISHIS EMBRACE THE LEADERSHIP OF SUHEIL BIN AMR**

Despite the unfaithful situations shown by the Quraishis after conquest of Mecca, the

Prophet put forth efforts for acquiring their loyalty by dignifying and welcoming  
them. He donated them the greatest share of the spoils. He also promised to donate  
.more in the future provided that they would show fidelity and good manners

Not for their appreciation, the Lord advised His Apostle of using illumination of  
tranquillity and benevolence in facing the intricacy and narrow-mindedness of those  
tyrant people. That was particularly taken for the sake of the coming generations and  
.the march that will be arising in this world

Meanwhile, chiefship of Abu Sufian retracted, and he could keep nothing other than

his false fame of combating Mohammed (peace be upon him and his family). Abu Sufian's chiefship was fit in wars and trade only. It was unsuitable in situations of peace and political activities. After he had been defeated in conquest of Mecca, Abu Sufian resided in Al-Madina and asked the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) to appoint him as a tax collector of some tribes

Suheil Bin Amr was selected as the very thinker and politician who might materialize the Quraishi people's outlining after their military downfall

Not too long, Suheil Bin Amr became the only pivot around whom the Quraishis circumambulated, and the only heir of those chiefs whom were killed or perished by Mohammed or his Lord

Although he was one of sons of Amir Bin Luay who were a grade lower than sons of

p: ۲۰۵

Kab Bin Luay, as Ibn Husham asserts in his *As-Sira*; ۲/۴۸۹, Suheil Bin Amir Bin Abd Shams Bin Abd Wudd was a full-blooded Quraishi. He had long stories with Mohammed. He was one of the chiefs who negotiated Abu Talib in respect of Mohammed's prophesy. He was a member in An-Nidwa conference when they issued the decision of imposing a comprehensive blockade upon the Hashemites. He was also a member of the cabal of assassinating the Prophet during his journey to At-Taif. He also participated in making the decision of banishing Mohammed out of Mecca and menacing killing him if he had to return. He also rejected protecting the

.Prophet so that he would be in Mecca for conveying his Lord's messages

:At-Tabari's Tarikh; 2/82

The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) asked Al-Akhnes Bin Shureiq to convey his request of protection, so that he would convey his Lord's messages, to

Suheil Bin Amr. "Sons of Amir Bin Luay should never protect those whom are

.wanted by sons of Kab." This was Suheil's answer

Furthermore, Suheil was one of those chiefs who showed no drawback in planning

processes for killing Mohammed after Abu Talib's decease, till his Lord saved him

.through immigration

He was also one of those who detained and tortured the earlier Muslims. Abu Jandal

.was one of those Muslims who suffered torment on the hands of his father; Suheil

He was also within commanders of the battle of Badr, and the wealthy who saved

the alimony of the polytheists' army. He exerted efforts for harming the Prophet's

p: 206

heart through practicing ill activities; therefore, God cursed him and ordered His

Prophet of cursing and mentioning him by name in disfavor and commination during

.the prayers

Besides battles of Uhud and Al-Khandaq, Suheil spent his wealth on enlisting people

.against the Prophet during wars

:At-Thehbi's Siyeru Alamin Nubela; 1/194

Suheil Bin Amr was the best eloquent orator among the Quraishis, and one of their celebrities. He could escape when he was captured in the battle of Badr. In Mecca, he harangued and urged people on partaking in the wars against the Prophet. He said, "O sons of Ghalib! Are you going to let Mohammed and the apostate who followed him seize your caravans?! This wealth I am providing is for those who lack wealth. This power I am providing is for those who lack power."

However, Suheil was benevolent, generous and well-spoken. Addressing words similar to those addressed by Abu Bakr As-Siddiq in Al-Madina,\* Suheil orated in Mecca after the Prophet's decease. His words contributed in appeasing people and enhancing Islam.

The underlined words of At-Thehbi should be affixed in mind for more understanding for the coming topics.\*

The Quraishis elected Suheil Bin Amr for representing them in the peace treaty of Hudeibiya. He protested against writing down 'the Apostle of God' as the Prophet's signature. He signed on it on behalf of the entire Quraishis.

At last, he was one of the leaders of polytheism intended by God's saying, (Fight leaders of polytheism)

:As-Sanani's Tafsir; 1/242

Qetada: Leaders of polytheism intended in God's saying, (Fight leaders of

polytheism,) are Abu Sufian Bin Harb, Umayya Bin Khalaf, Utba Bin Rabia, Abu

Jahl and Suheil Bin Amr

After conquest of Mecca and the Prophet's predominance, Suheil Bin Amr preferred

to keep his lodging in Mecca, and declined the idea of moving to Al-Madina, like

most of the released. Due to his arrogance and long history of struggle against the

.Prophet, he dared not ask for a position in the Prophet's state

While he rejected the Prophet's philanthropic present during years of desiccation and

starvation suffered by the Quraishis by virtue of the Prophet's cursing, Suheil Bin

Amr accepted the one hundred camels presented to him as spoils of the battle of

.Hunein

This long history was seen as bright as daylight sun for the Quraishi people, while it

.is seen as black as gloomy night for God and His Apostle

The (Muslim) Quraishis voted for Suheil Bin Amr's leadership after conquest of

.Mecca, for the previous lineage, history and situations

.How miserable the historians are! And woe is adorers of the Quraishis in this regard

Whereas the Prophet did nominate Etab Bin Useid Al-Umawi and a man from Ansar

.as rulers of Mecca, the Quraishis preferred and complied with Suheil

This fact is evidenced by the story that as soon as the Prophet (peace be upon him

.and his family) was deceased, the Quraishis dissented and relinquished Islam

Although, he was a Quraishi individual, Etab had to hide since he anticipated assassination. A few days later, they received the tranquil news of swearing allegiance to Abu Bakr; son of the Teim, as the new leader. They calmed as they

p: ٢٠٨

understood that none of the Hashemites would hold position of leadership. That .repose incited Suheil Bin Amr on repeating the same words of Abu Bakr, in Mecca The intendment of these words was that he whoever worshipped Mohammed, must understand that his worshipped had died. We; the other party, do not worship Mohammed who was no more than a messenger that carried the message and passed

away. Mohammed was son of Quraish, and his authority should be held by the .Quraishis who selected the new leader; Abu Bakr. They all should listen and obey Suheil assuaged the Quraishis' revolt by carrying the news that leadership would be .in their hands, away from the Hashemites and Ansar who worshipped Mohammed

.Thus, they should not have apostatized Islam

Accordingly, the Quraishis listened, and that was the conclusion of the apostasy .project

Suheil secured Etab and ordered him of ruling Mecca in the name of the new Quraishi, non-Hashemite, leader; Abu Bakr Bin Abi Qehafa, son of the Teim Bin

\*.Murra

Refer to Ibn Husham's As-Sira; ٤/١٠٧٩, who added: Then, people were calmed and\*  
.regained settlement. Only then, Ettab Bin Useid appeared

### **SUHEIL WORKS FOR INDEPENDENCE**

After conquest of Mecca, the Quraishis directed their entire activities towards the orderly political and secret action aimed at keeping the Prophet's household away from the leadership and dedicating it to the other Quraishi individuals. They understood that any open activities against the Prophet, in that stage, were .unavailing

They had to counter the problem of the Prophet's progressive arrangements for p: ٢٠٩

bringing Ali, followed by Al-Hassan and Al-Hussein, to power. Neither Ali nor were any of the Hashemites welcomed by the Quraishi people. Thereupon, they, headed by Suheil Bin Amr, planned for practicing a number of bold procedures with the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). They sent him various missives in which they demanded with repatriating their sons and slaves who left Mecca and the .farms of At-Taif, and joined him for receiving knowledge of the religion Suheil addressed at the Prophet: "Today, we are your allies. We came to terms after we had been engaged in combats. It was I who concluded the peace treaty with you in Hudeibiya. Our sons and slaves fled their hometowns and places of work and joined you. They lied when they claimed intending to receive knowledge of the

religion. Besides, we are responsible for teaching them their religion if they are  
".honest. Accordingly, you should repatriate them

This simple appeal of the new chief of Quraish does mean that the Quraishis, even if  
they had to give up arms and surrender under shades of swords, do not recognize the  
. (ruler of Mecca assigned by the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

Moreover, they required the Prophet's recognition of their being an independent  
. political entity, in the face of the Prophet, his state and religion

On page ٢٩٨ of part ٥ of At-Tirmithi's As-Sunan, the following report is written  
:down

Ali Bin Abi Talib: After the conclusion of the peace treaty of Hudeibiya, some ...  
p: ٢١٠

polytheist chiefs and individuals, including Suheil Bin Amr, came and addressed  
,at the Prophet (peace be upon him): "O God's messenger! Some of our sons  
brethren and slaves joined you. Their claim of receiving knowledge in the religion  
was false. They only intended to get rid of their obligations and duties. Repatriate  
".them and we will teach them their religion if they are honest

The Prophet (peace be upon him) answered: "O the Quraishis! Keep up such  
,demands and God shall send a man whose heart is filled up with believing in God  
".to behead you by his sword for the sake of this religion

.They, as well as Abu Bakr and Omar, asked the Prophet to identify that man

He is that repairer of the sandal,” the Prophet referred to Ali between whose“

.(hands was the sandal of the Prophet (peace be upon him

:Abu Dawud’s As-Sunan; ١/٤١١

Ali Bin Abi Talib: Some slaves joined the Prophet. (That was before the ...  
conclusion of the peace treaty of Hudeibiya.) The masters sent missives in which  
they demanded with repatriating them, since their claim of receiving knowledge  
in the religion was false

A number of people encompassing the Prophet attested that demand, and advised  
the Prophet to respond

The Prophet became irate, and spoke: “O the Quraishis! I see you will never give  
up such demands before the Lord shall send a man who will behead you for this

.Hence, the Prophet rejected their demand and manumitted those slaves

The reader must be aware that mentioning the peace treaty of Hudeibiya in the

p: ٢١١

previous report, was only a style of contorting facts, usually followed by the Quraishi  
reporters and narrators. The incident befell after conquest of Mecca. Had it occurred

before that, Suheil Bin Amr would have demanded the Prophet with fulfilling the

term of repatriating the individuals who would join the Prophet. The Prophet’s  
obligation of repatriating whomever joins him and flees the line of the polytheist

was one of the terms specified during the conclusion of the peace treaty of

.Hudeibiya. By the way, the polytheists were not bound with the same term

The Prophet would not have shown such an intense ire if this demand, which would have been so normal since it was specified as a term of the treaty, had been provided

before conquest of Mecca. The Prophet's ire is always cast in situations of

.wrongdoing. It is pursuing the Lord's ire

The released Quraishis would not have suggested to the Prophet that they should

teach those sons and slaves the religion, if their demand had been issued before conquest of Mecca and conversion to Islam. The suggestion of teaching Islam cannot

.be said by other than Muslims or claimers of being Muslims

.Finally, some narratives attest that the incident occurred after conquest of Mecca

:Al-Hakim's Al-Mustedrak; ٢/١٣٨

Ali Bin Abi Talib (God be pleased to him): After the Prophet (peace be upon ...

him and his family) had conquered Mecca, some Quraishis came and said: "O

Mohammed! We are your allies and people. Our slaves joined you not for receiving knowledge of Islam, as they claim, but for giving up their duties and

p: ٢١٢

".obligations. Repatriate them

.Abu Bakr and Omar attested the demand when their advice was sought

,The Prophet stated: "O the Quraishis! God shall send a man from among you

whose heart is filled up with faithfulness, to behead you for the sake of the

”religion

Abu Bakr and Omar expected themselves to be the intended. “No,” asserted the Prophet, “It is the repairer of the sandals in the mosque.” The Prophet had already given his sandals to Ali to repair

(According to the criterion of Muslim, this report is authentic)

On page ٢٩٨ of part ٤, Al-Hakim records a similar report and decides its authenticity

After conquest of Mecca, some the Quraishis came to the Prophet... He said: “O the Quraishis! Avoid keeping up prayers and defraying the poor rate and I will send a man who will behead you for the sake of this religion. This man shall be I or the repairer of the sandals.” Meanwhile, Ali was repairing the Prophet’s sandals

The same is recorded on page ١٧٤ of part ١٣ of Kenzul Ummal

:Many remarkable and consequential points can be inferred from this incident

First, the Quraishis attended in Al-Madina to see the Prophet. They came to Mohammed’s capital for demanding with his recognizing their political independence. Such an awkward impudence occurred just after conquest of Mecca and their humiliation and concession to Islam under the menace of swords, and their being released by the Prophet, and their shameful deeds in the late battle of Hunein :As Al-Hakim and Abu Dawud authenticate, the Quraishis addressed at the Prophet

'O Mohammed!!" At-Tirmithi, however, distorts it into 'O God's messenger"

:Ahmed's Al-Musnad; ٣/٨٢

Abu Said Al-Khidri: ... The Prophet's sandal was cut when he handed it to Ali Bin Abi Talib to repair. We stood with the Prophet who spoke, "One of you shall fight for the sake of the interpretation of the Quran, as same as I have fought for its revelation

.Each, including Abu Bakr and Omar, expected himself to be the one intended

".No," asserted the Prophet, "He shall be the repairer of the sandal"

,We hurried to Ali for carrying this good tidings. As if he had already known it

.Ali paid no attention

On page ١٣٣ of part ٩ of Majmauzzawaid, the author decides authenticity and

.truthfulness of the report and its narrators

.The narration maintains that the incident occurred in Al-Madina

Second, the Quraishis understood that conquest of Mecca and their having to accept

Islam as a religion had not been considered as a submission to the Prophet (peace be

upon him and his family) and melting in the Islamic state. They saw it as an alliance

with the Prophet against the tribes not included to his state yet. The Romans and the

Persian were the main foes of the Prophet's state and the Quraishis as well. They

regarded it as an alliance against the common foe although they had to be a party by

Furthermore, the Quraishis considered that they had practically applied that alliance .when they fought in the Prophet's line against his foes during the battle of Hunein

p: ٢١٤

.On that account, it is now his turn to recognize their independent entity  
Their commencing demand was repatriating their fleeing sons and slaves. This meant  
that the Prophet should deliver those individuals to the authorities of the Quraishi  
.state; their homeland

Third, excepting the Hashemites, the Quraishis, who had immigrated with the  
Prophet (peace be upon him and his family), attested that demand. It is proved that  
.Abu Bakr Bin Qehafa and Omar Bin Al-Khattab supported the demand completely

Narrations vary in exposing the scope of Abu Bakr and Omar's supporting the  
Quraishi demand. Some, such as Al-Hakim's authentic previous one, elucidate that  
".Abu Bakr answered: "They have said the truth, God's messenger! Repatriate them

.Omar repeated the same words of Abu Bakr

-Other narrations, such as that recorded in At-Tirmithi's and Al-Hakim's Al  
Mustedrak; ٣/١٢٢ and Majmauzzawaid; ٩/١٣٤ and ٥/١٨٤, evade referring to the two  
men's attesting and admitting the Quraishi demand, and stop at mentioning their  
expectation to be the party whom shall be selected by the Lord and His Apostle for  
.disciplining the Quraishis

Smartly, the word 'men' was substituted for the names of Abu Bakr and Omar. Such narratives are recorded in Al-Hakim's Al-Mustedrak; ٢/١٢٥ and; ١٠/٤٧٣

Mentioning the two men was totally eradicated in some narrations such as that recorded in Abu Dawud's As-Sunan and the various narrations of; ١١/٤١٣

Fourth, a wonderment should be provided here. It is respecting the sort of relationship between Suheil Bin Amr and the two men; Abu Bakr and Omar, and the reason beyond their attesting the Quraishi demand

p: ٢١٥

Another wonderment should be provided. It is the reason beyond the Prophet's seeking advice of Abu Bakr and Omar after he had comprehended the Quraishis' real intendment. Moreover, he became irate, and rejected their demand, and menaced another war, and foretold of its imminent falling

In any case, texts aver, in the least level, that chiefship of Quraish was represented by those four stars of the incident. They are Mohammed Bin Abdillah; the Prophet

Suheil Bin Amr Al-Amiri; the polytheists' past chief and the Quraishis' present chief, Abu Bakr and Omar; sons of the most worthless clans of Quraish. However characters of these two men were remarkable for their accompanying the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). These two men attested Suheil's demand)

From the above it is comprehensible that there is a sort of relationship and an earlier arrangement between the delegation of Quraish and the two men. Some narratives

divulge more: Suheil and his delegation resided at Omar's house when they were in

Al-Madina. Abu Bakr accompanied them to the Prophet as an intercessor

Fifth, four elements can be assumed from the Prophet's reaction in the incident

:involved

The prophetic ire owing to the awkward impudence and the way of thinking .

enjoyed and adopted by the Quraishis. Narratives did not refer to this point

.detailedly

,The Prophet's despairing of the Quraishis's modifying their courses of tyranny .

and spreading on instructions of Islam. Moreover, the Prophet despaired of their

evading arrogance and despotism. He perceived that the sword would be the only

p: ٢١٤

.device that may cause them to abide the right

,A number of narratives, such as those recorded in Al-Hakim's Al-Mustedrak; ٢/٢٢٥

,Abu Dawud's; ١/٦١١, Al-Baihaqi's As-Sunan; ٩/٢٢٩ and Kenzul Ummal; ١٠/٤٧٣

referred evidently to this point. (The Prophet said: "O the Quraishis! I see you will

never cease unless the Lord shall send a man who will behead you for the sake of

Islam.") This prophetic wording asserts that the Quraishis will never submit to Islam

.by means other than swords

The Prophet's naming Ali Bin Abi Talib (peace be upon him); sword of the Lord .

and His Apostle, in threatening the Quraishis. They do scare this man to death, since

they suffered the harshest days of their lifetime on his hands. Ali, alone, was the terminator of half of the polytheist heroes whom were the victims of the Prophet's battles. The other Muslims, groupably, killed the second half or less

It is noticed that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) mentions Ali indirectly when he refers to the man whom shall be sent for beheading the Quraishis for the sake of the religion. Once, as it is recorded in Majmauzzawaid; ٩/١٣٣, he

...expresses: "A man belongs to me or I

When Abu Bakr and Omar asked him to name that man, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) stated, "It is I or the repairer of the sandal." This is written down

on page ٣٢٤ of part ٧ of Kenzul Ummal

This prophetic general wording is aimed for obstructing the wheel of the Quraishi

p: ٢١٧

disproportionate hopes as they would understand that this question may occur as

early as possible. Moreover, the Quraishis should anticipate an order of invading

Mecca and terminating the tyrants there, that would be issued to Ali as close as

morning

.The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) proposes to evince Ali's standing

He also wanted to make the Quraishis know that that man they are threatened, should

be believer and one of the Hashemites; the people they were still envying and

.detesting

Had the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) foretold that Ali would fight the Quraishis for the sake of the interpretation of the holy Quran twenty five years later they would have been sure that they should have a twenty year period to apply their plans

In Majmauzzawaid, a narrative decided as authentic is recorded. The reporter declare

that since the Prophet's reign, Ali (peace be upon him) had been threatening the Quraishis and everybody who would think of apostasy. He swore he would fight them to the last moments

The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) was the director of this threat aimed at precluding the Quraishis from practicing any process of dissenting Islam

:Majmauzzawaid; 9/134

Ibn Abbas: during the Prophet's lifetime, Ali was used to saying, "God; the Powerful the Glorified, says, (Mohammed is no more than an apostle; the apostles have already passed away before him; if then he dies or is killed, will you turn back upon your heels?) Nay, by Allah! We will never turn back upon our heels

p: 218

after we have been guided by Allah; the Exalted. By God I swear, if Mohammed will die or be killed I will definitely fight for the sake he has been fighting for, till

the last of my life. Nay, by God! It is I who is his brother, successor, cousin and

”?heir. Who then is more meritorious than me

Following the previous narrative, the same compiler writes down another in which

he exposes that immediately after conquest of Mecca, the Prophet (peace be upon

.(him and his family) menaced the Quraishis with Ali (peace be upon him

Abdurrahman Bin Awf: Immediately after conquest of Mecca, the Prophet went

towards At-Taif... He orated: “O people! I will be your leading. I urge you on

being benevolent with my household. You shall meet me on the Divine Pool. By

the Prevailing of my soul I utter the oath, if you evade performing prayers and

defraying the poor rates, I will send upon you a man belongs to me. He will be

”.beheading your warriors and capturing your posterity

People thought that Abu Bakr or Omar had been the intended. The Prophet took

”.Ali from the hand and said, “He shall be this

This prophetic threat carries evident evidences on the actual intendments of those

fresh Muslims. It is completed by Ali’s threatening fighting if they would show

.apostasy after the Prophet’s decease

The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) rules atheism of claimants of that .۴

demand. As a matter of fact, their atheism is sufficiently proved as soon as they

provided that demand. Besides, the Prophet’s sayings, “I see you will not stop, O the

Quraishis...” and the threat with a man who will behead them for the sake of the religion, and his ire; all are evidences of those people’s atheism. In the first saying the Prophet meant that they would not stop their atheism and antagonism against the Lord and His Apostle. In the latter, the Prophet’s words meant that they should not be following the religion, and that they would not cease their activities against Islam unless they would be treated by swords

Scholars and jurists ask for a more manifest proof. The Prophet provided so when he rejected their demand with repatriating their slaves, and declared that he had manumitted them

In case these ‘released’ were Muslims whose properties must be respected and inviolate, it should be illegal for the Prophet, the ever best pious, to violate such properties. He (peace be upon him and his family) was used to saying: “It is illicit for any to have from others’ properties unless their satisfaction is obtained.” He was also saying: “Your properties and souls are as sanctified as... etc

Jurists were confused as they tried to solve this problem. Some reckoned it with the potencies exclusively given to the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). This is incorrect. It is irrational to regard violating the consecrated properties of Muslims, as a prophetic potency

**CONSEQUENCE OF THE INCIDENT**

Apparently, that incident hindered the Quraishi people's attempts to harvest the Prophet's recognition of their political independence, in the form of an alliance or an

p: ۲۲۰

.autonomy under the pennon of the Islamic state

Any view at the history written with the ink of the Quraishi caliphate and Islam designed with the scissors of the pro-Quraish narrators, will conclude that the ,Quraishis, soon after the incident involved, repented, and embraced Islam so piously and gave alms, and manumitted their slaves, and pilgrimaged, and fasted and .performed the prayers so consummately

In contrast, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) said: "I see you will  
":never stop, O the Quraishis

From nature of the Quraishi people in general and their chiefs in specific, it is .understood that they must have kept up their activities on the entire possible fronts

They could conclude many results. They understood that the Prophet had still been attentive of their movements. They also figured out that it had been a great mistake to think of a political independence in the Prophet's state. Thirdly, they recognized that Mohammed; the leading Hashemite knight, had been unmatched, especially when he was supported by his cousin; terminator of the Arabs, and people of the Aws and the Khazraj who dared, for the first time in their lives, to fight the Quraishis .and kill a number of their heroes

The issue of a political independence was retracted as a substitute came forth. The Quraishis were confident that Mohammed's state covered the entire territories, and Muslims were readying for contesting the Romans and Persia. Mohammed did promise his followers of defeating these two great powers. Muslims looked forward to achieving so. On that account, any demand of autonomy was seen as meaningless

p: ۲۲۱

It became so necessary to be oriented to the new general situation through industrious political activities and processes of systematic violence. By such activities could the Quraish people only fall heir to Mohammed's state. Mohammed at any rate, is son of Quraish. Hence, his people are more meritorious than others in receiving his heritage. Neither Ansar; the Yemenis, nor can any other tribe protest or provide an opinion

Supposing that will be achieved, there will come one problem only, that necessitates any possible treatment, no matter how it will be. That is the problem of the Hashemites whom are called 'the progeny' and 'the near of kin', and about whom frequent Quranic texts have been revealed and many prophetic texts have been worded. Mohammed has endowed them exclusively the fifth of the public budget. Indeed, that was the conclusion attained by the Quraishis whom were released from killing and slavery on the hands of the Prophet. That was their reward for the Prophet during his lifetime. All these were practiced through the great aid provided by a good

deal of the Prophet's companions

### OMAR THE CALIPH ATTESTS TERGIVERSATION OF THE QURAISHI

:At-Tabari's Tarikh; ٣/٤٢٤

Al-Hassan Al-Basri: Omar was informed that the Quraishi celebrities had complained his decision of detaining them in Al-Madina unless a permission is gotten and a deadline is instituted. He ascended the pulpit and orated I describe Islam as a camel. In its emergence, Islam was the like of a one year old camel. It became two year old, four year old, six year old and, in the final, it

p: ٢٢٢

became senile. Nothing but decrease comes after senility. Islam is going towards senility. The Quraishis are aiming at having God's wealth entirely for themselves This shall never be as long as son of Al-Khattab is alive. I am to keep standing on \*the entrance of the city for intercepting the Quraishis from falling in the fire

A similar report is recorded on page ٤٠١ of part ٢ of the same book

.This situation includes a number of points we are to refer to few of them

These were words of a Quraishi chief whose tribal loyalty was beyond any .١

dispute. It was he who carried the pennon of Quraish and called for their meritoriousness in succeeding the Prophet, in the face of Ansar and the Hashemites

He also was engaged in many forbidding struggles, till he could extricate the leadership from the Prophet's household and Ansar. He then served the Quraishi

'chiefs with that pure leadership, and they named him 'core of Quraish

,These words were a testimony averring that the Quraishi Muhajirs were deviate .۲

.that they should be detained in Al-Madina in order not to mislead the Muslims

After assuming the actuality of the Quraishi Muhajirs, it became more evident to

understand hiddens of the Quraishi 'released' whom should never cease -their

trickeries against Islam- unless Ali's sword would play on their heads, as the Prophet

.peace be upon him and his family) predicted)

These words comprise a picture of Omar's imagination respecting the short period .۲

of Islam, and its imminent termination. Omar likened Islam to any political circle

p: ۲۲۳

that passed on the Arab Peninsula and other territories, and would be vanquished

.soon

Through various texts, it was corroborated that Omar; the caliph, believed that Islam

would not last for more ages. He also believed that other nations would soon invade

the Muslims' territories, especially Mecca the people of which would desert and

.cause it to be ruined

.Kabul-Ahbar might be the originator of such false prophecies

The same report is recorded on page ۷۵ of part ۱۳ of Kenzul Ummal and page ۷۷۹\*

of part ۲ of Ibn Shebba's Tarikhul Madina, on which the last sentence of the report

is written down in the following form: "I am to keep standing on the entrance of the

”city for intercepting the Quraishis from leading Mohammed’s nation to atheism

## CHAPTER TWO

### VERSE OF ISMA

#### ORDER OF THE VERSE

In the Name of Allah, the Beneficent, the Merciful

And the Jews say: The hand of Allah is tied up! Their hands shall be shackled  
,and they shall be cursed for what they say. Nay, both His hands are spread out  
He expends as He pleases; and what has been revealed to you from your Lord  
will certainly make many of them increase in inordinacy and unbelief; and We  
have put enmity and hatred among them till the day of resurrection; whenever  
they kindle a fire for war Allah puts it out, and they strive to make mischief in  
.the land, and Allah does not love the mischief makers

And if the followers of the Book believed and guarded against evil, We would

p: ۲۲۴

certainly have covered their evil deeds and We would certainly have made them  
.enter gardens of bliss

And if they had kept up the Torah and the Bible and that which was revealed to  
them from their Lord, they would certainly have eaten from above them and  
from beneath their feet; there is a party of them keeping to the moderate  
.course, and as for most of them, evil is that which they do

O Apostle! Deliver what has been revealed to you from your Lord; and if you do it not, then you have not delivered His message, and Allah will protect you from

.the people; surely Allah will not guide the unbelieving people

Say: O followers of the Book! You follow no good till you keep up the Torah and

the Bible and that which is revealed to you from your Lord; and surely that

which has been revealed to you from your Lord shall make many of them

increase in inordinacy and unbelief; grieve not therefore for the unbelieving

.people

Surely those who believe and those who are Jews and the Sebeans and the

Christians whoever believes in Allah and the last day and does good- they shall

have no fear not shall they grieve. Certainly We made a covenant with the

children of Israel and We sent to them apostles; whenever there came to them

an apostle with what that their souls did not desire, some of them did they call

.liars and some they slew

### **LOCATION OF THE VERSE**

.Two matters should be taken in consideration if the Quranic setting is regarded

p: ۲۲۵

.First, the Verse falls in sura of Maida; the seal of the revealed suras

Second, the Verse falls among Verses respecting manners of the Jews and the

.Christians

,Correspondingly, the Verse carries the following meaning to the Prophet: Convey and fear not the Jews and the Christians. We are to protect you against them. They shall be too short to injure you

Neither the Sunnis nor do the Shias admit this exegesis. For the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family), it added nothing new concerning the Jews and the Christians during the two months he lived after the revelation of the Verse involved. Besides, danger caused by those two parties had been removed before its revelation and they were submitted to the Prophet's regulations

From this cause, it is scrupulous to probe whether the current situation of the Verse is original, or one of the Prophet's companions pursued a personal illation in opting for it

We; the Shias, deny clearly any supposition claiming the occurrence of any form of distortion in the Holy Quran. Yet, reports assert that some companions pursued their personal inference in choosing for situations of some Verses in some suras

Accordingly, situation of the Verse intended had been subjectively, if not unintentionally, chosen

### **THE SUNNI SCHOLARS' OPINIONS**

The following six opinions are the most remarkable among the various theses related to the Verse, and assumed by the Sunni exegesists and scholars. Hitherto, there is a seventh opinion accords the Shias

First opinion: The Verse was revealed in the preliminary stage of the Prophet's

p: ٢٢٤

divine mission. When the Exalted Lord ordered him of conveying the message, the Prophet hesitated. He abstained or showed drawback. Hence, the Lord loomed and .relieved. Only then, the Prophet conveyed

This proposes that the Verse were revealed twenty-three years before the revelation .of sura of Maida

As if he deterred it, Ashafii used 'it is said' before he had referred to the previous .opinion

:Ashafii's Kitabul Umm; ٤/١٤٨

It is said that when Gabriel first carried the divine instructions of informing... people of the angelic revelation, and soliciting them to the new religion, the .Prophet became harassed as he anticipated people's belying and maligning him ...Hence, God revealed: O Apostle! Deliver what has been revealed

Many points can be adopted in repudiating this claim. First, the claim is contrary to situation of the Verse. We have already provided that sura of Maida was the seal of suras. Ashafii, himself, suspects that claim. He narrates it indirectly. He neither adopted nor did he refer it to the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). In conclusion, it is inadmissible to concede such an accusal of abstinence or hesitation during carrying the Lord's messages, for avoiding being belied, injured or killed, till

.a divine menace and tranquillity were revealed

This picture does not fit an ordinary faithful believer . How is it then for the sinless

Prophet (peace be upon him and his family), who was the most faithful and courageous?! A good deal of Quranic texts attested that he (peace be upon him and his family) was bettering in conveying the Lord's instructions, and was exceedingly

p: ٢٢٧

.interesting in guiding people to the right path

### **ASHAFII'S INDIRECT REPORTS**

:As-Suyouti's Ad-Durrul Manthour; ٢/٢٩٨

Al-Hassan Al-Basri: The Prophet (peace be upon him) said: I showed detestation for my Lord's giving me the orders of conveying His message to people, since I realized that people would belie me. The Lord threatened if I decline, He would

\*"...subdue. That is His saying: O Apostle! Deliver

Ibn Jureij: The Prophet (peace be upon him) feared people of Quraish till the .revelation of the Verse: O Apostle!...and Allah will protect you from the people

".Only then, he was relieved. He said frequently, "Let them disappoint

Mujahid: When God revealed: Deliver what has been revealed to you from your

Lord..., the Prophet supplicated: "O my Lord! I am alone. How should I behave when people unite against me?" Then, God revealed: And if you do it not, then

\*\*...you have not delivered His message

Al-Anbari: During his dwelling in Mecca, the Prophet was used to declaring only  
'a part of the Quranic texts revealed to him, due to anticipating the polytheists

...injuring his companions and him

-The previous reports lack documentation. They are mere sayings of Al-Hassan Al-Basri, Mujahid and their likes. Next, we are to prove that Al-Hassan Al-Basri aims at achieving something private through publicizing such wording, and that he cited his saying from the Prophet's sermon of Ghadir, but he was too coward to report the  
.truth

### **THE INDIRECT REPORTS ARE ESTIMABLE OPINIONS**

Exegesists realize that the Verse was revealed during the Prophet's last days, and

p: ٢٢٨

realize that allocating an incident occurred in the prefatory stage of his advocacy to  
the exegesis of the Verse was no more than wordings of the false scholars of the  
Umayyid reign or reports of doubtful documentation. Notwithstanding, they flagrantly  
take the Verse twenty-three years back. It is quite odd to see considerate names,  
such

.as Az-Zamakhshari and Al-Fakhr Ar-Razi, lay among such exegesists

All that is taken for nothing other than evading allocating the exegesis of the Quranic  
text to the Ghadir declaration of fealty. In truth, they had two choices only; either

allocating the former incident to the exegesis, or adopting the false reports respecting cancellation of the watch on the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). This fable is violated by sequence of the historical events, as well as context of the Verse .intended

:Az-Zamakhshari's Al-Keshaf; ١/٤٥٩

.The same is recorded in Al-Wahidi's Asbabun Nuzoul; ١/٤٣٨\*

The same is recorded on page ١٣٩ of part ١ of Al-Wahidi's Asbabun Nuzoul, and\*\*

.page ١٩٨ of part ٦ of At-Tabari's Tafsir

The meaning of God's saying, (And Allah will protect you from the people), is that the Lord provides a promise of protecting the Prophet.. against being killed :only! It is also narrated that the Prophet said

I showed detestation for the Lord's ordering me of conveying His message to people. He then threatened a punishment if I abstain. He also guaranteed protecting .me. Only then I regained vigor

.The same is recorded in Al-Waseet; ٢/٢٠٨

:Ar-Razi's Tafsir; ٦:١٢/٤٨-٥٠

...Exegesis of God's saying: O Apostle! Deliver what has been

p: ٢٢٩

Al-Hassan: The Prophet said: I showed detestation for my Lord's giving me the orders of conveying His message to people, since I realized that people, including

.the Jews and the Christians, would belie me, and the Quraishis would threaten me

When the Lord revealed: (O Apostle! Deliver...,) my entire apprehensions were  
.removed

Regarding God's saying: (And Allah will protect you from the people,) it be may  
be asked how it is possible to regard this statement when it is well known that the

.Prophet's face was scratched during the battle of Uhud

There are two answers for this wonderment. First, the Verse intends protection

.against being killed. Second, the Verse was revealed after the battle of Uhud

:Ar-Razi is not accurate in relating Al-Hassan's wording. He adds the statement

including the Jews and the Christians,' since he intends to specify the protection'

against aggressions of the Jews and the Christians, so that he would be able to take

?away the Quraishis

At any rate, we should not blame him for cherishing the Quraishis generally, and his

forefather; Abu Bakr Bin Abi Qehafa specifically. We only demand with the

objective honesty. No single indication to the Jews and the Christians is shown in the

whole reference books that record Al-Hassan's previous wording. Later on, the

reader will learn that Al-Hassan excerpted his wording from the Prophet's sermon of

.Ghadir

Excelling Ar-Razi and the others, Ibn Kutheir outdoes exceedingly when he records

:the following in his Al-Bidaya Wen-Nihaya; ۳/۵۳

Ali: "When God revealed: (And warn your nearest relations,) the Prophet ...

p: ۲۳۰

peace be upon him) asked me to cook a ... The Prophet spoke: "Which one of you is to settle my debts and he will be my successor among my people?" As he

–anticipated loss, Al-Abbas kept silence. I had to keep silence as I revered Al-Abbas's being elder. In the second time I spoke after I had seen Al-Abbas keep

"...silent. The Prophet attested

The Prophet (peace be upon him) anticipated being killed as soon as he would convey the Lord's message to the Arab polytheists. Therefore, he aimed at nominating his successor that would guard his people after his decease. He could

.trust a man who would be committing himself to this responsibility

...Anyhow, the Lord secured His Apostle when He revealed: (O Apostle! Deliver

.Approximately, the same is recorded in As-Sira; ۱/۴۶۰

Ibn Kutheir does slip and serve his fanaticism very much. He cuts off the prophetic text regarding God's saying: (And warn your nearest relations,) and erases the Prophet's carrying out God's mandate of nominating a successor. Instead, the man records a contorted text and explains that the Prophet's asking the Hashemites for a successor who would be the guardian of his people and the settler of his debts, came

(due to his anticipating being killed by the Quraishis. Ali (peace be upon him) volunteered. When the Verse was revealed, such a succession became invalid

Ibn Kutheir, purposefully, disregards the fact that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) was mandated to solicit his near relatives exclusively to his

p: ٢٣١

advocacy. Neither the Quraishis nor were the others included in this solicitation

.Thereupon, the Prophet's anticipation of being killed or injured is but a fabrication

Furthermore, as much as I could conceive, none precedes or supports Ibn Kutheir in

establishing a relation between the Verse of Isma and that of warning the near

relatives. Anyway, he does not refer to the source from which he embraced that

opinion

As a matter of fact, for Ibn Kutheir, nothing is more important than misrepresenting

and fading the Prophet's words at his near relatives, and his nominating Ali as his

brother, vizier and successor. Meanwhile, he spares no efforts for taking Verse of

Isma away from sura of Maida and day of Ghadir

:The following is the Prophet's wording cut off by Ibn Kutheir

:Al-Amini's Al-Ghadir; ١/٢٠٧

The following is a quotation of At-Tabari's words, mentioned for discriminating

:the accurate and the deviation

:At-Tabari's Tarikh; ١/٢٠٧

The Prophet said:) "I have brought forth the good of this world as well as the) ...

Hereafter. The Exalted Lord has given me the order of soliciting you all to this

matter. Which one of you is to support me, and shall be my brother, heir and  
"successor

Ali went on narrating:) I was the youngest among the attendants who utterly  
"spurned. I spoke: "I will, God's messenger. I will be your supporter in this affair

The Prophet took me from the neck and declared: "This is my brother, heir and  
successor. Listen and comply with him." The attendants went out laughing and

p: ۲۳۲

addressing at my father: "Well, he has ordered you of listening and complying  
"with your son

Al-Amini:) As he decides it as authentic, Abu Jafar Al-Iskafi; the Theologist)

.Mutazilite, records the same words in his Naqdul Othmaniya

:It is also recorded in the following reference books

.Burhanuddin's Anbau Nujeba Il-Abna; ۴۶-۸

.Ibnul Athir's Al-Kamil; ۲/۲۴

.Ad-Dimeshqi's Tarikh; ۱/۱۱۶

Al-Khafaji's Sharhu Shifa; ۳/۳۷. (In this book, the last statement of the narrative

is cut off. The compiler commentates: "In Al-Beihaqi's Delailun Nubuwa, as

(well as many other books, this narrative is authentically documented

.Al-Baghdadi's Tafsir; ۳۹.

(As-Suyouti's Jamuj Jawami; ۶/۳۹۲. (He refers it to At-Tabari

As-Suyouti's Jamuj Jawami; ٤/٣٩٧. (He refers it to the six most notable hadithists; Ibn Isaaq, Ibn Jarir, Ibn Abi Hatem, Ibn Merdawayih, Abu Naeem and

(Al-Beihaqi

.Ibn Abil-Hadid's Sharhu Nahjil Belagha; ٣/٢٥٤

,The compiler of Al-Ghadir criticizes those who misrepresented the narrative seeking the Quraishis' favor. At-Tabari, for instance, intends to make the Prophet's

words respecting Ali obscure. He records: "The Prophet then said: "This is my :brother... and so on." Ibn Kutheir, in his Al-Bidaya Wen Nihaya; ٣/٤٠, and Tafsir

.follows At-Tabari ,٣/٣٥١

-Second opinion: The Verse was revealed some time before the immigration to Al Madina. Since then, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) dispensed with .the surveillance of Abu Talib or Al-Abbas; the uncles

In the Sunni reference books of hadith, this opinion is the most widespread. It is of two sorts of narratives. The earlier shows, whether openly or suggestively, time and place of the Verse revelation, which was Mecca. The latter relates it to the Prophet's

p: ٢٣٣

canceling the surveillance, without referring, directly, to the watch practiced by Abu

.Talib or Al-Abbas

Regardless, we ought to opt for the earlier, since its origin is At-Tirmithi's relation to

.Aisha. Like many others, At-Tirmithi could perceive that Aisha had meant Mecca

:As a model of the first sort of narration, the following is cited

:As-Suyouti's Ad-Durrul Manthour; ٢/٢٩٨-٩

The Prophet (peace be upon him) narrated: During the pilgrimage season, I ...

(...was in Mina when Gabriel revealed to me God's saying: (O Apostle! Deliver

Presently, I stood erect at Al-Aqaba and shouted: "O people! He shall be granted

the Paradise that whoever supports me in conveying my Lord's message. O

,People! Declare that there is no god but Allah and that I am His messenger to you

".and you will be saved and granted the Paradise

The entire people, including women and children, began to throw me with dust

.and stones, and spew in my face, shouting: you are liar and apostate

In the midst of these moments, an inspiration came forth before me and said: "It is

now the proper time for you, if you are the Lord's messenger, to curse your

".people, like Noah when he cursed his people

I supplicated: "O Allah! Guide me people, they do not know, and support me by

".making them respond to your obedience

.Al-Abbas; my uncle, came and saved me from them

Jabir Bin Abdillah: Abu Talib used to appoint a guard for accompanying the

Prophet (peace be upon him) whenever he went out. When God revealed: (And

p: ٢٣٤

Allah will protect you from the people,) the Prophet said to his uncle: "God has

”protected me. I do not need a guard

Ibn Abbas: The Prophet was guarded. Abu Talib used to send men from the Hashemites for guarding him. “O uncle! I do no longer need those whom you are

\*.appointing for guarding me,” the Prophet said

:Majmauzzawaid; ۷/۱۷

Abu Sa’eed Al-Khidri: Al-Abbas; the Prophet’s uncle, was one of those who guarded the Prophet (peace be upon him). When God revealed: (And Allah will

\*\*protect you from the people,) the guardians stopped

This narration is also recorded on page ۲۰۵ of part ۱۱ of At-Tabarani’s Al-Mujamul\*

.Kabir

This report is recorded in At-Tabarani’s Al-Mujamus Saghir and Al-Mujamul\*\*

.Awsat. Within its narrators is Atya Al-Awfi; the doubtful

,Ibn Abbas: The Prophet (peace be upon him) was guarded. Abu Talib; his uncle :used to appoint men from the Hashemites for guarding him. When God revealed

And Allah will protect you from the people,) the Prophet said to his uncle: “The)

\*.Lord has protected me against jinn and people

;The second sort is originated by the following report recorded in At-Tirmithi’s ASunan

:۴/۳۱۷

Aisha: A surveillance was practiced on the Prophet (peace be upon him) till the

revelation of God’s saying: (And Allah will protect you from the people.) “O

people! You may leave. The Lord has protected me,” the Prophet said as he took  
his head out of his tent

.This is decided as a one-way hadith

.Others relate the same to Abdillah Bin Shaqiq, without referring to Aisha

p: ۲۳۵

Al-Hakim, in his Al-Mustedrak; ۲/۳۱۳, relates the same report to Aisha, and  
-comments: “This report is authentically documented; yet, they -Muslim and Al  
-Bukhari- avoid recording it

Seemingly, Aisha’s report proposes that the Verse was revealed in Mecca. This is  
advocated by Al-Beihaqi’s narration, recorded in his As-Sunan; ۹/۸. He also records  
the forecited saying of Ashafii, in which he claims the Prophet’s being protected  
...against being killed only

In his Tafsir; ۲/۴۱۶۰, Al-Muraghi records As-Suyouti’s earlier narration, related to  
Ibn Abbas, and At-Tabarani’s. He then comments: “At-Tirmithi relates that the  
Prophet (peace be upon him) was guarded in Mecca before the revelation of the  
”.Verse

Notwithstanding, Aisha’s report does not imply that the occurrence was in Mecca. It  
seems that the phrase ‘in Mecca’ was unintentionally erased from the origin copy of

.At-Tirmithi’s

:In his Ad-Durrul Manthour; ۲/۲۹۱, As-Suyouti records

Abd Bin Humeid, At-Tirmithi, Ibn Jarir, Ibnul-Munthir, Ibn Abi Hatem, Abu Sheikh, Abu Nueim, Al-Beihaqi, Ibn Merdawayih; all record Aisha's reporting

...that

Bearing the same indication of Aisha's report, As-Suyouti records a number of .narratives some of which hint at the fact that the occurrence was in Al-Madina

.Accordingly, we lay such narratives in an independent topic

:In Ad-Durrul Manthour; ٢/٢٩٨-٩, As-Suyouti records

Abu Sa'eed Al-Khidri: Al-Abbas; the Prophet's uncle, was one of those who ...

guarded the Prophet (peace be upon him). When God revealed: (And Allah will

.protect you from the people,) the guardians stopped

Abu Therr: We were encompassing the Prophet (peace be upon him) whenever ...

,he went to sleep, since he anticipated misfortune. When the Verse was revealed

p: ٢٣٦

.we stopped

This report is recorded by At-Tabarani. Within its narrators is An-Nadr Bin\*

.Abdirrahman; the doubtful

-A good deal of exegesists and historians adopt this opinion. As if they admit it, Az

Zamakhshari, in Al-Keshaf; ١/٦٥٩, and Ar-Razi, in Tafsir; ٦/١٢/٥٠, record the opinion while they, as it has been already cited, attest that the Verse was revealed in

Mecca. On that account, they adjudge that reports of Aisha, Al-Hassan Al-Basri and

the others talk about an occurrence happened in the early stage of the Prophet's solicitation

:Besides many others, the following scholars adopt the opinion involved

.As-Suheili, in Ar Rawdul Enif; ٢/٢٩٠

.Al-Qastalani, in Irshadus Sari; ٥/٨٦

.Ibnul Arabi, in Sharhut Tirmithi; ٦/١١/١٧٤

.Al-Eini, in Umdetul Qari; ٧/١٤/٩٥

.Ibn Jezi, in At-Tesihil; ١/٢٤٤

.An-Nuweiri, in Nihayetul Ireb; ٨/١٦/١٩٦, and ١٩/١٨/٣٤٢

.An-Nisapuri, in Al-Waseet; ٢/٢٠٩

.Ad-Demiri, in Hayatul Hayawan; ١/٧٩... etc

The compiler of As-Siratul Halabiya, attempts to impose the relation between the

Verse and the Prophet's surveillance, for framing a virtue for Abu Bakr Bin Abi

:Qehafa. On page ٣٢٧ of part ٣, he records

Before the revelation of God's saying: (And Allah will protect you from the people,) the Prophet was watched by a number of people. The night just before

,the battle of Badr, he was watched by Sa'd Bin Me'adh. On the day of the battle

he was guarded by Abu Bakr alone. This man kept on unsheathing his sword

.while the Prophet was sleeping under the canopy

This proves the self-contradiction of the compiler who, by these words, provides an

evident contrary to his intendment. If cancellation of the surveillance occurred before the immigration, then surveillance of Abu Bakr and others during the battle of Badr would be ineffective. In addition, it is questionable to believe that the Muslims used .canopies during that battle

Finally, Al-Hakim records an authentically documented narration implying that third of the Muslims guarded the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) during the battle of Badr. This is rational, since they resided the uncovered low area of the .battlefield

:Al-Hakim's Al-Mustedrak; ۲/۳۲۶

:As he was asked about sura of Anfal, Ebada Bin As-Samit spoke

The sura regarded us. We; the Muslims, were three groups. The first was fighting the foes. The second was gathering the spoils and capturing the prisoners. The ...third was guarding the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) near the tent

The following points show invalidity of the opinion of creating a relationship between Verse of Isma and the surveillance practiced on the Prophet (peace be upon :him and his family

.First, the forecited discussion of the first opinion

Second, the same narratives of the third opinion that claimed that cancellation of the .surveillance had occurred in Al-Madina, not Mecca

Third, the major reports that support the opinion involved are Aisha's and report of Al-Abbas's watching the Prophet. The others are not documented. In fact, the purpose beyond most of such reports was disregarding Abu Talib's role in upholding the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family), and aiming at proving that the Prophet dispensed with Abu Talib's surveillance in Mecca

p: ۲۳۸

The earliest report aims for giving Al-Abbas Abu Talib's role of guarding the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) in Mecca, and being the one by whom the Lord protected His Apostle against people

Truly, Al-Abbas, before the immigration, played an ordinary role. Like the other Hashemites, he sympathized with the Prophet and suffered the blockade in that col. In addition, it is unproved that he embraced Islam or immigrated to Al-Madina, like Ali and Hamza. The most common thing is that Al-Abbas was captured during the battle of Badr, and he embraced Islam only when he, as well as the other prisoners was released. Al-Heithami and others decide inauthenticity of the report involved

-Frivolity and fickleness of the report support so. Later on, we are to cite Al

Albania's proving the inaccuracy of Aisha's being the reporter of that narrative

Third, the evidences on the continuity of watching the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) and invalidity of reports narrating the opposite, including the one

involved, are clear

The third opinion is that the Verse was revealed in Al-Madina without an identified date. As-Suyouti records a number of narratives showing no specific time for its revelation, though he connects them to the matter of canceling surveillance practiced on the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). Thereabouts, from some of such .narratives, it can be understood that the Verse was revealed in Al-Madina

:Ad-Durrul Manthour; ٢٩٨-٩

Isma Bin Malik Al-Khatmi: We were used to watching the Prophet (peace be ...

p: ٢٣٩

upon him) at nights till the revelation of God's saying: (And Allah will protect

(.you from the people

Sa'eed Bin Jubeir: When God revealed: (And Allah will protect you from the ...

people,) the Prophet said: "Do not watch me any longer. My Lord has protected

".me

Abdullah Bin Shaqiq: Some of the Prophet's companions were guarding him ...

whenever he went out. When God revealed: (And Allah will protect you from the

people,) the Prophet said: "O people! Go to your normal duties. Allah has

".protected me against people

Mohammed Bin Ka'b Al-Quradi: The Prophet's companions were guarding ...

him till the revelation of God's saying: (And Allah will protect you from the

people.) The surveillance was canceled as the Lord informed His Apostle of

.protecting against people

Ar-Rabi Bin Anas: The Prophet was guarded by his companions till the ...

(...revelation of God's saying: (O Apostle! Deliver

In Tarikhul Madinetil Munawara; ١/٣٠١, Ibn Sheba relates the same report to

;Abdullah Bin Shaqiq and Mohammed Bin Kab Al-Quradi. At-Tabari, in Tafsir

relates it to Abdullah Bin Shaqiq. For Ibn Sa'd, he also records the report in ٤/١٩٩

.At-Tabaqat; ١/١/١١٣. Similarly, Al-Beihaqi records it in Delailun Nubuwa; ٢/١٨٠

Through the entire reports respecting the Prophet's history, it is proved that he  
(peace be upon him and his family) was seeking the Arab tribes' protection, so that

he would convey his Lord's message. Ansar swore allegiance to him on the  
conditions of protecting his household and him as same as they protect they families  
and themselves. This invalidates the claim of the Verse's revelation in Mecca. Had

p: ٢٤٠

the Verse been revealed in Mecca, the Prophet would not have been in need for such

.protection and covenant

Reference books of hadith, Tafsir and history are filled in with the numberless  
narratives concerning the surveillance practiced on the Prophet (peace be upon him  
and his family) in Mecca and Al-Madina, especially in conditions of wars. It is  
.proved that such a surveillance lasted till the final hours of the Prophet's lifetime

Chapters were written as regards the surveillance practiced on the Prophet, stories

occurred during such situations of surveillance and names of the guards. All these  
evidence invalidity of the opinion concerned  
,The strangest matter is that the same persons who record such reports and stories  
assert that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) had canceled the  
,surveillance in Mecca or after the immigration when the Verse of Isma was revealed  
!!as if they vowed they should take the Verse away from the incident of Ghadir  
From the previous, we have to reject any report respecting the total cancellation of  
the surveillance before the incident of Ghadir. We have cited Al-Hakim's report  
relating that the Prophet was guarded by a third of the Muslims during the battle of  
.Bard

:Ahmed's Al-Musnad; 2/222

A number of the Prophet's companions guarded him, while he was offering  
.prayers after the midnight just before the battle of Tabuk  
The same is recorded in Kenzul Ummal; 12/430, and related to Abdullah Bin Amr  
Bin Al-As. The compiler of Majmauzzawaid rules authenticity of the same report  
.when he writes it down on page 267 of part 10.

p: 241

.By the way, battle of Tabuk occurred in the last year of the Prophet's life

:Uyounul Athar; 2/402

During the battle of Badr, Sa'd Bin Me'adh guarded the Prophet who slept in his

.canopy. Mohammed Bin Muslima was his guard during the battle of Uhud

During that of Khandaq, Az-Zubeir Bin Al-Awam was his guard. In Kheibar, the

Prophet was guarded by Abu Ayoub Ansari. It is said that the Prophet

supplicated: "O Allah! Protect Abu Ayoub for his protecting me." Bilal, Sa'd Bin

.Abi Waqas and Dekwan Bin Abd Qeis were the Prophet's guards in Wadil-Qira

:Ebad Bin Bishr was the commander of the Prophet's guards. When God revealed

.And Allah will protect you from the people,) the surveillance was canceled)

As he had to find an answer for the reports pertaining to guarding the Prophet (peace

be upon him and his family) during the battle of Tabuk, the compiler interprets

'guarding' into 'waiting'

:Uyounul Athar; 1/119

Regarding Amr Bin Shueib's report concerning guarding the Prophet, who was

offering prayers, the night before the battle of Tabuk, it seems that they were

:waiting for him. Surveillance was vacated since the revelation of God's saying

(.And Allah will protect you from the people)

.That was before the battle of Tabuk. God, however, is the most knowledgeable

.This interpretation is contrary to the text of the reports regarding that surveillance

.Anyhow, such reports refute the claim that the Verse was revealed in Mecca

It is now concluded that the claim of cancellation of the surveillance practiced on the

Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) lacks evidence through history of the Prophet's lifetime. On the contrary, there is an evidence on continuation of such a surveillance. It is proved that the Hashemites guarded the Prophet in Mecca and altogether with the rest of his companions, in Al-Madina, till the last days of his lifetime.

As much as a personal viewpoint is concerned, it seems that the trial of dedicating the Verse to the claim of cancellation of the surveillance denotes the accuracy of the

Prophet's progeny's explanation that the Verse stands for protection against apostasy. From this cause, the dissidents aimed importunately at citing the material protection and cancellation of the surveillance as the interpretation of the Verse. That

led them to be engaged in contrast. Nevertheless, they had to disregard stories relating the Prophet's being guarded, and had to overlook the column of the guards which is still facing them in the Prophet's Mosque

Al-Albani, after he adopts and admits that the Verse was revealed in Mecca, refutes

Al-Hakim's authenticating Aisha's report he himself has already authenticated. He then mentions the report of assassinating the Prophet as an evidence on authenticity

of the previous report

The fourth opinion is that the Verse was revealed in Al-Madina in the second year

of the Prophet's immigration after the battle of Uhud

Atiya Bin Sa'd: Ebada Bin As-Samit came to the Prophet and declared his acquitting the covenant of loyalty between the Jews and him, and declared his :loyalty to God and His Apostle. Abdullah Bin Ubey, who was present, spoke

p: ۲۴۳

Considering me, I fear unexpected misfortunes. I cannot break mine." The Prophet (peace be upon him) addressed at him: "See Abu Hebbab! You have appreciated the covenant broken by Ebada. Hence; you can keep it for yourself alone." Abdullah accepted so. On that account God revealed: "O you who believe! Do not take the Jews and the Christians for friend... and Allah will ".protect you from the people

For proving the falsehood of this report, we are sufficed by mentioning that the previous narratives respecting the watch practiced on the Prophet (peace be upon ,him and his family), and that these were Atiya Bin Sa'd's words, not the Prophet and the fact that the Verses remarked in the report were ۵۱ to ۶۷ of sura of Maida which none ever could claim their revelation for the story of Abdullah Bin Ubey's loyalty to the Jews. At length, this Abdullah was deceased before the revelation of .sura of Maida

The fifth opinion is that the Verse was revealed owing to an attempt of .assassination, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) had to encounter Contradiction is the distinctive feature of reports of that assassination. Some tell that

it was during the battle of Thaturriqa, when a person approached the Prophet and asked for his sword so that he would see carefully. When the Prophet handed his sword so negligently... Others, anyhow, mention that the sword was hanged, or the Prophet was inadvertent, or was dipping his legs in a well... etc

:As-Suyouti's Ad-Durrul Manthour; ٢/٢٩٨-٩

p: ٢٤٤

Jabir Bin Abdillah: After the battle of Thaturriqa, the Prophet was reposing on a well, in which he was dipping his legs. Gawreth Bin Al-Harth informed of his determination of killing Mohammed. "How will you kill him?" asked his companions. "I will ask him to hand me his sword, and I will kill him then," said Ghawreth

O Mohammed! Give me your sword," the man asked, and the Prophet did. As soon as the man held the sword, his hands began to shiver. "God prevents you from implementing your intention," said the Prophet. Hence, God revealed: (O (...Apostle! Deliver what

Mohammed Bin Kab Al-Quradi: the Prophet was reposing under a tree when a Bedouin unsheathed his sword and shouted: "Who will protect you against me Allah will," answered the Prophet. Suddenly, the man's hands shivered, and he could no longer have the sword. (Others added) He rammed his head to a tree, and his cerebrum was scattered. Hence, God revealed: (And Allah will protect you

(from the people

Abu Huraira: The Prophet was reposing under the largest tree we used to select on  
journeys. He was hanging his sword to that tree. A man came and drew the sword

shouting: "O Mohammed! Who will protect you against me." "Allah will protect

me against you," said the Prophet (peace be upon him), "Put that sword away

(Hence, God revealed: (And Allah will protect you from the people

Others mention that a person was arrested while he was trying to assassinate the

Prophet. This report is recorded in Ad-Durrul Manthour; ٢/٢٩٩

p: ٢٤٥

The following points are evidences on invalidity of that opinion and invalidity of the

:revelation of the Verse for the occasion

first, As Ibn Husham records in As-Sira; ٣/٢٢٥, the battle of Thaturriqa occurred in

the year ٤ A.H. Many years after this date, sura of Maida was revealed. Some

reports, besides, refer to no definite date. Others are logically unacceptable

Second, the main reference books that record the story of Ghawrath and the battle of

Thaturriqa do not refer to the revelation of the Verse involved then. Most of these

-reports refer to amendment of the ritual prayer of anticipating dangers -Salat Al

Khawf- and the application of more watchful surveillance on the Prophet (peace be

upon him and his family) during prayers

These points are sufficiently acceptable for refuting the claim of the revelation of the

.Verse on such occasions

Ibn Husham allocated God's saying: (O you who believe! Remember Allah's favor on you when a people had determined to stretch forth their hands towards you, but He withheld their hands from you...), as the Verse revealed on that occasion.\* This is

.also inaccurate, since the Verse allocated is also in sura of Maida

-Al-Bukhari, as well as many others, allocated the amendment of the ritual Salat Al Khawf, and the application of more watchful surveillance on the Prophet, due to that

.incident

:Al-Bukhari's Sahih; ٥/٥٣

Jabir Bin Abdillah: ... The Prophet reposed under a tree to which he hanged his sword. We slumbered. We were awoken by the Prophet's loud voice. When we

p: ٢٤٦

:approached, we could see a Bedouin sit before him. The Prophet then related

.Ibn Husham's As-Sira; ٣/٢٢٧\*

While I was sleeping, this man unsheathed my sword. I woke up and saw him“ raise it towards me, and said: ‘Who will protect you against me?’ ‘God will,’ I answered. This is the result, you can see.” The Prophet, however, abstained from .punishing him

Another form of the report:) Jabir Bin Abdillah: In Thaturriqa, the Prophet) reposed under a large tree we left. A polytheist came and unsheathed the

Prophet's sword which was hanged to the tree, and said: "Well, now you should fear me." "No, I should not," answered the Prophet. "Who will protect you against

... ".me?" said the man. "God will

.That man was Ghawrath Bin Al-Harth

The same is recorded in Al-Hakim's Al-Mustedrak; ٣/٢٩, in which he refers to the amendment of the ritual Salat Al-Khawf, and the application of more watchful surveillance on the Prophet. He also decides authenticity of the report according to the criteria of Muslim and Al-Bukhari who did not record it. For Ahmed, he refers to Ghawrath's story on pages ٣٦٤ and ٣٩٠ of part ٣, when he refers to the amendment of the ritual Salat Al-Khawf and disregards the revelation of the Verse. The reader .may refer to part ٤ page ٥٩ of the same reference book

Except referring to the revelation of the Verse, varied details of the story are written .down in Al-Heithami's Majmauzzawaid; ٩/٨

;The most acceptable form of Ghawrath's story is recorded in Al-Kuleini's Al-Kafi

p: ٢٤٧

:٨/١٢٧

Abu Abdillah (peace be upon him): While the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) was reposing under a tree lying on the edge of a valley, a torrent came between his companions and him. A polytheist determined to kill him. He ,attacked the Prophet with his sword, shouting: "Who will protect you against me

Mohammed?” “Your and my Lord will,” answered the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). Immediately, Gabriel knocked that man down his pack animal. The Prophet took the sword and sat on his chest, saying: “Now, who will protect you against me, Ghawrath?” “Your benevolence and charity will,” said the man. Forthwith, the Prophet left him. The man stood up shouting: “By God I swear, you are better and more benevolent than me

Hence, the most remarkable reference books of hadith are empty of any mentioning for the revelation of the Verse during the battle of Thaturriqa or on the occasion of Ghawrath’s attempt of assassination. Secondly, it is noticeable that the Prophet ordered of more watchful surveillance, even during offering prayers, after that incident

Adopters of this opinion may have understood that meaning of canceling the surveillance have become that the Prophet suspected the divine protection; therefore

!!he ordered of more watchful surveillance

The following exchange of opinions between Ibn Hajar and Al-Qurtubi is only a part of their confusedness in inventing a relationship between the revelation of Verse of Isma and Ghawrath’s story. Al-Qurtubi pronounces that the Prophet’s being alone during events of the story involved is an evidence on his being not put under

.surveillance. This leads to the notion that Verse of Isma has been already revealed  
Ibn Hajar answers: “No. The Verse was revealed on that day specifically. Hence, the  
guards’ job was canceled. Before so, the Prophet’s conviction was increasing or  
decreasing. He took guards whenever his confidence became decreasing, and he  
canceled so when it became increasing. During events of Ghawrath’s story, the  
”.Prophet’s confidence was considerable; therefore, he was not guarded  
:Fetihul Bari; ٨/٢٧٥٢

Al-Qurtubi says: “Such reports assert that the Prophet, on that time, was not  
guarded. Until the revelation of God’s saying: (And Allah will protect you from  
”.the people), the Prophet had been guarded

As an answer to this claim, I am to cite that according to Abu Huraira’s report, it  
is believed that the Verse was revealed immediately after Ghawrath’s attempting  
to assassinate the Prophet. Hence, it is most probably to say that the Prophet had  
the option of appointing guards or shunning so. For his great conviction, the  
Prophet was left without guards during that incident. Soon after that incident and  
.the revelation of the Verse, he canceled surveillance

Ibn Hajar misses the fact that sura of Maida was revealed in the year ١٠ A.H., and  
the battle of Thaturriqa occurred in the year ٩ A.H., and that Abu Huraira put his  
.feet, for the first time, in Al-Madina in the year ٧ A.H

He also misses that Salat Al-Khawf and the watchful surveillance were legislated in

Thaturriqa. Nevertheless, the man sets an explanation for Al-Bukhari's report  
respecting Salat Al-Khawf

p: ۲۴۹

All that was aimed at taking Verse of Isma away from the incidents on Ghadir  
Khum. Ibn Hajar's mind, however, is filled in with the instructions of inventing a  
relationship between Verse of Isma and the Prophet's being guarded

Reports of the Prophet's being guarded during the battle of Tabuk, which occurred  
six years after that of Thaturriqa, have been forecited. Through authentic reports, it is  
proved that the Prophet was guarded even during conquest of Mecca which occurred  
four years after the forecited incident. Al-Bukhari records that Muslims were  
guarding the Prophet during conquest of Mecca

:Al-Bukhari's Sahih; ۵/۹۱

Husham: ...People of Quraish were informed of the Prophet's progressing  
towards Mecca. Abu Sufian Bin Harb, Hakim Bin Huzam and Badil Bin Warqa  
...went out for... The Prophet's guards could capture them

Ibn Husham, in As-Sira; ۴/۲۱, mentions that the column of guards that is still  
standing in the Holy Prophet's Mosque, could gain this name in the year ۹ A.H  
supposing adopters of this opinion can deny the matter of the Prophet's being  
guarded, how can they deny that column, then

The sixth opinion is that time of the revelation of the Verse is not identified, and the

matter of the Prophet's being guarded has nothing to do with the Verse, and that the Verse is a general wording refers to the Prophet's being mandated on conveying the

.Lord's message, lest, he should not be regarded as a conveyor

:Ad-Durrul-Manthour; ٢/٢٩٩

Qetada: In this Verse, the Lord acquaints His Apostle that he shall protect him

p: ٢٥٠

...against people. The Lord, also, orders him of conveying the message

To great extent, this opinion is similar to the first. The previous topics may be enough for refutation. Besides, reports of this opinion are not documented and not

.applying the meaning of the Verse generally, and the clause of its issue

.The last opinion is that concordant to the Prophet's progeny's

:Ad-Durrul-Manthour; ٢/٢٩٨

Abu Sa'eed Al-Khidri: the Verse, (O Apostle! Deliver...,) was revealed to the

Prophet (peace be upon him) on the day of Ghadir, regarding Ali Bin Abi Talib's

.concern

Ibn Masud: Before the Prophet (peace be upon him), we used to recite the Verse

- in this form: (O Apostle! Deliver what has been revealed to you from your Lord

regarding the matter that Ali is being the leader of the believers- and if you do it

(.not, then you have not delivered His message

:Al-Miyaru Wel Muwazana; ٢١٣

Jabir Bin Abdillah and Abdullah Bin Al-Abbas: The Prophet took apprehensions from the Lord's giving him the orders of nominating Ali as the next leader, and declaring people's being obligatorily loyal to him. He anticipated people's accusing him of favoring his cousin exclusively. Hence, God revealed: (O

(...Apostle! Deliver

.On that day in Ghadir Khum, the Prophet delivered that message to people

:As a footnote of the previous report, the following is cited

:As-Suyouti's Ad-Durrul Manthour

Abu Sa'eed Al-Khidri: After the Prophet (peace be upon him) had nominated Ali

as the next leader and asked people to declare their loyalty to him, Gabriel

p: ٢٥١

descended with God's saying: (This day have I completed your religion for you

(...and perfected My favor on you

The same report is recorded by Al-Hassakani, in Shawahidut Tanzil; ١/١٥٧

hadith: ٢١١ and on. Ibn Asakir records it in Tarikhu Dimeshq; ٢/١٨٥, Chapter: Ali

.Bin Abi Talib's Lifetime; hadith: ٥٨٥-٦

-Al-Khatib, Al-Hassakani, Ibn Asakir, Ibn Kutheir, Al-Khawarzmi and Ibnul

:Meghazili relate the following wording of Abu Huraira

He shall be granted the reward of a sixty month fasting, that whoever fasts on the

eighteenth of Dhu'l-Hijja. That is the day of Ghadir when the Prophet (peace be

upon him) took Ali Bin Abi Talib from the hand and said: “I am the master of the believers, aren’t I?” “Yes, you are. God’s messenger!” affirmed people. “He .whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master,” the Prophet declared ,Congratulations, son of Abu Talib!” Omar Bin Al-Khattab addressed at Ali“ ”.You have become my master, and the master of every Muslim“ Then, God revealed: (This day have I completed your religion for you and (...perfected My favor on you

For seekers of more information, the ceaseless consecutive written works apropos :this topic should be referred. The following names are cited as examples

.Ibn Uqda’s Ar-Risala

.At-Tabari’s Hadithul Ghadir

.Ad-Darqutni’s Hadithul Ghadir

.At-Thehbi’s

.Ubeidullah Al-Hasakani’s

.Masud As-Sejistani’s

.Al-Amini’s Kitabul Ghadir

.Abaqatul Anwar; Chapter: Hadithul Ghadir ...etc

:Tafsirul Mizan; ٦/٥٤

.The following is quoted from At-Thalabi’s Tafsir

Jafar Bin Mohammed: God’s saying: (O Apostle! Deliver what has been revealed

to you from your Lord;), refers to Ali. Immediately after this revelation, the

p: ٢٥٢

:Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) took Ali from the hand and declared

”He whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master“

Ibn Abbas: The Verse was revealed in Ali Bin Abi Talib’s concern. The Lord gave the Prophet the orders of conveying Ali’s obligatory loyalty to people. The

Prophet took Ali from the hand and declared: “He whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master. O Allah! Accede to whomever accedes to him, and antagonize

”.whomever antagonizes him

:Al-Ghadir; ١/٢١٤

The holy Verse was revealed on the eighteenth of Dhu’l-Hijja, ١٠ A.H., the year of the Farewell Pilgrimage. When the Prophet resided in Ghadir Khum, Gabriel descended: “O Mohammed! Allah greets you and say; ‘O Apostle! Deliver what has been revealed to you –regarding Ali’s affair– from your Lord; and if you do it not, then you have not delivered His message, and Allah will protect you from the  
””.people

,The foregoing people, who were more than one hundred thousand individuals (were about to reach Al-Juhafa. The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family gave his orders of returning those foregoing ones, and confining the late in that place. He decided to nominate Ali as the leader of people and inform them the

divine mandate of delivering His message of selecting Ali as the leader of the  
nation and protecting him against people

For the Imamites, this affair is too authentic to be discussed. Yet, we should  
provide reports of the Sunnis as evidences

Al-Amini, thereafter, refers to thirty Sunni reference books that relate reports

p: ۲۵۳

respecting the revelation of the Verse for Ali's leadership. We are to refer to some in  
brief

At-Tabari, Abu Jafar Mohammed Bin Jarir (...-۳۱۰.) In his Al-Wilaya, he records ۱

the following report

Zaid Bin Arqam: When he was back from the Farewell Pilgrimage, the Prophet  
peace be upon him) resided in Ghadir Khum. It was the first hours of that extremely  
hot day when he gave his orders of sweeping the elevated land, and gathered people  
As soon as we were before him, the Prophet sermonized so eloquently. He said: "The

...Lord has revealed to me, (O Apostle! Deliver

(Al-Handali, Ibn Abi Hatem Abu Mohammed Ar-Razi (...-۳۲۷.) ۲

Al-Mehamili, Abu Abdillah (...-۳۳۰.) In his Al-Amali, he relates the report to Ibn ۳

Abbas

Al-Farisi, Abu Bakr Ashirazi (...-۴۰۷.) He relates the report to Ibn Abbas ۴

Ibn Merdawayih (۳۲۳-۴۱۶). To Abu Sa'eed Al-Khidri, he relates the report that ۵

the Verse was revealed on that day in Ghadir Khum, for showing the leadership of

:Ali Bin Abi Talib. He also records the following saying of Ibn Masud

Before the Prophet (peace be upon him), we used to recite the Verse in this form: (O

Apostle! Deliver what has been revealed to you from your Lord –regarding the matter

that Ali is the leader of the believers– and if you do it not, then you have not

(.delivered His message

Athalabi, Abu Isaaq An-Nisapuri (...-٤٢٧.) He relates the report in his Al-Keshfu .٤

.Wel-Bayan

,Alisbahani, Abu Naeem (...-٤٣٠.) In his Ma Nazala Minel Qur’ani Fi Haqqi Ali .٥

p: ٢٥٤

...he relates

Al-Wahidi, Abul-Hassan An-Nisapuri, (...-٤٤٨.) In his Asbabun Nuzoul, he .٨

...relates

...As-Sejistani, Abu Sa’eed, (...-٤٧٧.) In his Al-Wilaya .٩

Al-Hasakani, Al-Hakim Abul-Qasim. In Shawahidut Tanzil Li Qawaidit .١٠

...Tafdhili Wet Tawil

Ibn Asakir, Abul-Qasim Ashafii (...-٤٧١.) He relates the report to Abu Sa’eed .١١

...Al-Khidri

...An-Natnazi, Abul-Fatih. In His Al-Khasaisul Alawiya .١٢

:Ar-Razi, Fakhruddin Ashafii (...-٤٠٤.) In his At-Tafsirul Kabir; ٣/٤٣٤ .١٣

:The Verse was revealed for Ali. The Prophet took him from the hand and declared

”He whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master“

An-Naseebi, Abu Salim Ashafii (...-٤٥٢.) He relates it on page ١٤ of Metalibus .١٤

...Sa’oul

(...-Ar-Rasani, Izzuddin Al-Mosuli Al-Hanbali (٥٨٩ .١٥

Al-Hamawini, Abu Isaaq (...-٧٢٢.) In Feraidus Semtain, he relates to Abu .١٤

...Huraira

:Al-Hamadani, Ali (...-٧٨٩.) In Mawaddetul Qurba, he records .١٧

Al-Bera Bin Azib: I accompanied the Prophet in the journey back from the Farewell Pilgrimage. As we reached Ghadir Khum, he gathered people. He sat to

,a tree and took Ali from the hand, and shouted: “I am preferred to your souls

aren’t I?” “Yes, you are, God’s messenger!” asserted people. “He whosever

master was I, Ali shall be his master . O Allah! Accede to whomever accedes to

.him, and oppose whomever opposes him,” declared the Prophet

,Omar (God be pleased to him) met Ali and addressed at him: “Congratulations

Ali Bin Abi Talib! You have become my master, and the master of every male

...and female believer.” That was the result of God’s saying: (O Apostle! Deliver

;Al-Eini, Badruddin (٧٩٢-٨٥٥.) In his Umdetul Qari Fi Sharhi Sahihil Bukhari .١٨

p: ٢٥٥

...٨/٥٨٤

The opinion concordant to the Prophet's progeny's, in regard to the aim beyond the revelation of the Verse, has been kept in the Sunni reference books of hadith. This matter seems unfamiliar since it collapses the bases which the Quraishis spared no efforts for convincing the Muslims of. These bases regarded the question of the .(imamate and succession of the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

From this cause, it is arresting that Nassibites are incensed for the presence of reports .of Ghadir and their likes on various pages of the Sunni reference books of hadith

They wished nothing of such reports and narratives had been written down in such reference books. For the above, they went on launching showers of insults and accusations to the Shias and their scholars for their viewing and referring to these reports in such books. Instead, they should have studied such reports on the light of .the Quran and the unanimous prophetic texts

:Al-Albani's Salsalatul Ahadithis Sahiha; 5/644

The Prophet was guarded. When God revealed: (And Allah will protect you ... from the people,) he took his head out of the tent and ordered the guards of ...leaving him since he was protected by the Lord

Al-Hakim's deciding authenticity of the previous report, related to Aisha, is .inaccurate. Yet, At-Thehbi also decides so

At any rate, the report is authentic, since it is testified by the following report of Abu Huraira: The Prophet was reposing under the largest tree we used to select on

p: ٢٥٦

journeys. He was hanging his sword to that tree. A man came and drew the sword

shouting: "O Mohammed! Who will protect you against me this night?" "Allah

will," said the Prophet (peace be upon him)... Hence, God revealed: (And Allah

... (will protect you from the people

It is worthy mentioning that the Shias claim of the revelation of the Verse on that

day in Ghadir Khum, for Ali (God be pleased to him). This is contrary to the

forecited reports. Shias, in due course, refer to numerous narratives, most of

which are incompletely transmitted or problematic, supporting their claim. They

cite Abu Sa'eed Al-Khidri's report. As I have proved during discussing the report

numbered ٤٩٢٢, this report is forged against the man. Without any study for the

documentation, Abdul-Hussein; the Shiite, refers to a number of such narratives in

his Al-Murajaat; ٣٨. Since his only purpose was enlisting any word that may

serve his sect, Abdul-Hussein had been wont to cite any narrative as an evidence

.without paying any attention to the documentation or the discriminatory study

However, Shias adopt the rule that the ends justifies the means. Beware of this

!man and his narratives

Moreover, he used to defraud, if not lie to, the readers. During referring to the

report falsely ascribed to Abu Sa'eed Al-Khidri, for instance, the man alleges that a many compilers of the most remarkable Sunni reference books of hadith, such as

Al-Wahidi, record the narrative involved

Even the initiates know that Al-Wahidi is not one of the compilers of the four

p: ۲۵۷

most remarkable Sunni reference books of hadith. He is an exegetist that refers to authentic and doubtful reports indistinctly. Abu Sa'eed's report is doubted since it

is related by an extremely doubtful and neglected narrator

After they had declared the adoption of 'circumspection', Shias legislated forging lies against the Sunnis through their books and sermons. This matter is unveiled in

Al-Khomeini's Keshful Asrar. It is quite evident that circumspection is the

spouse of fabrication. Accordingly, Sheikhul-Islam Ibn Teimiya; the most

knowledgeable of those Shias, said: "Shias are the greatest fabricators among the

,entire sects." I myself obviously noticed the fabrication of some of their scholars

especially Abdul-Hussein. The witness has just been cited. Besides, he deludes

the readers of the prevarication that the report involved is undiscussible for the

.Sunni scholar since, as he claims, its numerous ways of narration are proved

Al-Khomeini is a greater liar. On page ۱۴۹ of his forecited book, he claims the

revelation of Verse of Isma on the day of Ghadir in which the Prophet was

ordered of declaring the imamate of Ali Bin Abi Talib. He ascribes so to the

Sunni scholars. He also decides the unanimity of Shias on that matter. God may reward that man exactly what he deserves. Later on, I am to discuss this matter more detailedly

:As an answer to Al-Albani's wording, we are to allude to the following

,First, style of insults and reviling at people, as well as issuing inaccurate judgments should be eluded. It is unrightful for Al-Albani to classify the Islamic sects according

p: ٢٥٨

to degrees of forging lies and fabricating. Sunnis, as well as Shias, have various sorts

of people among them. Yet, Nassibites are excluded by peculiar rulings. We also

should remind Al-Albani of his defending Ali (peace be upon him) and refuting Ibn

Teimiya's wronging him and denying the report of Ghadir: (He whosever master was

I, Ali shall be his master. O Allah! Accede to whomever accedes to him and oppose

;whomever opposes him.) In the same place, Al-Albani, in Al-Ahadithus Sahiha

decides authenticity of the forecited prophetic text and recognizes the ,٥/٣٣٠/١٧٥٠

right. It is most seeming that Ibn Teimiya would never be expected to give Shias

,their due since he wronged their imam and leader. On page ٣٤٤ of the same book

:Al-Albani adds

As I could perceive that Ibn Teimiya ruled the dubiety of the first half of the

Prophet's text, and decides the fabrication of the other, I had to write down these

pages and prove authenticity of the text. As much as I could descry, such an

exaggeration, issued by Ibn Teimiya, was raised due to his having been hasty in deciding inauthenticity of some prophetic texts before he studied and scrutinized. Shias are completely inaccurate in their claiming the Prophet's nominating Ali as his successor through this text and the like. This was one of the legion inventions the falsity of which has been proved by historical factualities. Supposing the Prophet had said such a thing, it should have been falling, since his words are 'revelation that is revealed,' and, finally, the Lord shall never break the promise'

p: ۲۵۹

While he criticizes Ibn Teimiya's being hasty, we could notice that Al-Albani himself was hasty when he confused the legislative instruction with the divine prediction. Far away is the previous from the latter. Provided Al-Albani's words had been right, the text he had already decided its accurate authenticity would have been invalid. In other words, the Prophet's saying: "He whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master," that Al-Albani decides its authenticity, is also seen as 'a revelation that is revealed.' Hence, such a divine prediction, as Al-Albani decides through his forecited wording, should be befalling, and that Ali should be the master and leader of the Muslims who should behave like his slaves. However, this matter did not fall. On the contrary, they attacked the house of Ali and Fatima two, or three, days after the Prophet's decease. They also threatened flaming the house if the lodgers would not come out and swear allegiance to the new leader. Finally, they coerced Ali on

.swearing his allegiance. All these events are as clear as the sun

The Prophet's saying: "Ali shall be my successor," is as same as his saying: "He whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master." If the previous is adjudged as a divine prediction, as Al-Albani claims, the second should be, too. How is it then that the meaning, historically, was modified into forcing the master on swearing ?allegiance to the follower

Both texts refer to a legislative instruction and a guide showing the Muslims their .duties so that any other circumstance would not befall

p: ۲۶۰

Second, while Al-Albani decides inauthenticity of the report dedicating Verse of Isma to the event of the congregational declaration of fealty in Ghadir, has he studies and scrutinized the reports, so that he would have the right to utter that most of these

narratives are incompletely transmitted or problematic? Did he viewe ways of -narrating the reports adopted by Athalebi, Abu Na'eem, Al-Wahidi, Abu Sa'eed As Sejistani, Al-Hasakian at al? Did he scrutinize these ways of narration so that he ?could prove that most of them were either incompletely transmitted or problematic

Did he find that any of the narrators had been neglected by him? Finally, he might !have repeated the same error of Ibn Teimiya whom he had criticized

In any event, Al-Albani still has enough time to correct his errors. We hope he would ,write down his notes respecting the discussion of the exegesis of the Verse involved

and scrutinize, on his own criteria, ways of narration and documentation we have cited, provided that he would not contradict his previous wording, and evade deciding doubtfulness of a narrator for his referring to Ali's merits, while he admits

!!and relies on his other reports that relate merits of Ali's rivals

,The following are ways of documentation quoted from a single reference book

which is Shawahidut Tanzil, compiled by Al-Hakim Al-Hasakani, Abdullah Bin Abdillah Bin Ahmed Al-Amiri Al-Qirashi; the student of Al-Hakim An-Nisapuri

:On pages ٢٥٠-٧, he writes down

-Abu Abdillah Ad-Deinuri: Ahmed Bin Mohammed Bin Isaq Bin Ibrahim As .٢٤٤

Sunni: Abdurrahaman Bin Ahamdan: Mohammed Bin Tohman Al-Absi: Ibrahim

p: ٢٤١

Bin Mohammed Bin Maymun: Ali Bin Abis: Al-Amash: Abul-Jihaf (Dawud Bin

:Abi Awf): Atiya: Abu Sa'eed Al-Khidri

The Verse: (O Apostle! Deliver what has been revealed...) was revealed for the

.affair of Ali Bin Abi Talib

-Al-Hakim Abu Abdillah Al-Hafiz: Ali Bin Abdurrahaman Bin Easa Ad .٢٤٥

Dehqan (in Kufa): Al-Hussein Bin Al-Hakam Al-Hibri: Al-Kelbi: Abu Salih: Ibn

:Abbas

The Verse: (O Apostle! Deliver what has been revealed...) was revealed for the

affair of Ali. Immediately after the revelation, the Prophet carried out. He took Ali

.from the hand and declared: “He whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master  
O Allah! Accede to whomever accedes to him, and oppose whomever opposes  
”.him

A group of people relate the narrative to Al-Hibri. In his Tafsir, As-Subeii .٢٤٦  
records it. Another group of people relate it to Al-Kelbi. In my ten-volumed  
Duawul Hudat Ila Edai Haqqil Muwalat, I provide the numerous ways of the  
.narration of the text involved

Abu Bakr As-Sukkeri: Abu Amr Al-Miqeri: Al-Hassan Bin Sufian: Ahmed .٢٤٧  
Bin Azhar: Abdurrahman Bin Amr Bin Jibilla: Omar Bin Nueim Bin Omar Bin  
:Qeis Al-Masir: His grandfather: Abdullah Bin Abi Awfa

On that day in Ghadir Khum, the Prophet recited the Verse, and raised his hands  
so upwardly that his armpits were seen. He addressed at us: “He whosever master  
was I, Ali shall be his master. O Allah! Accede to whomever accedes to him and  
”.oppose whomever opposes him. O Allah! Be the witness

Amr Bin Mohammed Bin Ahmed Al-Adl: Zahir Bin Ahmed: Abu Bakr .٢٤٨  
p: ٢٤٢

Mohammed Bin Yahya As-Sawli: Al-Mughira Bin Mohammed: Ali Bin  
:Mohammed Bin Suleiman An-Nawfali: His father: Ziyad Bin Al-Munthir

I was attendant when Abu Jafar Mohammed Bin Ali was instructing. A man  
,named Othman Al-Asha, who was relating Al-Hassan Al-Basri’s instructions

asked Abu Jafar: "O son of God's messenger! May God make me your ransom

As Al-Hassan recited God's saying: (O Apostle! Deliver...,) he instructed that it

was revealed for the affair of someone. He did not identify that one

He would have told if he had wanted. Nevertheless, he anticipated misfortunes"

spoke Abu Jafar, and narrated

Gabriel descended to the Prophet (peace be upon him) and carried the Lord's

orders of instructing people how to perform the prayers. The Prophet carried out

Then, he descended and conveyed the Lord's orders of instructing people how to

fast. The Prophet did. Then, he descended and conveyed the Lord's instructions of

leading people to their ritual pilgrimage. The Prophet did. Then, he descended

carrying the Lord's orders of leading people to their leader so that the Lord would

have the perfect claim against them. The Prophet said: "O my Lord! My people

have still born customs of Jahilism. They are filled in with rivalry and pride. Their

leader has beheaded a single man, at least, from each house of my people. I do

anticipate their dissidence." Immediately, God revealed: (O Apostle! Deliver what

has been revealed to you from your Lord; and if you do it not, then you have not

delivered His message -so completely-, and Allah will protect you from the

p: ٢٦٣

(people; surely Allah will not guide the unbelieving people

As the Prophet (peace be upon him) guaranteed the Lord's protection, he took Ali

Bin Abi Talib from the hand and said: “O people! He whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master. O Allah! Accede to whomever accedes to him, and oppose whomever opposes him, and give triumph to whomever supports him, and disappoint whomever disappoints him, and cherish whomever cherishes him, and .detest whomever detests him

Othman Al-Asha:) This narration was the ever best thing I could gain during that) journey

Ali Bin Musa Bin Isaaq: Mohammed Bin Masud Bin Mohammed: Sahl Bin .۲۴۹  
-Bahr: Al-Fadl Bin Shathan: Mohammed Bin Abi Omeir: Omar Bin Utheina: Al  
:Kelbi: Abu Salih: Ibn Abbas and Jabir Bin Abdillah

The Prophet (peace be upon him) anticipated that people would criticize and revile at him when he would convey his Lord’s instructions of nominating Ali as the next leader. He expected them to accuse him of favoring his cousin for personal aims. Hence, God revealed: (O Apostle! Deliver...) Immediately, the .Prophet declared the next leadership of Ali on that day in Ghadir Khum

-Mohammed Bin Al-Qasim Bin Ahmed: Abu Jafar Mohammed Bin Ali Al .۲۵۰  
:Faqih: His father: Sa’d Bin Abdillah: Ahmed Bin Abdillah Al-Berqi: His father  
:Khalaf Bin Ammar Al-Asadi: Abul-Hassan Al-Abdi: Al-Amash: Ebaya Bin Rabi  
:Abudullah Bin Abbas

,and that I am to assign a vizier for each prophet. You are the Apostle of Allah...

”and Ali is your vizier

As people have just converted to Islam, the Prophet evaded informing them of that

p: ۲۶۴

mandate. Six days after the incident, God; the Exalted, revealed: (Then, it may be that you will give up a part of what is revealed to you and your breast will become

(...straitened by it

The Prophet could tolerate for more eighteen days when God revealed: (O Apostle! Deliver what has been revealed to you from your Lord; and if you do it not, then you have not delivered His message, and Allah will protect you from the

(people; surely Allah will not guide the unbelieving people

For that reason, the Prophet directed Bilal –the formal declarant– to inform people

that none will be excused if he shuns being in Ghadir Khum the next day. The

Prophet orated: “O people! My Lord has ordered me of conveying His message to

.you. I was wavering since I anticipated that you would accuse and belie

”.Therefore, the Lord blamed me. He threatened a punishment frequently

The Prophet then took Ali Bin Abi Talib from the hand, and raised it so upwardly

that the armpits were seen, and declared: “O people! Allah is my Master. I am your master. He whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master. O Allah! Accede

to whomever accedes to him, and oppose whomever opposes him, and give

”.triumph to whomever supports him, and disappoint whomever disappoints him

Concurrently, God revealed: (This day have I perfected your religion for you and  
(...completed My favor on you and

### THE PROPHET'S PROGENY'S OPINION

:Al-Ayashi's Tafsir; ١/٣٣١

Ibn Abbas and Jabir Bin Abdillah: The Prophet (peace be upon him) anticipated  
p: ٢٤٥

that people would criticize and revile at him when he would convey his Lord's  
instructions of nominating Ali as the next leader. He expected them to accuse him  
of favoring his cousin for personal aims. Hence, God revealed: (O Apostle  
...Deliver

:Al-Kafi; ١/٢٩٠

Abu Jafar (peace be upon him) spoke: The Lord ordered of five precepts. People  
applied four and neglected one. People were unaware of time of performing  
prayers. Gabriel descended to the Prophet and conveyed the Lord's orders of  
instructing people their prayers. Then came the poor rate. Then came the fasting

On the tenth of Moharram, the Prophet instructed people of the neighboring  
villages to fast. Later on, Ramadan, the month between Shaban and Shawal, was  
identified for fasting. Then came rites of the pilgrimage. "As you have taught  
them their prayers, poor rates and fasting, you are now to instruct them how to  
pilgrimage," Gabriel conveyed to the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

Finally, the mandate of fealty was revealed. Perfection of the religion was materialized through the mandate of loyalty to the leadership of Ali Bin Abi Talib. The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) narrated the occasion

When the mandate of loyalty to Ali was revealed to me, I thought that as my people had been fresh Muslims, they would accuse me of favoring my cousin for personal purposes. Forthwith, God threatened a punishment if I neglect. He revealed: (O Apostle! Deliver what has been revealed to you from your Lord; and if you do it not, then you have not delivered His message, and Allah will protect

p: ۲۶۶

(you from the people; surely Allah will not guide the unbelieving people

Immediately, the Prophet took Ali (peace be upon him) from the hand and declared: “O people! Like the other prophets, I am to answer the invitation of my Lord after He has given me this age. You, as well as I, shall be interrogated. What

”?will your answer be

We do admit you have conveyed, advised and consummated. May God satisfy“

.you with the best reward of the messengers,” acknowledged people

!O God! Be the witness,” the Prophet repeated thrice, and added, “O Muslims“

”.This shall be your leader after me. The attendants should carry this to the absent

:Biharul Anwar; ۹۴/۳۰۰

A group of Shias and adherents of the Prophet’s progeny were attendant before ...

Abu Abdillah Jafar Bin Mohammed (peace be upon him), when he spoke: “Do you know the day in which the Lord constructed Islam, and exhibited illumination

”?of the religion, and made it a festivity for our adherents, Shias and us God, His Apostle and son of the Apostle are the most knowledgeable. Is it the“

.Fitr Day, our master?” asked they

.No, it is not,” answered Abu Abdillah“

.Is it then the Adha Day?” asked they“

:No,” answered the imam, and spoke“

However, these are two holy and noble days. Day of illumination of the religion“

is holier and nobler. It is the eighteenth of Dhu’l-Hijja. On the noontime of that

day when the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) arrived in Ghadir

,Khum, in his journey back from the Farewell Pilgrimage, Gabriel descended

p: ۲۶۷

carrying the Lord’s instruction of declaring Amirul Muminin’s mastership and

next leadership. The Angel said: ‘In this very day, you are to declare Ali’s

mastership on this nation, so that he shall be the next leader to whom people

,should refer. He will be representing you.’ ‘O Gabriel, my dear!’ said the Prophet

I anticipate that my companions will dissent since they detest him for his killing‘

’.their people, and will unveil their hiddens

The angel carried the Prophet’s words and, immediately, came back with God’s

...saying: O Apostle! Deliver

The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) was so apprehensive and distressed when he gave the orders of sweeping the place under these trees. His

feet were sore for the great heat of the sun. He declared that Muslims should gather in that place. They, including Abu Bakr, Omar, Othman and the rest of the Muhajirs and Ansar, approached together before him. He sermonized and referred to the coming leadership of Ali, and imposed it upon the entire people. He also

”informed that it had been God’s mandate

:An-Numan Al-Maghribi’s Daeimul Islam; ١/١٤

–A man spoke to Abu Jafar Mohammed Bin Ali (peace be upon him) that Al Hassan Al-Basri had informed of the Prophet’s saying: “I became distressed and disturbed when the Lord ordered me of conveying a message. I anticipate that people would belie me. The Lord, however, threatened a punishment if I do it

”not

Abu Jafar asked the man whether Al-Hassan Al-Basri had acquainted them of the tenor of that message. The man answered negatively. “By God I swear, he did

p: ٢٤٨

realize that tenor, but he concealed it deliberately,” stated Abu Jafar (peace be upon him). “O son of God’s messenger!” the man asked, “May God make me

”?your ransom. What was that tenor

Abu Jafar stated: The believers were unaware of the style they had been ordered ;of performing through the Lord's Book. Hence, the Lord directed His Apostle Mohammed (peace be upon him and his family), to explain. The Prophet did not .conceal a single word

Similarly, the Lord ordered of defraying the poor rate. People did not have any (acquaintance of that poor rate. The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family explained so, when he allocated gold, silver, camels, cows, sheep and yields as the .only things applicable to the poor rate. The Prophet left nothing unexplored People lacked knowledge of style of fasting imposed upon them. The Prophet .peace be upon him and his family) explicated everything evidently)

As the Lord imposed the ritual pilgrimage, He directed the Prophet to instruct .them how to perform

Allah; the Powerful the Elevated, ordered of adhering to the fealty to the Prophet's household. He revealed: (Only Allah is your master and His Apostle and those who believe, those who keep up prayers and pay the poor rate while they bow.) As God imposed the fealty to the leadership identified, people were unfamiliar of sort of that fealty. Like the prayer, the poor rate, the fasting and the pilgrimage, the Lord ordered His Apostle of explicating the meaning of fealty to the leadership. This charge disturbed the Prophet since he anticipated that people

.would dissent their beliefs and belie him. Hence, he sought the Lord's relief

Immediately, God revealed: (O Apostle! Deliver what has been revealed to you

,from your Lord; and if you do it not, then you have not delivered His message

and Allah will protect you from the people; surely Allah will not guide the

(.unbelieving people

After that, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) showed no blemish in

declaring the obligatory fealty to the leadership of Ali Bin Abi Talib (peace be

upon him). That was on that day in Ghadir Khum. He also imposed the attendants

.to carry this obligation to the absent

The precepts were revealed gradually. The seal of that precepts was the obligatory

fealty to the leadership of Ali. For this reason, God revealed: (This day have I

perfected for you your religion and completed My favor on you and chosen for

you Islam as a religion.) This means that the Lord would not legislate any more

.precept, since He has completed them

Another narration) The Prophet stated: "I enjoin those whoever believed in)

Allah, and believed and gave credence to me; I enjoin them of adhering to the

.leadership of Ali Bin Abi Talib. Loyalty to Ali is being as same as loyalty to me

This is a command and a covenant I have received from my Lord Who directed

.me to carry it to you

The first narration is also recorded in Sharhul Akhbar; ١/١٠١. A similar narration is

.registered on page ٢٧٩ of part ٢ of the same book

p: ٢٧٠

:The following is recorded in that book

O Gabriel!” the Prophet addressed at the angel, “My people are fresh. They“ ...

have just converted from Jahilism. I anticipate they would relapse.” The Lord

...soon revealed: (O Apostle! Deliver

Hence, the Prophet had to gather people in Ghadir Khum. He sermonized: “O people! I became disturbed for the Lord’s ordering me of conveying a message to

;you. But He threatened a punishment if I would shun. Have you known that Allah

the Powerful the Elevated, is my Master, and that I am the master and the leader

.of the Muslims to whom souls I am preceded?” “Yes, we have,” admitted people

The Prophet took Ali from the hand and raised him, saying: “He whosever master

.was I, Ali shall be his master . And whosever leader was I, Ali shall be his leader

O Allah! Accede to whomever accedes to him, and oppose whomever opposes

him and give triumph to whomever supports him, and disappoint whomever

”.disappoints him, and make the right follow him wherever he turns

These words imposed fealty to Ali (peace be upon him) upon each male and

.female Muslim

.A similar narration is recorded in Al-Ayashi’s Tafsir; ١/٣٣٣

More narratives are to be cited during the coming discussion of Verse of Ikmaluddin

perfection of the religion-. In the Shiite reference books of hadith, these narrative-  
are so much and authentic that they are ruled as continuous

### GENERAL REMARKS REGARDING THE OTHER OPINIONS

:First Remark

Except for At-Tirmithi, who records the narration regarding the surveillance

p: ٢٧١

practiced on the Prophet, and decides it as a one-way strange report, none of the  
most

remarkable Sunni hadithists refer to the exegesis of Verse of Isma. Yet, Al-Bukhari

allots two titles for the Verse. First is on page ٨٨ of part ٥, in which he records

Aisha's report about the conveyance and evading concealment, and the second is on

page ٩ of part ٨, in which he records Az-Zuhri's narration about the Prophet's

,conveyance. In addition, Al-Bukhari records two other reports respecting the Verse

on page ٥٠ of part ٦ and page ٢١٠ of part ٨. On page ١١٠ of part ١, Muslim records a

.report respecting the Verse

As a matter of fact, such a negligence does not prove or indicate inauthenticity or

dubiety of the report. Numerous are the authentic reports that are not recorded in the

most remarkable books of hadith. And more are the inauthentic that are written down

in such books. The most important matter is that compilers of the most remarkable

books of hadith exert all efforts for refuting the Prophet's progeny's sect. They do

.realize that Verse of Isma is an evident on accuracy of the Prophet's progeny's sect  
For detaining the Shias narrations, they would have repeatedly narrated and  
recorded

.any report that refuted so if only they had any

For this reason, it is obvious that they neglected recording such reports for their  
.claiming dubiety of their documentation, their context, or contradiction of their texts  
They aimed at creating a number of problematic matters for each. Hence, they had to

p: ۲۷۲

,evade refuting the Shias' narratives and the Sunnis' that are concordant. As a result  
such narratives are not objected in the six most remarkable Sunni reference books of  
.hadith

:Second Remark

Except the period of Farewell Pilgrimage, the entire twenty-three years of the  
Prophet's solicitation were covered through the various Sunni narratives respecting  
the revelation of the Verse. The excluded period, in fact, is the very time in which  
the Verse was revealed. This fact arises the question that eluding referring to the  
exact period in which the Verse was revealed, was the purpose beyond expansion of  
.these narratives

:Third Remark

For the Shiite reference books of hadith, the entire reports that referred to the

revelation of the Verse bring up, assuredly and convictionally, the same reason and date. On the other hand, the Sunni reference books bear contrary reasons in varied dates that their scholars could not get rid of perplexity and suspect. The six most remarkable Sunni reference books of hadith escape recording any of these narratives some of which support the Prophet's progeny's opinions, aside from seeking the blessing of the Quraishi caliphs

As a rule, when Muslims entirely, including the Prophet's progeny, identify a definite reason and date for the revelation of a Quranic text, while others refer to miscellaneous reasons and dates, we can surely understand that the reason unanimously admitted should be the preferred in adoption and issuing rulings

### **EVALUATION OF THE OPPOSING OPINIONS**

.First Question: The Matter To Be Delivered

The Verse is meaningless unless the verb 'revealed' is seen to consider a past

p: ۲۷۳

incident. Grammar of the Verse, however, refers to this point. The tense of the sentence indicates a previous incident. Besides, no other element may hint at a coming revelation. Secondly, the Verse was revealed in the final months of the Prophet's lifetime. Supposing the verb 'revealed' refers to a coming matter, this should mean that there should be a matter to be revealed in the next period. This meaning is wholly refused by the entire reports, as well as the Shiite and Sunni

When the tense shows a previous revelation that the Prophet should deliver, this proves that the Prophet has already received a heavy mandate to deliver, and that he has been conceiving of the way of its conveyance. Hence, the Verse was revealed to

stop the Prophet's anticipations, and give him the order of delivering as soon as possible, disregarding whether people would admit or refute. He was also relieved that they should not apostatize and that he would be guarded against them. This is the exegesis adopted by the Prophet's progeny and supported by a number of the

.Sunni reports

#### .Second Question: Confirmation Of The Case And Its Conditions

.It is so vague for any to say: "You should convey the messages I shall give to you and if you do it not, I shall not name you a conveyor." This sentence does not need that case of condition, since it is logically understandable that the characteristic of being conveyor is null if the one to bear the message is not going to convey them

p: ۲۷۴

.The stated sentence, then, shall be ruled as meaningless

If there is a remarkable message to deliver, it will be quite true to say to the formal conveyor: "I will not regard you as a conveyor of my previous messages that you .have already carried, if you avoid carrying this most remarkable one

Style of the sentence is stated in a form of threat. It insinuates the importance of the judgment. It is formed in the pattern that if the message intended was neglected and not carried to people, the other parts of the religion would be regarded as if he had not conveyed. God's saying: (If you do it not, then you have not delivered his message,) is a conditional clause that elucidates the importance of the condition in its occurrence or nonoccurrence, since the most important reward relies upon that occurrence or nonoccurrence. It is not an ordinary conditional clause which is usually used for specifying the result of an unknown matter. For God, this is inapplicable, since He does realize results and everything. The Quran does not have probabilities whether the Prophet will convey or not

#### .Third Question: Sort Of The Prophet's Fear

The Prophet anticipated that the divine message would be in danger. He was too brave to fear an assassination or injury, since he was pious, courageous and sinless. Since the earlier days of the prophesy, the Apostle was foretold of the arduousness of the responsibility of prophesy and conveyance, and the jeopardous detriment he would suffer. Hence, he (peace be upon him and his family) anticipated dangers

p: ٢٧٥

injuries and difficulties. Accordingly, it is trivial to believe that the Prophet showed any defect or laziness at any period of his solicitation, that he was threatened and reposed

Finally, the Prophet had apprehensions that people might apostatize and reject his progeny's imamate and leadership, and consider the question of nominating Ali for the next leadership as a personal decision

.'Fourth Question: The Interpretation Of 'People

:Al-Fakhr Ar-Razi's Tafsir; ٦/١٢/٥٠

(As God ends the Verse with (surely Allah will not guide the unbelieving people it is understandable that 'people' mentioned in the Verse refers to the unbelieving ones exclusively

This opinion is unacceptable. The word 'people' cannot be consecrated to a definite group since the Verse shows that the Lord will protect His Apostle against all people Ar-Razi then made a mistake when he perceived that meaning of the Verse was that the Lord would protect the Prophet against the unbelieving ones whom should not be guided to the right path. A good deal of meanings can be inferred from the relation between 'people' and 'the unbelieving ones.' The meaning might be: (God will protect you against the whole people, and He will not guide those who intend to hurt you, since they are unbelievers.) It also might be: (Deliver the message, and Allah will protect you against people, and the rejectors, who are decided as unbelievers (shall not be guided by Allah

The latter is the most preferable, since it is supported by a prophetic text recorded on

:page ١٣٩ of part ٨ of Al-Bukhari's Sahih

Abu Hureira: The Prophet (peace be upon him) stated: “My people, entirely, shall be in the Paradise saving the rejectors.” “Who are the rejectors, God’s messenger?” asked people. “He shall be in the Paradise that whoever obeys me .And he shall be with the rejectors that whoever disobeys,” explained the Prophet

The comprehensive and logical meaning of ‘people’ fits the source of injury and danger, which was not dedicated to the unbelievers only. The Prophet was also antagonized by the hypocrites who were among his people. We have already elucidated that the danger intended by the Verse was, to great extent, that of the hypocrites. Ar-Razi, however, aims at removing the style of censure addressed at the Quraishi hypocrites, and wants to take that divine mandate away from leadership of .(Ali Amirul Muminin (peace be upon him

#### .Fifth Question: Meaning Of Protection Against People

The promised protection intended in the Verse should be befitting the amount of danger the Prophet expected. It should stand for the protection against people’s suspecting the prophesy and accusing him of favoring his household, and nominating his progeny for the coming leadership. One of the most famed saying the Quraishis used to utter, was that Mohammed (peace be upon him) intended to give prophesy and leadership to the Hashemites exclusively, so that the other clans of Quraish would be taken away. It was not the Prophet’s concern to nominate for the prophesy

.or the coming leadership

,This is the meaning befitting the amount of danger expected by the Prophet who

p: ۲۷۷

constantly, was thinking of the anticipated actions that might occur when he would

.declare the next leadership of Ali Amirul Muminin

Unlike claim of the other opinions, the protection intended in the Verse does not stand for protecting the Prophet against being assassinated, hurt or injured. It is a guarantee of saving the prophesy against the Quraishis. This is evidenced by the fact that the Prophet's surveillance was not changed after that event. Likewise, danger and harm were not changed. It was augmented

In abstract, the protection mentioned in the Verse intends saving the Prophet's advocacy in his nation who could rarely accept the matter, that they decided mutiny Hence, the recognized amount of concept of that protection is surviving the prophesy and consummating the Lord's claim against people. It is unlike that divine sinlessness the Prophet enjoyed in his deeds, words and the entire behavior

The Exalted Lord fulfilled His promise. On that day in Ghadir, the Prophet nominated Ali for the next leadership, and asked people to offer him congratulations .on the divine leadership. People did without arising any sort of rejection

Nevertheless, as soon as the Prophet was deceased, they took Ali and his progeny away from positions of leadership. Moreover, they had his house on fire and obliged

him to declare fealty to their acquaintance

## QUESTIONS INVOLVING THE VERSE

.There are two questions involving the Verse of Islam, I am to discuss briefly

.First Question: Using The Verse As A Weapon Against Ali

(The entire Muslims testify that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

p: ۲۷۸

conveyed what he had received from his Lord perfectly. They also testify that he suffered what no other prophet had. After all, Sunnis accused Shias of claiming the Prophet's concealing some matters. As an answer, they cited Verse of Isma. We seek

!God's protection against such a claim

:Al-Qurtubi's Tafsir; ۶/۲۴۳

He is fabricating that whoever claims the Prophet's concealing any of the revelation. The Lord says: (O Apostle! Deliver what has been revealed to you ,from your Lord; and if you do it not, then you have not delivered His message and Allah will protect you from the people.) Deformed be the Rafidites! They claim that the Prophet (peace be upon him) concealed some of the revelation .people needed

:Al-Qastalani's Irshadus Sari; ۷/۱۰۶

This is contrary to the Shias' wording. They claimed the Prophet's concealing ... .some of the revealed issued, applying circumspection

It seems that this accusation is inferred from Aisha's famous saying: "He is forging the greatest lies against the Lord, that whoever claims the Prophet's concealing any of the Lord's book." This saying is intended to refute and belie Ali (peace be upon him).

Ali affirmed that he had been the Prophet's heir and that he had his wording and the heritage that were different from the Quran. Ali had such a comprehensive book that it included everything needed by people even amount of the compensation for a violated retaliation of a scratch. Ali also asserted that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) had foretold him of the coming misfortunes his progeny would have

p: ۲۷۹

to counter, even the attack on his house and setting it on fire. Ali asserted that the Prophet instructed what to do during such situation

For us; the Shias, we do believe so. In our, as well as the Sunni, reference books of hadith, tens of reports carry the unique standing and status of Ali. Others relate the special prophetic care for him that prove the Lord's mandate of bringing him up in a peculiar way fit enough for transferring his prophetic knowledge to him. Moreover Ali was given exclusive characters, qualifications and inspiration. We also believe that Ali tells nothing but the truth, even when the matter concerns himself and his progeny

The Prophet addressed at Ali: “Allah gives me the orders of favoring you, and ... avoiding keeping you away, and teaching you that you will perceive. And you (shall perceive.” For these words, God revealed: (And a retaining ear will retain it

:Abu Naeem’s Hilyetul Awliya

The Prophet addressed at Ali: “You are the retaining ear that perceives my  
” .knowledge

Hutheifa Bin Al-Yeman, who was one of Ali’s followers, was the keeper of the Prophet’s secret in the concern of distinguishing the hypocrites. Whereas Ali was the keeper of the entire secrets and knowledge of the Prophet (peace be upon him and his

family). The whole hadithists relate the Prophet’s foretelling Ali of the coming fighting against the breachers, the unjust and the deviate, for the interpretation of the

.Quran

Some of the Prophet’s instructions, given to Ali exclusively, were familiar during his

p: ۲۸۰

lifetime. One of these was that he would record his wrongedness and manifest his claim and avoid fighting for the position of leadership. Had this fact been null, they would never have such a bravery when they attacked Ali’s house and arrested and

!obliged him to declare fealty to the new leadership

Ali was a miracle and an unparalleled phenomenon of might and courage. He planted

horror and panic in people's hearts. Most of those who participated in that attack were so coward that they could not record any situation of courage during battles. As soon as Ali unsheathes his Dhu'l-Feqar, none of such cowardly people, or anyone else, had hearts can stop in his face. Hence, they were sure that he would not -unsheathe his sword, and he would act according to the Prophet's will even if Az Zahra would be beaten and her baby would be aborted

In due course, the pro-Quraishis and their masters refute Ali's claim of having the Prophet's heritage and knowledge. They deny that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) left anything for his family; no knowledge, no properties entailed in mortmain and no assets. On that account, Abu Bakr confiscated Fadak which the Prophet endowed to Fatima (peace be upon her) when God revealed: (And give the (near of kin his due

The ruling authorities exceeded the limits when they claimed atheism of those who averred that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) had instructed them peculiarly. Aisha's forecited wording is the evidence those ruling authorities used for

p: ٢٨١

.refuting Ali's claims

:Al-Bukhari's; ١/١٨٨

Aisha: "He is fabricating that whoever claims the Prophet's concealing any of what was revealed. God says: O Apostle! Deliver what has been revealed to

...you

Al-Bukhari repeats the same on pages ٥٠ and ٢١٠ of parts ٩ and ٨. The same is recorded in Muslim's; ١/١٠, and At-Tirmithi's; ٤/٣٢٨... etc

At any rate, this process practiced by the ruling authorities and Ali's rivals, included two flaws regarding expansion of meanings of the matter to be conveyed and the parties to receive that conveyance. In addition, the process comprised a misrepresentation of the saying of Ali and his adherents; the Shias. It is untrue that the Prophet was ordered of conveying everything, he had been given to people. The Prophet's knowledge that is received via revelation, inspiration and divine views is too comprehensive to be carried to people. It is impracticable that the Lord dictate so, since people, even the faithful, are too incompetent to receive such knowledge.

Secondly, some instructions were addressed at specific individuals. Hence, the Prophet did not carry them to the public. This is evidenced by God's saying: (And (speak to them privately effectual words

Neither Ali nor did any of his adherents claim the Prophet's showing any shortcoming in carrying the Lord's message. They claimed that he (peace be upon him and his family) took people's mentalities and competence of intellectual reception in consideration during carrying the divine message. Therefore, Ali was so receptive that the Prophet delivered him an additional and peculiar knowledge, as the

Lord instructs. Unlike opinions of Al-Qurtubi and Al-Qastalani, this concept is far away from any accusation of showing shortcoming during conveying the Lord's words

-The matter was no more than a supplementary conveyance addressed at Ali, Az-Zahra, Al-Hassan and Al-Hussein (peace be upon them

Furthermore, Ali and his adherents assert that the Prophet conveyed numerous matters respecting his progeny and many other subjects. Hence, they claim a prophetic conveyance more comprehensive than that claimed by the Quraishi caliphate and their adherents

The pro-Quraishis used to wrong and forge lies against Ali. In the same time, they overlook Omar's statement that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) had not clarified a number of Quranic texts, such as those regarding Kelala and usury.\* as a matter of fact, this is an apparent accusation of the Prophet's showing blemish in explaining God's revealed texts

In abstract, the Prophet's selecting Ali for specific revealed matters does not violate his carrying out the Lord's instructions, since this question is enlisted under the same title of conveying the Lord's mandate. In like manner, it does not violate the question of circumspection applied by the Prophet with definite men of Quraishi and other tribes. The Prophet carried the instructions of using wisdom, circumspection and nicety for achieving goals of Islam

Imam Jafar As-Sadiq: The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) stated: “As my Lord orders me of performing the precepts, He orders of using nicety with people.”

.This matter will be soon provided during discussing Verse of Ikmaluddin\*

p: ٢٨٣

:Majma’uzzawaid; ٨/١٧

Abu Huraira: The Prophet (peace be upon him) stated: “Directly after believing in God comes nicety to people as the acme of intellectuality”

Bureida: I was attendant before the Prophet (peace be upon him) when a Quraishi man came, and was warmly welcomed. “O Bureida!” addressed the Prophet when the man left, “Do you know this man?” “Yes,” I answered, “I do know him. He is the best of Quraish in lineage and wealth. This is my opinion, what about yours God’s messenger?” said I. “This is one of those whom shall be worthless on the Judgment Day,” stated the Prophet

Al-Bukhari allots more than one title in regard with question of using nicety with people. On page ١٠٢ of part ٧ of his Sahih, Al-Bukhari writes down

Abud-Derda: We do smile in the faces of some people, while our hearts curse them.

Aisha: “Let him in. He is the worst among his clan,” the Prophet said as he

permitted a man to see him. He then received him easily with nice words. When the man left, I sought an explanation from the Prophet. He said: “O Aisha! The most evil people are those whom are received nicely for the sake of avoiding their  
”.evil

:An-Nisapuri’s Al-Waseet; ٢/٢٠٨

When he was in Mecca, the Prophet used to hide some Verses, since he anticipated evil of the polytheists against his companions and himself (For us; the Shias, we do believe that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family did explanatorily convey the entire revealed matters so perfectly. We also believe  
p: ٢٨٤

that the Lord instructed him to speak to people according to the degree of their perceptions and intellectualities. Some could not sustain more than the general elucidation, while others could. Ali (peace be upon him) was a first class man with regard to intellectuality. The Lord instructed His Apostle to give him more explanation. Ali was granted unique memory, intellectuality and tongue. Finally, he was made the retaining ear that receives understandably the Prophet’s wording We are indeed not those who accuse the Prophet of concealing a part of the revealed matters. Before us are their most remarkable books of hadith that are filled with reports uttering that Omar asserted the Prophet’s concealing explanation of some Verses, such as those of Kelala and usury. Meanwhile, these Verses formed an

.obligatory canon

.Second Question: The Verse Refutes The Claim Of The Prophet's Bewitchment

A group of scholars from both sects cite Verse of Isma as an evidence refuting the claim of the Prophet's bewitchment. A number of narratives storied that a Jew bewitched the Prophet when he could take his comb and some hairs, and bury them in a well after he had spelled bewitchery on them. This bewitchery influenced the Prophet so heavily that he imagined doing some acts. The Prophet kept on this state till a man or an angel or Gabriel led him to the place of that well. He destructed that well since he had been already cured from the bewitchment, and that he had not .wanted to arise a problem

This false accusal is related to Aisha according to Al-Bukhari's report recorded in

p: ٢٨٥

five positions of his book. For instance, it is recorded on pages ٩١ and ٩٨ of part ٤. It is also recorded on pages ٢٨-٩ and ١٦٤ of part ٧. Muslim and many others record the .same

The entire Shiite scholars refute this accusal. A few Sunni scholars had the courage .to refute. They cite Verse of Isma as one of their evidences

:At-Tusi's Tafsirut Tibian; ١/٣٨٤

Reports that related tale of the Prophet's bewitchment are inconsiderate and baseless. The Prophet are too elevated to have such a characteristic of

imperfection that lead to the receivers' rejecting his instructions. He is the Lord's claim against creatures, and His choice among His servants. Due to the Lord's wisdom, the Prophet was selected. He was saved from vulgarity and harshness, in addition to any ill behaviour. Except those who discount the Prophet's real characters, How can anyone dare to ascribe such tainted matters to him Moreover, the Lord says: (And Allah will protect you against people.) He also (.shows falsehood of those who said: (You are following but a bewitched man

:Ibn Idris Al-Ujeli's As-Serair; ۳/۵۳۴

Unanimously, we prove that the Prophet was never bewitched. This is evidenced by God's saying: (And Allah will protect you against people.) Some of the opposite parties believe that he was bewitched. This is contrary to the Glorified .Revelation

:Al-Mejlisi's Biharul Anwar; ۶۰/۳۸

Providing that had been right, the sorcerers would have injured the whole ... prophets and pious men. Similarly, they would have had the greatest standing for themselves. This is contrary to God's saying: (And Allah will protect you from

p: ۲۸۶

the people,) and (And a magician shall not be successful wheresoever he may come from.) At length, the atheists imputed bewitchment to the Prophet, while .they did realize their being liars

-An-Nawawi; the Sunni scholar, was one of those who refuted the accusal. In his Al

:Majmu; 19/243, he writes down

Reports regarding the Prophet's bewitchment should be refuted since they...

support the atheists' accusing him of bewitchment. It is also contrary to the

.Quranic texts that belied them

Al-Qadi: Such narratives are false. It is impracticable to admit them while the

Lord says: (And Allah will protect you from the people,) and (And a magician

shall not be successful wheresoever he may come from.) Giving credence to such

narratives leads to libeling the prophesy. Had that been right, the entire prophets

.and pious people should have been influenced by bewitchery

:Ar-Razi's Tafsir; 16/32/187

;Majority of Muslims adopt the Prophet's being bewitched by Labid Bin Assam

the Jew. Mutazilites, totally, refute this saying. It is impracticable to regard

authenticity of such a claim since it contradicts God's saying: (And Allah will

...(protect you from the people

The forecited scholars form only a minority of the Sunni scholars majority of whom

do admit this fabrication. Root of the problem is that they cannot refute words and

reports of Aisha and Al-Bukhari at any circumstance. Likewise, they never permit

any to scrutinize or criticize such reports. This trend carried tens of varied doctrinal

problems to them. These doctrinal problems comprised monotheism, prophesy and

,intercession. Reports respecting the headmost revelation and Waraqa Bin Nawfal

p: ۲۸۷

reports of ‘the handsome pagans’ that Suleiman Rushdi betook as a principal for his The Satanic Verses and reports regarding the Prophet’s being bewitched by the Jews are cited as examples on their blind imitation. As we have already cited, they were perplexed since none had been brave enough to declare that such reports are falsely ascribed to Aisha, or women’s dreams

In abstract, the accusal is originally contrary to the prophesy. Atheists are the root of that accusation. This fact is proved by a Quranic text. Citing Verse of Isma as the refutation of the forecited accusal is seen as baseless, since it can be claimed that the Verse was revealed in the final stage of the Prophet’s lifetime while the occurrence as they claim, came before that time

As much as our exegesis is concerned, we see that the recognized amount of concept of the protection is guarding the Prophet against apostasy of the Quraishis, together with the Muslims, during his lifetime, unless there is a matter evidencing its comprising another matter

Sunni exegesists and scholars discuss the protection mentioned in the Verse in such a prolonged and thoroughgoing way that they do not miss any point that is pertinent or irrelevant. They suffer such a toilsome undertaking owing to their erroneous exegesis, and their misthinking that the Prophet’s protection stands for guarding him

.against assassination, poisoning, injury or harm

In due course, they apprehend that the Verse is contrary to the narratives relating that

the Prophet's decease was due to having a morsel from the meat of a poisoned ewe

p: ٢٨٨

served by a Jewess. The narrative states that Gabriel descended to inform of reality

of that meat. Hence, the Prophet ceased, but a drop of that poison that lied in the

.single morsel he had had, was the reason beyond his decease the next year

:Ashifa; ١/٣١٧

Q. How is it possible to admit God's saying: (And Allah will protect you from the people,) and the narrative –of the Prophet's being deceased due to the poisoning of ?that Jewess– that denies the Prophet's protection

A. The Verse was revealed in the year of the battle of Tabuk, while the poisoning .occurred before so, in Kheibar

They also refer to a number of questions pertaining to the Verse. One of these is that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) longed for martyrdom, while the Verse guarantees safety from killing. How is it workable for him to long for ?something he realizes impossibility of its occurrence

:Fetihul Bari Fi Sharhi Sahihil Bukhari; ٨/٢٩٤٤

Abu Hureira: I heard the Prophet say: "By the Prevailing of my soul, I wish I were

”to be killed for the sake of Allah

Commentation: Some exegetes showed reservations against ascribing this text

to the Prophet (peace be upon him), since it is impracticable for him to long for martyrdom while he does realize that he is protected against counteracting killing

Ibnut-Tin answers: The statement might have been said before the revelation of

God’s saying: (And Allah will protect you from the people.) This is in accurate

The Verse was revealed during the Prophet’s early residence in Al-Madina. While

p: ۲۸۹

Abu Hureira, who attests that he heard the statement directly from the Prophet

arrived there in the first days of the seventh year after the Prophet’s immigration

On the other hand, it seems that longing for a virtuous matter does not necessarily

require probability of its occurrence. It can be averred that the Prophet aimed for

urging the Muslims on jihad. This opinion, however, is the most acceptable

Some claim that Abu Hureira added ‘I wish’ to the Prophetic text. This opinion

seems unsatisfactory

It is to add that if the previous prophetic text was authentic, the Prophet’s wish

would be applicable. The Verse guarantees that people would not apostatize during

the Prophet’s lifetime. It is irrelevant to guaranteeing that the Prophet would not be

assassinated, injured or hurt. On the contrary, God’s saying: (And Mohammed is no

more than an apostle; the apostles have already passed away before him. If he then

dies or is killed, will you turn back upon your heels,) indicates that the Prophet would not to die so normally, since the Lord made the sort of His Apostle's decease inconspicuous. Besides, the Lord identifies natural death and assassination as the two sorts that the Prophet would counter. The only interpretation of God's confusing the sort of His Apostle's death is that He; the Elevated, knows that the Prophet would be .killed or suffering a quasi-assassination

### CHAPTER THREE

#### STORY OF GHADIR

#### THE QURAIISHIS IN THE FAREWELL PILGRIMAGE

Through the prophetic texts, words and behaviors of the Farewell Pilgrimage, it is obviously comprehensible that the whole matter was aimed at giving emphasis to the

p: ٢٩٠

present and coming role of the Prophet's household. Directly, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) foretold of the coming of twelve imams, and instructed that those imams should be representing the minor weighty thing in this nation, while the Quran is the major. In other words, the Prophet explicated the obligatory compliance with those imams in the entire aspects of life. For instance, those imams were forbidden from receiving alms, while they should enjoy another sort of rates; which .is the one fifth rate

,The Quraishis could no longer stand the Prophet's sermons, words and activities that

as a whole, identified preference of Ali, Fatima, Al-Hassan and Al-Hussein. They understood the situation as if it had been a process of dedicating leadership to the Hashemites, and depriving the other clans of receiving any leading position. Moreover, they perceived the process as if they would be kept as released slaves of the Hashemites.

'It is natural for Sunni reference books of hadith to neglect the Quraishi chiefs' forthright reaction towards these prophetic sermons. Most surely, the Prophet's words disturbed the Quraishis whose chiefs; such as Suheil Bin Amr, Ikrima Bin Abi-Jahl, Safwan Bin Umayya Bin Khalaf, Hakim Bin Hizam, Suheib Bin Sinan, Abul-Awar As-Salami and the others, were gloomy-faced while they were listening to the Prophet paving the way to the Hashemites' leadership. Immediately, they acted energetically to contact the Quraishi Muhajirs, other than the Hashemites, for finding a suitable treatment for this impending prophetic trend.

On the other hand, the Shiite reference books of hadith provide that the inception of

p: ۲۹۱

such rigorous activities was in conquest of Mecca. During the Farewell Pilgrimage activities expanded to attain climax in Mina at days of Tashriq. The outcome of their consultation and activities was the conclusion of that treaty which is called, by the Shias, 'the accursed document' in which they agreed upon depriving the Hashemites of joining leadership to prophesy.

Few members of that treaty arrived slyly in Mecca, and hanged that second accursed  
.document near the first one inside Kaba

That was a new unanimous document against the Hashemites. Unlike the first which  
decided a blockade in the col and was signed in the names of Lat and Uzza; the  
pagans, the new one proposed a political embargo aimed at depriving the Hashemites  
of holding the leadership after the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family), and  
.signed in the name of Islam

Our reference books of hadith mention that the Lord informed His Apostle of details  
of that document, and the Prophet reproached the parties who could not stand still  
before him. Like the other prophets, the Apostle of God stopped at constituting  
claims against them, and granted them full option to act. This is the principle of the  
prophets' conveyance. Prophets, however, are instructed not to exceed their duties of  
.constituting the Lord's claims against people

Supposing that the noise and discord intentionally arisen during the Prophet's  
sermonizing and mentioning the lineage of the coming twelve imams, as the Sunni  
reference books allege, was one of the programmed activities against the  
Hashemites, then the Prophet would certainly reprimand and clarify that he had

p: ۲۹۲

.previous knowledge of their aims

For the Quraishis, the Farewell Pilgrimage passed peacefully, since the Prophet did not take any practical step in the course of nominating the new leader, although he spoke very much about the Hashemites, and his progeny, offspring and Fatima, and their being the Lord's choice and the coming imams, and the ruling of prohibiting them from receiving any of the alms and dedicating the one fifth rate to them. Furthermore, the Prophet did not demand with swearing fealty to Ali; the first imam of his household.

The Prophet conceived that the Quraishis attained the further borders of tolerance and they could not stand any more instructions. That was the further conveyance of the Lord's message regarding his progeny's leadership. If he demanded with swearing fealty to Ali in that situation, they would distrust prophesy and accuse him of establishing a monarchy, similar to that of the Romans and the Persian, for the Hashemites. Providing this had occurred, the Quraishis had had the ability of leading the Arabs to mutiny. They anticipated that Ali's leadership will lead to the continuous leadership of his successors forever.

Reference books of hadith record such statements spoken by the Quraishi chiefs who, as if they had never smelt the odor of Islam, perceived it as a question of Mohammed's kingship, that he might give to anyone he liked, or to his progeny exclusively.

During the Farewell Pilgrimage and its fatal circumstances, Gabriel was carrying the

p: ۲۹۳

Lord's mandates repeatedly. Along with the pilgrimage season, the Prophet received

the Lord's instructions constantly. It is likely that statements of the sermons were

.received via Gabriel

O Mohammed! Allah; the Powerful the Elevated, greets you and informs that your“

departure will be imminent, and soon you will be approaching Him. He orders you of

explicating the ritual pilgrimage in the same way you have explicated rulings of

prayer, rates and fasting.” That was one of the angel's statements conveyed to the

.Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) in Al-Madina

Carrying out this mandate, the Prophet led the Muslims to the pilgrimage and its

rites. Besides, he pursued focusing principals of Islam and the unique standings of

his household in their mentalities. This is clear through the prophetic texts regarding

the coming twelve imams, the two weighty things, the dedication of the one fifth rate

.to them, the deprivation of the alms... etc

During the final days of the pilgrimage, Gabriel descended with the following

.instructions: “Allah; the Exalted, orders you of leading your nation to their leader

Call for the declaration of covenant, and endow him the knowledge you have and the

prophets' heritage and publicize his leadership. None of the prophets was deceased

before he had perfected the religion. The land must not be left without a claim  
”against creatures

The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) concluded that he would not be able to declare so during these very moments for the Quraishis’ contemporary tense condition. He also took in consideration that his people had just forborne Jahilism

p: ۲۹۴

and would object and show disrelish if he was to nominate his cousin as the new leader. Hence, he decided to carry out that divine mandate as soon as he would be back in Al-Madina where he would prepare for it and seek Ansar’s aid

### **THE PROPHET’S CARAVAN IS STOPPED BY THE REVELATION**

As he intended to carry out the divine mandate of declaring the next leadership of his household, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) left Mecca

On the third day of the journey, the Prophet reached Kuraul-Ghamim. It is a place between Mecca and Al-Madina that is eight miles before Asfan. It was five hours after the sunrise when Gabriel descended and conveyed: “O Mohammed! Allah, the Powerful the Elevated, greets you and says: (O Apostle! Deliver what has been revealed to you from your Lord; and if you do it not, then you have not delivered His message, and Allah will protect you from the people; surely Allah will not guide the  
”(unbelieving people

The Prophet apprehended and succumbed to his Lord. He could not move any further

single step. The Muslims whose leading ones were about to arrive Al-Juhafa which was an inhabited village about two miles away from Kuraul-Ghamim, were given the orders of halting. The Prophet aimed for carrying out that rigid divine mandate in the very place where it had been revealed. "Release my she-camel," the Prophet ordered

By God I swear, I am not to leave this place before I will convey my Lord's"

p: ۲۹۵

.message." He also ordered the Muslims to be there

The Prophet rode off. The angel was next to him. He was so content as he saw the Prophet tremble due to fearing the Lord. His eyes were teary while he spoke: "Is it threat and plight and peril? I will keep up Allah's concern. If they accuse and belie me, this shall be less arduous than countering the distressing punishment in this world  
".and the Hereafter

Before he left, the angel had referred to a small area of trees to the right. The Prophet

.left the angel and directed to that garden to abide

Muslims narrated: We were on our way to the place identified, we could hear the Prophet call us for answering the Lord's prolocutor. Owing to the extremely hot weather, we hastened. We saw the Prophet put a part of his cloak on the head. A collective prayer was declared while time for the obligatory prayer had not arrived  
.yet

It was time for another prayer that should be mandatorily performed. It is the precept

of swearing fealty to the Prophet's immaculate progeny. Whatever the reaction would be, this precept would have been obligatorily carried to Muslims. The Lord did emphasize and inform that it had not been the Prophet's personal concern that he should take people's mischievous response in consideration through conveying to people. The Lord should be the most considered in this regard. He would protect against such mischievous response. Hence, the Prophet should carry out the orders. On that extremely hot day, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) gave the

p: ۲۹۶

orders of sweeping the place under these trees so that it would be taken as a situation for addressing the sermon of leadership, and performing the prayer. He also gave the orders of establishing an elevated place to be taken as a pulpit, so that the Prophet's eyes would fall on the entire Muslims, who encompassed him, during sermonizing. Muslims carried out the orders. They placed saddles of camels on these stones so that the quasi-pulpit would be more elevated and handsome. Muslims approached the spring -Ghadir-. They drank, served their animals and abluted. Before performing the obligatory prayer, they had surrounded the Prophet for listening to the sermon. The garden was too narrow to involve the large numbers of Muslims; therefore, many had to sit under sunlight or the pack animals for shading.

The entire attendees understood that there had been a matter to be provided during the coming sermon. There must have been a revelation of such a remarkable matter that the Prophet could not stand two more miles to be in Al-Juhafa

Pursuant to narratives, the total number of the individuals who performed the Farewell Pilgrimage with the Prophet was about one hundred and twenty thousand. After consummation of the pilgrimage rites, many of them left the Prophet. People of Mecca remained in their city. Individuals whose cities and villages were near At-Taif, took that way. Others took the way to Jedda, and the like. Nevertheless, thousands of individuals took the same way the Prophet had taken since they lived in Al-Madina and the neighboring. Approximately, they were ten

p: ٢٩٧

.thousand

-Documenting the Quraishis' attempts to cover up occurrence of Ghadir, imam As Sadiq said: "What strange misfortunes Ali Bin Abi Talib had countered! He had ten thousand witnesses and he could not save his right! People usually save their rights by two witnesses only \*"

Muslims waited not too long. They saw the Prophet ascend that pulpit of stones and saddles, and commence his sermon with the Name of Allah. He began to versify that honorable prophetic poesy in glorifying and praising the Lord and proving ultimate slavery to Him

Subsequently, the Prophet made apology for driving them to halt in such a poor place, and granting them no respite to reach Al-Juhafa; the village where water and means of comfort were available, and which was only two miles away from that place. Moreover, he apologized for preceding this congregation to time of the Dhuhr prayer, and demanding with listening to him in such an intolerable weather

He notified that Gabriel came in Kheif Mosque, carrying the Lord's mandate of nominating Ali, declaratorily, as the new leader of Muslims

He sermonized: "I was so disturbed for the Lord's instructing me obligatorily to convey a message. I anticipated that people would belie me. I thought that since my people were such fresh Muslims that they had soon forborne Jahilism, they would object or show loathing when I would nominate my cousin as the next leader. The

Lord, in this place, threatened a decisive punishment if I do it not." Allah; the Blessed the Exalted, guaranteed guarding me against people. He is the Benevolent

p: ٢٩٨

Protector. He revealed to me: (O Apostle! Deliver what has been revealed to you from your Lord; and if you do it not, then you have not delivered His message, and Allah will protect you from the people; surely Allah will not guide the unbelieving people)

There is no god But He Whose timing is unexpected, and injustice is unavailing. I acknowledge my slavery to Him, and testify His godhead. I am to convey what He

has revealed to me, lest an unavoidable catastrophe will strike me, and none will be  
meet enough to save me. O People! I am close on responding the invitation. How  
”?will you express

.We do admit you have conveyed and advised,” recognized people“

Do you acknowledge there is no god but Allah, and Mohammed is being the“  
Apostle of Allah, and the Paradise is rectified, and the hell-fire is rectified, and the  
.resurrection is rectified?” asked the Prophet

.Yes, we do, God’s messenger!” confessed they“

”As he pointed to his chest, the Prophet said, “ I do, too

He then added: “I will precede you. You will join me on the Divine Pool the width of  
which is as same as the distance from San’a –Yemen– to Busra –Syria–. Its cups are as  
copious as stars. Its water is whiter than silver. Suppose how will you regard me in  
”?the two weighty things

.What are the two weighty things, God’s messenger?” asked a man“

The Prophet answered: “The major is Allah’s Book. One of its edge is being in the

p: ۲۹۹

Lord’s hand, while the other is in yours. Adhere to it and you shall neither incline

.Refer to Wesailus–Shia; ۱۸/۱۷۴\*

nor deviate. The minor is my progeny; my household. I adjure you by Allah not to  
disregard my household. I adjure you by Allah not to disregard my household. I

adjure you by Allah not to disregard my household. The two shall never separate till  
,they join me on the Pool. I implored my Lord to keep this bond. Precede them not  
lest you shall be perished. Elude them not, lest you shall be deviating. Teach them  
.not, since they are more learned than you

,O people! Do you know that Allah; the Powerful the Elevated, is being my Master

”?and I am master of the believers, and I am preceded to yourselves

.Yes, we do. God’s messenger!” declared people“

Here, The Prophet asked Ali to stand erect. Ali did. The Prophet caused him to stand  
,to his right, and raised his hand so highly that the armpits of both were seen. Then  
:he maintained

He whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master . O Allah! Accede to whomever“  
accedes to him, and oppose whomever opposes him, and give triumph to whomever  
supports him, and disappoint whomever disappoints him, and turn the right whenever  
.he turns

O people! You should realize that it was Allah Who nominates him as your leader  
and imam. He imposes compliance with him upon Muhajirs, Ansar, their well  
followers, the Bedouins, the urban, the non-Arabs, the Arabs, the masters and the

p: ۳۰۰

”.slaves, the young and the old

”?O God’s messenger!” a man asked, “What is the like of loyalty to him“

Loyalty to him is as same as loyalty to me,” clarified the Prophet, “Ali should be“

”preceded to souls of those whom I was preceded to their souls

Elaborately, the Prophet went on interpreting credits of his infallible progeny and the

:twelve imams

,Ali, Al-Hassan, Al-Hassan and nine individuals from his progeny are, respectively“

being with the Quran, and the Quran is being with them. They shall never leave the

Quran, and the Quran will never leave them till they shall join me on the Divine

”.Pool

Recurrently, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) called the entire

.Muslims to witness process of his conveying the Lord’s messages. They witnessed

He also demanded the attendees to carry the matter to the absent. They promised

.affirmatively. He answered the questions of everybody

Contiguously after the consummation of the sermon, Gabriel descended with God’s

saying: (This day have I perfected for you your religion and completed My favor on

(.you and chosen for you Islam as a religion

The Prophet praised God for perfection of the religion and completion of the grace

.and the Lord’s satisfaction for his conveyance and the next leadership of Ali

Only then, the Prophet descended from the pulpit. He gave the orders of establishing

a tent in which Ali would receive the entire Muslims whom would obligatorily come

for offering congratulations to him for position of leadership. Even the Prophet’s

women were ordered of offering congratulations. They stood at the tent and offered

.Omar Bin Al-Khattab was one of the foremost people to offering congratulations

Congratulations, son of Abu Talib!" said Omar, "You have become my master, and"

".the master of every male and female believer

Hassaan Bin Thabit; the poet, sought the Prophet's permitting him to compose a

",number of poetic verses on the occasion. "Say them on the bless of the Lord

:allowed the Prophet. Hassan poetized

On that day in Ghadir their Prophet called them

!In Khum. How well was the Apostle's call

?Said: Who is you master and guardian

They answered and showed no negligence

Your Lord is our Master and you are guardian

He said: Stand up Ali! I am

To declare you the coming imam and guide

He whose master was I, this shall be his leader

Be his faithful sincere followers

,O Lord! Accede to whomever accedes to Ali

\*.And be the opposer of Ali's opposers

;It is sufficient to refer to the following narrative that is recorded in Muslim's Sahih

Yazeed Bin Heyyan: Hussain Bin Mayserah, Omar Bin Muslim and I were ...

Zeid Bin Arqam's companies. "You have been highly favored, Zeid," said Hussain, "You have seen the Prophet, listened to his orations, partook in his battles, and prayed with him. Would you please recount what you have heard from him?" "O brother's son!" talked Zeid, "I am too old to retain all what I have been acquainted. Please, accept what I shall say, and do not shoulder me what you

p: ٣٠٢

will reject." After a pause, he kept on, "One day, in a spring called 'Khum', lying between Mecca and Al-Madina, the Prophet (peace be upon him) orated O People! I am approximately to respond my Lord's apostle. I am leaving among you the two weighty things; the Book of Allah, where there is guidance and illumination. Estimate and hold fast on it.', in several sentences, the Prophet (peace be upon him) stimulated and urged on the Book. He then said, 'And my household! I adjure you by God respecting my household, I adjure you by God respecting my household

"?Who are his household, Zeid?" asked Hussain, "Are his wives included?" Zeid answered: "His wives are not included with his household. His household are those whom are forbidden from receiving the alms. His household are sons of Ali, Aqeel, Ja'far and Al-Abbas." "All these are forbidden from receiving the alms

\*wondered Hussain. “Yes, they are,” answered Zeid

:Al-Hakim’s Al-Mustedrak; ۳/۱۴۸

Zeid Bin Arqam: The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) stated: “Among you I am leaving the two weighty things. They are Allah’s Book and my household. They shall not leave each other till they join me on the Divine Pool

This series in the story of the Prophet’s sermon of Ghadir is quoted from various\* :reference books. The following are among these books

.As-Saduq’s Kemaluddin We Itmamun Nima; ۲۷۶

.At-Tebirsi’s Alihtijaj; ۱/۷۰

.An-Nisapuri’s Rawdetul Waidheen; ۹۸

.Al-Mustershid; ۱۱۷...etc

The Sunni reference books of hadith relate similar narratives. Refer to Al-Amini’s

.Al-Ghadir for more information

p: ۳۰۳

.The same report is recorded in Ahmed’s Al-Musned; ۲/۳۶۶, et al\*

Although this report is decided as authentic according to the criteria of the two)

(.Sheiks; Muslim and Al-Bukhari, it is not recorded in their books

Whereas Muslim and Al-Hakim record the same report, the latter’s form of narrating

carries a prophetic prediction of continuity of the imam’s existence till the

.Resurrection Day

:Ibn Kutheir, in his Al-Bidaya Wen Nihaya; ٥/٤٠٨, has a different opinion

In his way back to Al-Madina after having clarified rituals of the pilgrimage, the

Prophet addressed a remarkable sermon under a tree in Ghadir Khum on the eighteenth of Dhu'l-Hijja. In this sermon, he adduced many things. He referred to

Ali Bin Abi Talib's merits; honesty, decency and close standing to him. By this the Prophet removed what many people had born in hearts against Ali. Abu Jafar At-Tabari was so interested in this sermon that he compiled a two-volumed book

-in which he mentioned its way of narration and different forms. Likewise, Abul Qasim Bin Asakir; the grand scholar, recorded copious narratives appertained to

.the sermon

For Ibn Kutheir, the matter is no more than a prophetic attempt to remove the malice

some Muslims had against Ali Bin Abi Talib. Therefore, the Prophet ordered them of

halting in Ghadir Khum for proving Ali's guilelessness and seeking their satisfaction. The Prophet mentioned Ali's merits for "removing what many people

had born in hearts against Ali, in this sermon, he -the Prophet- adduced many .things." That is it

The matter would not have been worse if Ibn Kutheir had been one of sons of

p: ٣٠٤

'Abdud-Dar that Ali killed their best knights who bore the pennon of the polytheists

army in the face of the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). Any Muslim

author cannot write in such a style unless he is one of those who bore malice against

!Ali Bin Abi Talib

Now, the reason beyond the Islamic Radicalists' esteeming Ibn Kutheir and exerting particular efforts for publishing his book, has been clearly unveiled

### **!WHAT FOR WAS IT AL-JUHAF AND GHADIR KHUM**

The question cited herewith is that what for the divine mandate was revealed in the way to Al-Madina, in the heart of the desert and in the hottest time of that day

:As an answer to the question, we should cite the following

The Lord wants to address at his Prophet: "O Apostle! There is no difference between Mecca and Al-Madina. Wherever you declare the coming leadership of your progeny, the Quraishis may object and mutiny. Their impression about your progeny is incessantly firm and resolute. Your task is only conveying the messages. You have been sent for conveying the messages only. This very place and time are very much suitable for conveying. You should convey without any delay. I will protect you against the Quraishis so that you will be able to fulfill the mission of conveyance and explicating My message. I will withhold the Quraishis' hearts and mentalities, and shut mouths of the attendant devils, and treat the effects of conveyance and preserve your prophesy among them. Then, I will respite them when they shall seize your

puissance and persecute your progeny. When My will shall be materialized in your nation and progeny, I will send Al-Mahdi who shall fill in the earth with justice after it was filled in with unfairness. In any case, I am not asked about My deeds, while they shall be asked

From this cause, another question is cited: How did the Lord protect His Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) against the Quraishis that none of them attempted to confuse or object? Moreover, the most dangerous Quraishi chiefs were in Mecca; yet, a considerable deal of them was within the Prophet's caravan. The caravan also comprised a number of Quraishi Muhajirs whose loyalty was to those chiefs. Is it true then that those individuals could keep peace and control their nerves while they were listening to the Prophet's carrying the Lord's mandate of the obligatory fealty to Ali and the progeny? How did they comply with the Prophet's instructions of testifying his conveyance? How did they promise the Prophet of carrying the matter to the absent? How did they respond to the Prophet's instructions of offering congratulations to Ali on the new position of leadership

,The answer: It is the Exalted Lord Who willed the attainment of the message .constitution of the claim and preservation of the Prophet's personality and prophesy By His supreme competence, the Lord caused the Quraishis to keep peace and speak no single letter in Ghadir Khum. For the Quraishis, they received the question as if it was one of the repeated declarations uttered during the Farewell Pilgrimage, and that

the Prophet was still alive, and when he would be deceased, they would have another  
 .manner

As soon as the Quraishis tried to be emancipated from their silence, and take the first  
 ;step towards apostasy, the Lord inflicted a packed stone on An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith  
 .their spokesman, that sent him to death. Fire was hurled on another

These two sorts of heavenly punishment were taken in deep consideration by the  
 Quraishis who moved no more single pebble in the path of the Prophet's progeny's  
 .leadership

,On the other side, the Prophet was engaged in prophetic, not Quraishi  
 contemplation. He was so relieved for conveying his Lord's message so suitably. He  
 could evade the Lord's ire and punishment. Tears of contentment and piety crammed in  
 his eyes because he could attain the Lord's satisfaction for his conveying His  
 mandate of nominating Ali for leadership. The Verse respecting perfection of the  
 religion and completion of the divine grace was revealed to him. That meant that his  
 .mission had been flawlessly consummated

It was a festivity for the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) because he  
 conveyed the most burdensome message so completely that the Lord's satisfaction  
 .was gained. It was indeed the most burdensome message in his life

This time, process of conveyance was accomplished peacefully. The Quraishis did

not show any objection. Jabir Bin Samara was not affected by temporary deafness

”when the Prophet said “my progeny” or “Ali” or “the Hashemites

No planned mutiny, like that which occurred in Al-Madina only four days before the

p: ۳۰۷

Prophet’s decease when they rejected his demanding with a pen and a paper so that

he would record a document protecting against deviation forever, occurred. Thanks

God, no apostasy occurred. The Prophet was relieved for conveying his Lord’s

message so aptly. This is the message about which Al-Hassan Al-Basri recounts that

;the Prophet was disturbed due to receiving the Lord’s orders of conveying it

therefore, He threatened a punishment. The Prophet had to convey it since he feared

.the Lord’s punishment

As the narrator describes, Al-Hassan Al-Basri eluded providing an answer when he

was asked about contents of that message. This elusion is habitual in the narration of

the Quraishis’ slaves; such as Al-Hassan Al-Basri, the Persian and the others. They

used to swindle during reporting such affairs, and conceal what the Lord revealed

.(with regard to the Prophet’s progeny( peace be upon them all

The Prophet was thinking in matters more noteworthy than that of swearing

’allegiance. He was engaged in the next divine mandate and selection. Others

opinions and counsel are thoroughly disregarded when level of the divine mandate

and selection is adopted. Declaration of fealty is also disregarded and nullified unless

the prophet or his heir demand with it. In this case, it becomes obligatory upon everyone to respond. This is the very reasoning of conveyance

On that account, the Prophet did not seek anybody's counsel in the question of declaring fealty to Ali, because God's selection does not require anybody's counsel declaration of fealty or signature

When the Lord ordered His Apostle of seeking people's counsel, that was aimed at p: ۳۰۸

gaining their docility and conformity. But a decision is reached, procedures should be taken and none's opinion should be attended since the matter concerned the Lord's guidance

In like manner, when Allah; the Exalted, names the leader coming after His Prophet and instructs the Prophet to convey and disdain any expected hazard, and teaches him that he should not be responsible for guidance or deviation of any, how is it then practicable to regard anybody's counsel, and how is it practicable to take people's declaration of fealty in consideration

As he ordered them of offering congratulations to Ali for position of leadership, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) demanded with providing their admission for the divine select. This offer of congratulations, in fact, is more effective and binding than declaration of fealty. After that, people are free to do anything they like since the Prophet's mission was nothing more than conveyance

The judge shall be the Lord Who prevails everything and controls this world and the  
Hereafter. Praised and exalted be Him

Shias' narrations disclose that the Prophet directed them to swearing allegiance in  
addition to offering congratulations. This ordains that he wanted them to declare  
their commitment to comply with Ali. At any rate, they did

Pursuant to doctrine and jurisprudence, the matter is one whether they were  
demanded with swearing allegiance or offering congratulations, since the most  
important concern was conveyance. It is more effective than offering  
congratulations. Similarly, the latter is more effective than swearing allegiance

Conveyance is a matter of choice. Offering congratulations is a matter of admission

p: ۳۰۹

and compliment. Swearing allegiance is a matter of committing pledge

Owing to the absence of a good number of the Quraishi chiefs in Al-Juhafa, the  
Quraishis kept silence, temporarily. Factor of surprise and conditions of time and  
place played a considerable role in the process. Likely, they descried that the  
prophetic wording was not too adamant to block the entire courses in their faces. For  
the Quraishis, the Prophet's conveyance and consummation of the Lord's claims  
against people were ambiguous

They also perceived that they would be able to reckon the Prophet's orders of  
offering congratulations and swearing allegiance to Ali with the other ordinary

religious festivities, and denude meaning of Ali's imamate and the Prophet's progeny's leadership. In other words, the Quraishis believed that they would have enough time to conduct

### **THE PROPHETIC WORDING ACHIEVES THE AIMS AND UNVEILS THE QURAISHIS**

Sunni reference books of hadith report Abu Bakr's remorse for issuing rulings of attacking house of Ali and Fatima (peace be upon them) two or three days only after the Prophet's decease  
:Majmauzzawaid; 5/202

Abdurrahman Bin Awf: I visited Abu Bakr in his final disease... He spoke: "I am not contrite but for three acts I wish I had not done, and three others I wish I had done, and three others I wish I had asked the Prophet about  
:The three I wish I had not done are

"...I wish I had not attacked Fatima's house even I would be engaged in a war  
Abu Bakr; the Quraishi caliph, shows grief for attacking house of Fatima. He wishes  
p: 310

.he had not done so even if people of that house were preparing for combating him  
:We see we should cite this story briefly

When Abu Bakr held the leadership, he sent a messenger to Ali for carrying his orders of swearing allegiance. Ali objected so firmly as he accused them of betraying the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). Meanwhile, Abu Bakr was informed

.that a number of Ansar and Muhajirs were holding a meeting in Fatima's house

Omar suggested that the house should be attacked and the group should be threatened a burning if they insisted on abstinence from showing fealty to the new leadership. Led by Omar Bin Al-Khattab, a crowd attacked house of Fatima (peace be upon her). They surrounded the house and placed firewood around it. Some of the group who were at Fatima's house were supporting Ali's situation, while other were there for offering consolation on the Prophet's decease. The whole group, however were threatened burning if they refuse to come out. Practically, the firewood were kindled in the house yard. As he had to implement the Prophet's will, Ali could not unsheathe his sword and face those crowd. Fatima Az-Zahra went out so that they would revere her and go back. On the contrary, she suffered insults and was beaten 'by the lash of some of them so heavily that her fetus was aborted... Muslims hearts should be broken for the other tearfully sentimental events in due course, Ali and Fatima (peace be upon them) decided to seek Ansar's support

p: ۳۱۱

and demanded them with fulfilling their pledge of protecting the Prophet's household and progeny as same as they protect their families and souls Fatima was ailing due to what she had suffered on that day; therefore, Ali brought her a pack animal. Al-Hassan, Al-Hussein, Zeinab and Ummu Kulthoum accompanied their parents. They passed by Ansar's celebrities in a period of two

nights. As Fatima talked to them, their reply was: “O Daughter of the Prophet! Had we heard your words before swearing allegiance to Abu Bakr, we would never have opted for anyone other than Ali.” Az-Zahra answered: “My father did not leave any \*.”.excuse for anyone on that day in Ghadir Khum

Az-Zahra’s wording was a copy of her father’s. She is a part of him. She is too ’.immaculate to use the wording and reason of those ‘inclined heavily to the earth She is godly in creation, thinking, feelings and manners. Correspondingly, her father stated: “The Lord is surely satisfied whenever Fatima is satisfied, and enraged ”.whenever Fatima is enraged

.Refer to Al-Khissal; ١/١٧٣\*

Unlike others, she did not enjoy two characters; divine and personal, that any may prevail according to situations. Her existence is invariably harmonious. She is that unique servant of the Majestic Lord, and that genuine follower of that Apostle and .(darling father (peace be upon him and his family

She does realize that God; the Exalted, deals with people by constituting claims against them, in principals and items of Islam, in bases of the creed and chapters of .the law, in matters mandated upon people during or after the Prophet’s lifetime

p: ٣١٢

Masterfully, her father did constitute the Lord’s claim against people in the whole affairs. The greatest claim was the right given exclusively to her husband and her

two sons whom were nominated as guardians and leaders of this nation after her  
father

,Using this conception, Az-Zahra (peace be upon her) spoke to Ansar. Explanatorily she said: “You have provided a political reply. Conception of the divine claim is more elevated than that of political games. It also prevails, unveils and is preceded to such political games. My father (peace be upon him and his family) did convey the ;Lord’s messages. He directed that the Powerful Lord had settled the matter when He the Exalted, named the leader of His Apostle’s nation. You have never been given any opportunity to choose for yourselves, especially when God and the Prophet settled the question. Henceforward, you are put under the claim of my father, and mine. Excellent appointment shall be the Resurrection Day, and excellent master shall be Mohammed (peace be upon him and his family). There, the wrong shall be  
”the losers

According the conception of the prophetic duties and conveyance, declaration of Ghadir was so much immortal godly act. The countering acts were so powerful according to political conceptions. Such unproved political prevalence is inevitably meaningless, even if it will last for years or centuries, or till the advent of the  
.(promised Mahdi (peace be upon him

## CHAPTER FOUR

### VERSE OF IKMALUDDIN

It is unexaggerated to authorize that thoughtful study of the events incited revelation

p: ۳۱۳

of the Quranic texts contributes in contriving objective movement since it unveils a good deal of facts, and repeals many postulates people adopted as facts for ages.

This

is by reason that statistical aspect in events incited revelation of the Quranic texts is more elucidative than the other aspects of exegesis of the Holy Quran. When there

are five contrary narratives; each mentions a definite event, place and date for revelation of a Quranic text, then it will be unacceptable to receive them all as their narrators are so trustful that prosperity is attained when any is followed! The fact in

such a situation is that only one of these five is correct, and the others should be thrown away. This distinct feature made the events incited revelation of the Quranic texts a decisive theme in exegesis. Nevertheless, the task of studying such a matter is as emphatic as its importance. Furthermore, it is more emphatic and arduous because

.of the confusion and contrast in the narratives

At any rate, exegesists of the Quranic texts have to knock this door so actively and tolerably in order that they will serve nations and coming generations with the results

of their searches that should be modish and useful in course of understanding the

,Quranic and prophetic texts, in specific, and the entire concepts of the creed

jurisprudence and the other Islamic aspects in general

The forecited introductory should be acceptably sufficient for the coming thesis in

.the events incited revelation of the Quranic texts

It is not unfamiliar that Muslims are engaged in inconsistency regarding defining the

p: ۳۱۴

earliest Quranic texts, for they were not Muslims then, and they, except few, did not

record the Prophet's words. That was the reason beyond their discrepancies about

.such prophetic words and deeds

.In due course, it is not unaccustomed to propose four Quranic texts as the earliest

As-Suyouti, in his *Al-Itqan*; ۱/۹۱, mentions four texts defined as being the earlier

Quranic revelation. They are sura of Alaq, sura of Muddethir, sura of Fatiha and 'In

'the Name of Allah, the Beneficent, the Merciful

The most unfamiliar matter is their discrepancy about the latest revealed text. When

the latest Quranic text was revealed, Muslims were united nation that encompassed

their Prophet who had predicted the imminence of his final departure, and

accompanied them during their ritual pilgrimage, and they bid his farewell. All that

.and they are engaged in discrepancy regarding defining the latest Quranic text

That was because of the fact that political purposes had nothing to do with the

.earliest Quranic text, while they had many things to do with the latest

**SURA OF MAIDA IS THE FINAL QURANIC CHAPTER**

Reference books of hadith, jurisprudence and exegesis prove that sura of Maida was the latest Quranic chapter, and Verse of Ikmaluddin, which was revealed after revealing the entire precepts, was the latest Quranic text. It is also emphasized that some of the Prophet's companions attempted to cite other suras and Verses as the latest.

### THE PROPHET'S PROGENY'S OPINION

:Al-Ayashi's Tafsir; ١/٢٨٨

Ali stated: Quranic texts were repealed by the newer ones. The Prophet used to ...

p: ٣١٥

adopt the latest. Sura of Maida repealed the other chapters since it was the latest

.The sura was revealed to the Prophet while he was riding that brown-red mule

The revelation was so ponderous that the pack animal had to stop, and its abdomen was about to touch the ground. The Prophet was fainted that he placed

his hand on Sheiba Bin Wahab Al-Jamhi's braid. After a while, he raised his head

and recited sura of Maida. He carried out, and we did, too

Ali (peace be upon him) intends to assert that passing the hand over the feet during performing the ritual ablution is the obligatory form, and that washing them totally is invalid, since the earlier form was revealed in the latest sura, without any repeal, and

\*.practiced by the Prophet and Muslims

:Al-Kafi; ١/٢٨٩

Abu Jafar (peace be upon him): Allah; the Powerful the Elevated, imposed ...

loyalty to Ali as He revealed: (Only Allah is your guardian and His Apostle and

(those who believe, those how keep prayers and pay the poor rate while they bow

People were not aware of loyalty to the Guardians' leadership. Hence, the Prophet

peace be upon him and his family) was commanded of explicating that loyalty in)

the same way he had explicated the obligatory rites of prayer, poor rate, fasting

and pilgrimage. As he anticipated that people would apostatize or belie him if he

would nominate the Guardians, the Prophet sought the Lord's more instructions

The Lord revealed: (O Apostle! Deliver what has been revealed to you from your

p: ۳۱۶

Lord, and if you do it not, then you have not revealed His message. And God will

(protect you from the people

,immediately, he carried out the Lord's mandate when he called people to gather

and conveyed the divinely imposed leadership of Ali, and instructed the

attendants to carry the mandate to the absent. That was in Ghadir Khum

.The same is recorded in Nouru Thaqalein; ۱.۵۸۲, and ۵/۴۴۷\*

Precepts were revealed consecutively. Precept of loyalty to the Guardians was...

the sealing; therefore, closely after the Prophet's declaration of Ghadir, God

revealed: (This day have I perfected for you your religion and completed My

favor on you and chosen for you Islam as a religion.) By this Verse, the Lord

.meant that He should not reveal any more precept, since He had perfected them

:Al-Yaqubi's Tarikh; 2/43

It is also stated that Verse of Ikmaluddin was the final. This is the most ...

.accurate and authentic saying

### **SUNNI NARRATIVES CONCORDANT TO THE PROPHET'S PROGENY'S OPINION**

:Ad-Durrul Manthour; 2/252

Abu Meysara: The final revealed sura was Maida. Seventeen precepts were ...

.revealed in that sura

:Al-Muhella; 9/407

Aisha: "Sura of Maida was the last. You should deem lawful whatever you find

".sanctioned in it, and you should deem unlawful whatever you find prohibited

On that account, the Verse is in sura of Maida. Whence it is invalid to reckon it

.with the repealed. It is decisive, then

:Al-Muhella; 7/389

Aisha: "Sura of Maida is the last. You should deem unlawful whatever you ...

\*".find prohibited in this sura

p: 317

:Majmauzzawaid; 1/256

Sa'd mentioned legitimacy of passing the hand over the sandals during the ritual

ablution... Abdullah Bin Abbas addressed at Sa'd: "None can deny that the

Prophet did pass his hands over them. But it is unproved that he kept this deed  
"...after revelation of sura of Maida. This sura decided everything. It was the final

Hence, non could replied

-Al-Heithami comments that the same report is registered in At-Tabarani's Al  
Mujamul Awset, and a part of it is recorded in Ibn Madga's. He also cites Ibn

:This very report is recorded in the following reference books of hadith\*

Ahmed's Al-Musned; 6/188

Al-Beihaqi's As-Sunan; 7/172. (Two reports; one is narrated by Ibn Nufeir and the

(.other by Abdullah Bin Amr

.Tabaqatul Hanabila; 1/427

Al-Hakim's Al-Mustedrak; 2/311. (He comments: Although the two sheiks -Muslim  
and Al-Bukhari- did not register, this report is decided as authentic according to their  
criteria. The same commentary is recorded after the report of Abdullah Bin Amr in  
(.this regard

Later on, the reader will understand that the two Sheiks -Muslim and Al-Bukahridid  
not record the reports for paying deference to Omar who cited other suras as the

.final Quranic chapters

Hebban's opinion in Ubeid Bin Ubeida At-Temmar; one of the reporters. Ibn

.Hebban decided the man as trustful but reports strange narratives

Al-Heithami aims at regarding dubiety of the report since that trustful narrator, who

reports strange narrators, is one of the series. The strange reports carried by that narrator stand for the prophetic texts opposing the ruling authorities' regulations and

p: ٣١٨

laws that decided the obligation of washing the feet during the ritual ablution, and

.named other suras as the final

:Ad-Durrul Manthour; ٢/٢٥٢

The Prophet (peace be upon him) stated: Sura of Maida is one of the last...

revealed Quranic texts. You should regard what was revealed in it respecting

.questions of the licit and the illicit

This narration was unique in adding 'one of' to the prophetic saying. This additional

word seems doubtful since it is perceived that it is added for reconciling actuality

.and regulations adopted by the ruling authorities

:Tafsirul Bayan; ٣/٤١٣

.Abdullah Bin Omar: Sura of Maida was the final

:Al-Ghadir; ١/٢٢٨

Ibn Kutheir, Ahmed, Al-Hakim and An-Nisai record Aisha's saying: "Sura of

".Maida was the final

.It is conclusive that the Prophet's progeny attest that Sura of Maida was the final

This fact is supported by numerous authentic narratives entered in the reference

books depended by the Sunnis; our brothers. Moreover, it is not unacceptable to

maintain that Verse of Ikmaluddin stands idiosyncratically as an evidence on our claim. This Verse implies that the entire precepts have been consummated, and no more would be revealed. In addition, like the forecited report ascribed to imam Al-Baqir, there are many texts providing for this meaning. The coming narratives of At-Tabari, Al-Beihaqi and As-Seddi support so Subject to the previous, any saying claiming revelation of any precept after the Verse should be refuted. Similarly, every Quranic text claimed to be revealed after it should be bare of precepts and rulings

### THE CONTRADICTIONARY OPINIONS

p: ٣١٩

This clear-cut identified matter became so ambiguous that many narratives discussed

it so contradictorily and oppositely. It became worse when such contradictory narratives were decided as authentic since they were opinions of the grand Sahaba the Prophet's companions- that none can criticize

Due to his embarrassment, As-Suyouti has to abbreviate the copious opinions respecting the final revelation. Unlike the four opinions regarding the earliest revealed text, As-Suyouti, in Al-Itqan; ١/١٠١, can not even list those respecting the final. Hence, we are to list them so that the reader will notice the origination of such opinions

1. The final is Verse of Riba –usury–; sura of Baqara, Verse ۲۷۸.

2. The final is Verse of Kelala; sura of Nisa; Verse ۱۷۶.

3. The final is Verse ۲۸۱ of sura of Baqara.

4. The final is Verse ۱۲۸ of sura of Tawba.

5. The final is Verse ۲۵ of sura of Anbiya.

6. The final is Verse ۱۱۰ of sura of Kahf.

7. The final is Verse ۹۳ of sura of Nisa.

8. The final is sura of Tawba.

9. The final is sura of Nasr.

At any rate, the actual contradictory opinions regarding identifying the final revealed

text, amount twice as much this number

### **ORIGINATION OF THIS CONTRADICTIONARY OPINIONS**

The following story may focus light on the origination of such a contradiction and

confusion.

As he could not cite the exegesis of Verse of usury, Omar excused that the Verse was

the final, and the Prophet was deceased before he had explained

Since then, this Verse found itself a place in the opinions regarding the final Quranic

p: ۳۲۰

text, and vied with sura of Maida

In any event, usury is discussed in four Quranic Verses some of which were revealed

?in Mecca. Which one was intended to be the final

As usual, the justifiers of Omar contributed in absolving the problem. They

introduced the Verse ۲۷۸ of sura of Baqara as the very one intended by the caliph

For this cause, they believed that the final Quranic Verse was arranged in sura of Baqara which was revealed in the earliest stage of the Prophet's immigration. They

also instructed that prohibition of usury was an additional legislation, since it was

revealed after Verse of Ikmaluddin

Seemingly, they conceive that such an irony is acceptable, since it restrictively aims

at defending the caliph

:Ahmed's Al-Musnad; ۱/۳۶

Omar (God be pleased to him) said: "Verse of usury was the final. The Prophet...

was deceased before he had explained it. Therefore, you should leave usury and

suspect

.The same is recorded in Kenzul Ummal; ۴/۱۸۶

:As-Serakhsi's Al-Mabsut; ۲/۵۱ and ۱۲/۱۱۴

Omar (God be pleased to him) said: "Verse of usury was the final. The Prophet

was deceased before he had elucidated it

:As-Suyouti's Al-Itqan; ۱/۱۰۱

.Ibn Abbas: "Verse of usury was the final

.Al-Beihaqi relates that Omar said the same statement

Ahmed and Ibn Madga record that Omar said that Verse of usury was one of the  
final revealed texts

Like that of sura of Maida, this (one of) cannot settle the problem, since the other  
narratives identify Verse of usury as the final

Another story: One day –many days in fact–, Omar; the caliph, could not perceive  
p: ۳۲۱

the meaning of Kelala. He was perplexed because he could not understand it till  
death!! Consequently, he had to stated that the Verse was the final, and the Prophet  
was deceased before he had explained it, or he explained it insufficiently

:Al-Bukhari's Sahih; ۵/۱۱۵

Al-Bera Bin Azib: "Sura of Tawba was the final. The final Verse in sura of Nisa  
was the final revealed Verse

.Al-Bukhari records similar narrative on page ۱۸۵ of part ۵

:As-Suyouti's Al-Itqan; ۱/۱۰۱

.Al-Bera Bin Azib: "The final Verse in sura of Nisa was the final revealed Verse  
The final revealed sura was that of Tawba

:Ahmed's Al-Musned; ۴/۲۹۸

Al-Bera: "Sura of Tawba was the final. The final Verse in sura of Nisa was the  
final revealed Verse

Since then, Verse of Kelala pushed its way in the opinions regarding the final

Quranic text, and vied with sura of Maida. The final Quranic text became either Verses of usury and Kelala or sura of Maida that comprises Verse of Isma and .Ikmaluddin

During observing the Sunni reference books of hadith concerning the question of usury and Kelala, I was shocked by Omar's problem with these two matters generally and the latter specifically. The caliph reckoned it with the most remarkable questions of the Islamic nation. He used to provide it from the Prophet's pulpit. He kept on providing it as a grand problem till his final hours when he willed Muslims to find it a solution. This inexplicable matter unveils Omar's deep feeling of embarrassment before Muslims, because he could not perceive the question

p: ۳۲۲

:Al-Bukhari's Sahih; ۶/۲۴۲

:Ibn Omar: From the Prophet's pulpit, Omar orated Prohibition of intoxicants was revealed. Sources of intoxicants are resrictedly“ five materials; grapes, dates, wheat, barley and honey. Intoxicants are only what (stuns the mind. Three questions if only had the Prophet (peace be upon him established a rule to which we would refer in understanding them. They are –the ”.inherited shares of – the forefather, the Kelala and molds of usury The same is recorded in Muslim's Sahih; ۲/۸۱ more detailedly. Like narratives are ;recorded in the same book; ۵/۶۱ and ۸/۲۴۵. Ibn Madga also records it in As-Sunan

-As-Suyouti, in Ad-Durrul Manthour; ٢/٢٢٤٩, avers that Abdurrezaq, Al .٢/٩١٠

.Bukhari, Muslim, Ibn Jarir and Ibnul-Munthir relate the narrative to Omar

This authentic narrative proves that Omar did not seek the Prophet's explanation of the Kelala. This meaning is obviously asserted by the following narrative recorded in

:Al-Hakim's Al-Mustedrak; ٢/٣٠٣

,Omar stated: "I would prefer my seeking the Prophet's naming his successor ...

and judging of those who admit the poor rate but refrain from defraying it, and

".explaining the Kelala, to having the best kind of camels

Unlike the previous, Muslim reports that Omar did seek the Prophet's explaining the

.Kelala

:Muslim's Sahih; ٥/٤١

Madan Bin Abi Talha: One Friday, Omar Bin Al-Khattab addressed an oration, in

:which he praised the Prophet and Abu Bakr, and said

I shall leave nothing more significant than Kelala. I have never consulted the

Prophet (peace be upon him) in a matter more importunately than this. He was

p: ٣٢٣

never been cruel to me for any matter like that of Kelala. It reached the degree

that he fixed his finger in my chest and said: "O Omar! Is Verse of Summer -the

"?final of sura of Nisa- not sufficing you

I should enucleate it so evidently that every one, whether a reciter of the Quran or

.not, will take in, provided that I shall be alive

This indicates that Omar did ask the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) an explanation so repeatedly that the Prophet was enraged for Omar's lack of cognition

Furthermore, the coming authentic narratives point that the Prophet did foretell of Omar's lack of cognition, or did supplicate the Lord for disabling Omar to

.understand it

:Ad-Durrul Manthour; ٢/٢٥٠

Hutheifeh: During a journey, Verse of Kelala was revealed to the Prophet. He

.stopped and recited it to me that I memorized. I recited it to Omar

In his caliphate, Omar summoned me to explain Kelala. "I tutored you exactly as

the same as the Prophet (peace be upon him) had tutored me. I am not to add

.anything to that explanation," I said

:Kenzul Ummal; ١١/٨٠

(Sa'eed Bin Al-Museyyeb: Omar asked the Prophet (peace be upon him ~ ٣٠٠٤٨٨

how those who have neither parents nor offspring would be inherited. The Prophet

(..denoted to the Verse: (And if a man or a woman leaves property to be inherited

As if he could not grasp the meaning, Omar requested his daughter to ask the

Prophet, as soon as she notices his being comfortable, about the question. "Was it

p: ٣٢٤

your father who incited you asking this question? I see he shall not conceive it at

.all,” stated the Prophet

Omar used to point to this prophetic statement and admit that he should not understand it at all

As-Suyouti, in Ad-Durrul Manthour; ٢/٢٤٩, avers that the Prophet wrote down the explanation of Verse of Kelala on a paper

Tawus: Omar requested Hafsa to ask the Prophet (peace be upon him) about question of Kelala. Having recorded it on a parchment, the Prophet said to her Who asked you so? Is it Omar? I see he shall not understand it. Is he not sufficed“ ”?by Verse of Summer

Ostensibly, these authentic reports are so contradictory. Al-Bukhari discerns that Kelala was one of three questions the Prophet had neither explicated nor had Omar asked him about. Meanwhile, their authentic narratives contend that the Prophet did write the explanation of the question on a parchment

This is a charge of the Prophet’s showing blemish in explicating the Quran the interpretation of which is a divine mandate addressed at him. This charge has been proved as inaccurate by the claimants themselves. We have previously discussed the Sunnis’ accusing Shias of claiming the Prophet’s concealing the explication of some Quranic Verses

The second question is the Prophet’s succession. Al-Bukhari himself records that Omar rejected importunately the Prophet’s demand with a pen and a paper so that he

would record a document protecting the Muslims against deviation forever. That was  
.during the Prophet's final disease

The third question is Al-Bukhari's claiming the Prophet's showing blemish in

p: ۳۲۵

explicating some parts of usury. The Prophet did explicate this question and Omar  
.might have recorded in on a parchment or the like

### **INDICATION OF THE TWO STORIES**

The previous stories indicate that reference books of the Sunnis; our brothers, are  
too

contradictory to be accepted totally. It is essential to admit only some of them. It is

utterly inadmissible to conceive that Omar did not seek the Prophet's explication of

the Verse just because it was the final, or that he did seek so repeatedly that the

Prophet fixed his finger in his chest, and pushed away, and was enraged... etc. It is

,also impracticable to perceive that Verses of Kelala or usury were the final. In fact

.Sunni reference books of hadith are filled in with such contradictory matters

In due course, the stories imply that Omar had prevalence on Sunnis to the degree

!that he could turn his unreasonable claims into undiscussible facts

For Sunnis, the most important matter is adapting exegesis of the holy Quran and

events incited revelation to Omar's statements, even though such statements are

contradictory, or even this may lead to accusing the Prophet of showing blemish in

the mission of conveyance, or this may invent an incompatible confusion in God's religion or deeds

Those who reject such matters should be, in Sunni's logic, decided as Rafidites who are foes of Islam, the Prophet and the companions

Correspondingly, the stories, according to Omar's opinion, denote that Verses of usury and Kelala, and perhaps many other subjects, were revealed after Verse of p: ۳۲۶

Ikmaluddin. This means that Allah; the Elevated, informed the Muslims of perfection of the religion while there were still many questions to be revealed later on. This is unacceptable

The respectful should never accept to accuse the Lord and His Apostle for nothing more than acquitting an ordinary man

### OTHER OPINIONS

We are to mention the other opinions regarding the final revealed Quranic text in brief

:Al-Bukhari's Sahih; ۵/۱۸۲

Sa'eed Bin Jubeir: ... Ibn Abbas stated: "God's saying: (And whoever kills a believer intentionally...,) was not repealed by any other Quranic text since it was the final

:Al-Bukhari's Sahih; ۶/۱۵, and Ad-Durrul Manthour; ۲/۱۹۶

Sa'eed Bin Jubeir: People of Kufa were engaged in discrepancy respecting the Verse discussed murderers of the believers. I asked Ibn Abbas about it. "This Verse was not repealed by any other Quranic text since it was the final," asserted  
Ibn Abbas

:An-Nawawi's Al-Majmu; 18/345

In Al-Bukhari's Sahih, it is recorded that the Verse: (And whoever kills a believer intentionally....) was not repealed by any other Quranic text since it was the final

The same is recorded in Muslim's Sahih and An-Nisai's As-Sunan. It is also  
recorded in Abu Dawud's As-Sunan

-It is inappropriate for Muslims to accept such (authentic) narratives recorded by Al-Bukhari and others, and related to Ibn Abbas and others, and it is unsuitable to admit that prohibition of killing believers was an additional legislation since it was  
revealed after Verse of Ikmaluddin

:Al-Hakim's Al-Mustedrak; 2/338

Ubey Bin Ka'b: God's saying: (Certainly an Apostle has come to you...) was the  
p: 327

.last revealed Quranic text

This (authentic) narrative indicates that the last two Verses of sura of Tawba were  
the final

:Ad-Durrul Manthour; 3/295

Ubey Bin Ka'b: God's saying: (Certainly an Apostle has come to you...) was...

.the last revealed Quranic text

Ubey Bin Ka'b: The nearest Verses to God are His saying: (Certainly an...

(...Apostle has come to you

Ubey Bin Ka'b: The Prophet recited the Verses: (Certainly an Apostle has...

.come to you...) These were the final

.Ubey Bin Ka'b stated that he had received these two Verses from the Prophet...

Othman attested. Ubey suggested to place them at the end of the last revealed

\*.sura. Sura of Tawba was the last revealed sura

.Similar narratives are recorded in Abu Dawud's As-Sunan; 1/182

:Muslim's Sahih; 8/243

?Ibn Abbas: Do you know what was the last revealed sura

.Ubeidullah: Yes, I know. It is sura of Nasr

.Ibn Abbas: Yes, that is it

:At-Tirmithi's As-Sunan; 6/326

.Ibn Abbas: Sura of Nasr was the final

:Al-Ghadir; 1/228

.Abdullah Bin Omar: Suras of Maida and Fath (Nasr) were the final

.This narration is recorded in Ibn Kutheir's Tafsir; 2/2

:Ad-Durrul Manthour; 6/407

Abu Hureira: God's saying: (When there comes the help of Allah and the victory....) was the Lord's knowledge and appointment given to the Apostle. It indicated that the Prophet would not spend a long age after conquest of Mecca

.Ibn Abbas: Sura of Nasr was the final

:At-Tabarani's Al-Mujamul Kabir; ١٢/١٩

Ibn Abbas: The final revealed Verse was God's saying: (And guard yourselves (...against a day in which you shall be returned to Allah

p: ٣٢٨

.These narratives are discussed thoroughly in our Tadwinul Qur'an\*

.At length, let us refer to the last claim regarding identifying the final revealed Verse

Muawiya Bin Abi Sufian found himself suitable enough to provide his opinion in this regard. On the pulpit, he denied that Verse of Ikmaluddin had been the final. He issued that the last verse of sura of Kahf was the final. He added that it was revealed

.as a discipline directed to the Prophet

:At-Tabarani's Al-Mujamul Kabir; ١٩/٣٩٢

Amr Bin Qeis: Muawiya was on the pulpit when he recited God's saying: (This day have I perfected for you your religion...) He commented that the Verse was revealed on day of Arafa, which was Friday. Afterwards, he recited the last Verse of sura of Kahf and commented that it was the final revealed Quranic text. He

.added that it was revealed as a discipline directed to the Prophet

As he noticed the excessive contradiction intentionally stated for moving Verse of Ikmaluddin away from sealing of the Quran and the Farewell Pilgrimage and Ghadir

.Khum, As-Suyouti decided the sayings of Omar and Muawiya as problematic

-Without avoiding the custom of covering up contradiction of their dearest ones, As

.Suyouti passed by the matter so quickly in order that none would wonder

:As-Suyouti's Al-Itqan; ١/١٠٢

,Despite the fact that many narratives asserted the revelation of Verses of usury debt and Kelala after that of Ikmaluddin, many scholars, such as As-Seddi, proved

that no licit or illicit matters were revealed after Verse of Ikmaluddin which was

p: ٣٢٩

revealed on day of Arafa during the Farewell Pilgrimage. Therefore, it is

.problematic to regard such claims

Ibn Jarir says: It is preferable to state that Verse of Ikmaluddin dedicated rites of

.the pilgrimage and banishment of the non Muslims to perfection of the religion

Ibn Jarir, whose words might be admitted by As-Suyouti, wants to say that the only

solution for the Prophet's companions' contradictory opinions respecting the final

revealed Verse should be restricting perfection of the religion and completion of the

divine grace to the liberation of Mecca, in order that Omar's sayings about Verses of

Kelala and usury, and Muawiya's sayings about the final disciplinary Verse would

.be saved

Such sorts of verdicts are repeatedly issued for the sake of admitting the Prophet's companions' words even if this would lead to disregarding the denotations of the Lord's Verses and the Prophet's words. Conditionally, the Prophet's household are excluded.

In due course, the Prophet's companions are granted the degree of sinlessness, and the veto against the words of God and His Apostle. In other words, the Prophet's companions' words are the final judgment with the existence of rulings of God and His Apostle.

After all, the followers are imposed to admit such judgment, and close the eyes before the facts, and keep the ears off limits so that screams of evident and authentic divine and prophetic words shall not be heard.

The result of such a course is that they concluded that Verse of Ikmaluddin was not the final, nor was sura of Maida the seal of the Quran. The Verse does not mean p: ۳۳۰.

perfection of the religious rulings. It means perfection of conquest of Mecca. This means that (This day) mentioned in the Verse stands for two years ago.

Later on, the reader will receive that Omar asserted that (This day) refers to the day on which the Verse was revealed. Moreover, Al-Qurtubi recognizes that it refers to the very hour in which the Verse was revealed.

In the Name of Allah, the Beneficent, the Merciful

O you who believe! Do not violate the signs appointed by Allah nor the sacred month, nor interfere with the offerings, nor the sacrificial animals with garlands, nor those going to the sacred house seeking the grace and pleasure of their Lord; and that you are free from the obligations of the pilgrimage, then hunt, and let not hatred of a people because they hindered you from the Sacred Masjid incite you to exceed the limits, and help one another in goodness and piety, and do not help one another in sin and aggression; and be careful of your duty to Allah; surely Allah is severe in requiting evil

Forbidden to you is that which dies of itself, and blood, and flesh of swine, and that on which any other name than that of Allah has been invoked, and the strangled animal and that beaten to death, and that killed by a fall and that ,killed by being smitten with the horn, and that which wild beasts have eaten except what you slaughter, and what is sacrificed on stones set up for idols and

p: ۳۳۱

that you divide by the arrows; that is a transgression. This day have those who disbelieve despair of your religion, so fear them not, and fear Me. This day have I perfected for you your religion and completed My favor on you and chosen for you Islam as a religion; but whoever is compelled by hunger, not inclining willfully to sin, then surely Allah is Forgiving, Merciful

## VERSE OF IKMALUDDIN AND THE FORBIDDEN MEAT

In the first place comes the unusual situation of the Verse. Hadithists and exegesists ,record that it was revealed during the Farewell Pilgrimage as an independent Verse while the reader notice its being a part of a Verse concerning the forbidden meat. It ,seems the Verse was unsuitably interpolated in this place that if it is removed .meaning of the whole Verse would be full and uninterrupted

?What is the purpose beyond such a text

Was this situation the original place of the Verse, or was it some of the Prophet's ?companions who intended to place it here

In any form, we do renounce any statement claiming occurrence of any distortion in the Lord's Book. We only put this question hoping that some will provide an answer .for the relationship between perfection of the religion and the forbidden meat

It is likely that the position of the Verse was in the end of sura of Maida, but ,compilers of the Quranic Verses could not show deference to this matter; therefore .they fixed it in this position

Furthermore, it is rather acceptable to settle the Verse after those concerning the

p: ۳۳۲

forbidden meat, but it is definitely unsatisfactory to accept that the Wisest Lord might reveal this sealing Verse in the middle of others concerning the forbidden meat. the Lord says that the religion has been perfected to people, how is it

?acceptable to follow this statement with numerous canons and rulings

:Ad-Durrul Manthour; ٢/٢٥٩

As-Seddi: God's saying: (This day have I perfected for you your religion...,) was

.revealed on day of Arafa. No licit or illicit matter was revealed afterwards

:Ad-Durrul Manthour; ٢/٢٥٧

Ibn Abbas: ...The Prophet stopped at Mountain Arafat when God revealed: (This

day have I perfected for you your religion...) No licit or illicit matter was

.revealed afterwards

So copious are sayings and reports supporting the fact that no rulings or regulations

were revealed after Verse of Ikmaluddin. Besides, this meanings is understood from

the Verse itself. Lexicologists go through this meaning when they discuss the

.purports of perfection and completion

## **MEANINGS OF PERFECTION AND COMPLETION THROUGH THE QURAN AND NAHJUL BALAGHA**

There are three opinions pertaining to meanings and events incited the revelation of

.the Verse

:First: The Prophet's progeny's opinion

The Prophet's progeny consign Thursday, the eighteenth of Dhu'l-Hijja as the date

of the revelation. That was in Al-Juhafa while the Prophet was in his way back from

the Farewell Pilgrimage. The Lord revealed the mandate of causing the Muslims to

halt in Ghadir Khum, just before the cross road, and conveying the obligatory fealty to Ali's leadership after him. The Prophet did

:The following are models of the Prophet's progeny's reports

p: ۳۳۳

:Al-Kuleini's Al-Kafi; ۱/۲۸۹

Abu Jafar spoke: "The precepts were revealed consecutively. The mandate of... fealty to Ali's leadership was revealed. Hence, God revealed: (This day have I ...perfected for you your religion

A man asked Imam Al-Baqir whether the Prophet's nominating Ali was a... personal act or according to a divine mandate. "Woe is you!" Imam Al-Baqir said angrily, "The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) was too reverent to say what God did not order of. Like precepts of prayer, poor rate, fasting and pilgrimage, Ali's nomination for leadership was a precept of Allah

:Al-Kuleini's Al-Kafi; ۱/۱۹۸

.Imam Ar-Rida stated: "People ignore the fact, and their notions are deceptive... The Lord had completed the religion before he took His Apostle (peace be upon him and his family) to Him. The Lord revealed the Quran that comprised the elucidation of everything; the licit, the illicit, the doctrinal provisions, the rulings and whatever people need. This is God's saying: (We have not neglected anything in the Book.) During the Farewell Pilgrimage, which was in the final days of the

Prophet's lifetime, God revealed: (This day have I perfected for you your religion  
(and completed My favor on you and chosen for you Islam as a religion

The affair of imamate is a part of completion of the religion. The Prophet had proclaimed the signs of the religion before he left people. He showed them the straight way and left them on the path of right. Finally, he nominated Ali as their leader and imam. The Prophet had not left any needed matter without explication

p: ۳۳۴

He is refuting Allah's book that whoever claims that the Lord had not perfected His religion. Accordingly, he is an atheist that whoever refutes Allah's book

How dare they opt for their own opinions while they do not recognize the  
?substance of imamate and its role in the nation

Imamate is too noble, eminent, elevated, fortified and deep to be attained by  
.people's minds or notions. People are too short to select their imams

Allah; the Powerful the Elevated, gave imamate exclusively to Abraham the confidant (peace be upon him), as a third competency and honorable virtue added to prophesy and confidence. The Lord praised this competency as He said: (He

said: Surely I will make you an imam of men. Abraham said: And of my  
(.offspring? My covenant does not include the unjust, said He

Abraham the confidant was delighted for this competency, and asked it for his offspring. This Verse invalidates imamate of every unjust till the Resurrection

Day. It was given to the choice exclusively. Abraham was newly dignified by the  
:Lord Who granted his choice and immaculate offspring this imamate. He said

.And We gave him Isaaq and Jacob, a son's son, and We made them all good)

And We made them imams who guided people by Our command, and We  
revealed to them the doing of good and the keeping up of prayer and the giving of  
(.the alms, and Us alone did they serve

This imamate has been kept in Abraham's offspring successively. The Lord gave

it to the Prophet in heritage. He said: (Most surely the nearest of people to

p: ۳۳۵

Abraham are those who followed him and this Prophet and those who believe, and

(.Allah is the guardian of the believers

Imamate were peculiarly enjoyed by the Prophet who gave it to Ali (peace be  
upon him) according to the mandate of Allah; the Exalted, in a form designated by

Him. It moved to Ali's choice offspring whom were given knowledge and faith by

Allah. This is God's saying: (And those who are given knowledge and faith will

say: Certainly you tarried according to the ordinance of Allah till the day of

(.resurrection

,This imamate will be kept in Ali's progeny exclusively till the Resurrection Day

since there shall be no prophet after Mohammed (peace be upon him and his

.(family

”?Then, how is it possible for those ignorant to select

:Second: Sunnis’ Opinion concordant to the Prophet’s progeny’s

Sunnis relate tens of narratives regarding the declaration of fealty in Ghadir. Some of these are first class reports, according to their criteria. At-Tabari compiled the texts and ways of narrating that declaration of fealty in a two-volumed book. This book was titled ‘Al-Wilayai’. Ibn Asakir and many others recorded like reports. These reports entirely refer to the Prophet’s raising Ali’s hand as elevated as possible, and conveying the Lord’s mandate of declaring fealty to his next leadership and imamate.

A number of the fanatic Sunnis criticized At-Tabari, whom is highly honored, for that work, since they anticipated that Shias would constitute it as an evidence, and would refer to it during argument.

A great deal of these narratives assert that Verse of Ikmaluddin was revealed on that

p: ۳۳۶

day in Ghadir just after the Prophet’s conveying the Lord’s mandate of declaring fealty to the coming leadership of Ali (peace be upon him).

Unfortunately, most of Sunni scholars who admit reports of Ghadir, reject that Verse of Ikmaluddin was revealed on that occasion. Instead, they admit sayings of Omar and Muawiya who claimed its revelation on day of Arafa.

A good number of Shiite former and recent scholars compile the narratives respecting the Ghadir declaration of fealty. The following compilers and books are

:among the most famed recent ones

.An-Naqawi Al-Hindi in Abaqatul Anwar

.Sheik Al-Amini in Al-Ghadir

.Sayyid Al-Marashi in Sharhu Ihqaqil Haq

.Sayyid Al-Milani in Nafahatul Azhar

A good deal of narratives recorded in the Sunni reference books of hadith; all attested that Verse of Ikmaluddin was revealed on that day in Ghadir after the

-Prophet's nominating Ali as the coming leader and imam, are compiled in Al

.Amini's Al-Ghadir

:The following is a brief quotation from Al-Ghadir; ١/٢٣٠

God's saying: (This day have I perfected...) was one of the Verses revealed for

.Amirul Muminin (peace be upon him) on that day in Ghadir

:The following are some of Sunni scholars who attest this concern

At-Tabari, Abu Jafar Mohammed Bin Jarir. ...-٣١٠. In Al-Wilaya, he relates the ١

narration that the Verse was revealed for Amirul Muminin Ali (peace be upon

.him) on that day in Ghadir, to Zeid Bin Arqam

Alisfahani, Ibn Merdawayih. ...-٤١٠. He relates the narration to Abu Sa'eed ٢

.Al-Khidri, and relates another to Abu Hureira

Alisbahani, Abu Nueim. ...-٤٣٠. In Ma nazala Minel Qur'ani Fi Ali, he ٣

:relates the following to Abu Sa'eed Al-Khidri

The Prophet summoned people to declare fealty to Ali in Ghadir Khum. He gave the orders of sweeping thorns under a tree, and raised Ali from the arms as elevated as possible... Before people's scattering, God revealed: (This day have ...I

:Al-Baghdadi, Abu Bakr Al-Khatib. ...-٤٦٣. In his Tarikh; ٨/٢٩٠, he records .٤

Abu Hureira: When the Prophet (peace be upon him) said: "He whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master," Omar addressed at Ali: "Congratulations, son of "Abu Talib! You have become my master, and the master of every Muslim

...Thence, God revealed: (This day have I

...As-Sejistani, Abu Sa'eed. ...-٤٧٧. In Al-Wilaya, he relates the narrative to .٥

Abu Sa'eed Al-Khidri

Ashafii, Abul-Hassan Ibnul-Meghazili. ...-٤٨٣. In Al-Menaqib, he relates it .٦

.to... Abu Hureira

Al-Hasakani, Abul-Qasim Al-Hakim. He relates the following to Abu Sa'eed .٧

:Al-Khidri

With the revelation of Verse of Ikmaluddin, the Prophet shouted: "Allah be the Greatest for perfection of the religion, and completion of the grace, and the Lord's "satisfaction with my conveyance and leadership of Ali Bin Abi Talib after me

Ad-Dimeshqj, Abul-Qasim Bin Asakir Ashafi. ...-٥٧١. He relates a narrative to .٨

Abu Sa'eed and Abu Hureira, as it is mentioned in Ad-Durrul Manthour; ٢/٢٥٩

:Al-Khawarzmi. ...-٥٦٨. In Al-Menaqib; ٨٠, he records ٩

Abu Sa'eed Al-Khidri: The Prophet summoned people to declare fealty to Ali in Ghadir Khum. He gave the orders of sweeping thorns under a tree, and raised Ali from the arms as elevated as possible... Before people's scattering, God revealed

p: ٣٣٨

...This day have I)

:On page ٩٤ of the same book, Al-Khawarzmi records

Abu Hureira: When the Prophet (peace be upon him) said: "He whosever... ,master was I, Ali shall be his master," Omar addressed at Ali: "Congratulations ".son of Abu Talib! You have become my master, and the master of every Muslim

...Thence, God revealed: (This day have I

An-Natnazi, Abul-Fetih. In Al-Khassaisul Alawiya, he relates a narrative to ١٠

.Abu Sa'eed Al-Khidri, and relates another to Abu Sa'eed and Jabir Al-Ansari

,As-Salihani, Abu Hamid Sa'duddin. In Tawdihud Delail Ela Tarjihil Mesail ١١

:Shihabuddin Ahmed relates the following to As-Salihani

Mujahid: With the revelation of Verse of Ikmaluddin, the Prophet shouted: "Allah be the Greatest for perfection of the religion, and completion of the grace, and the

".Lord's satisfaction with my conveyance and leadership of Ali

Al-Hamawini, Sheikul Islam Al-Hanafi. ...-٧٢٢. In Feraidus Simtein; Section ١٢

.Twelve, he relates the narration...etc

.Third: Omar's Opinion

Omar; the caliph, stated that the Verse was revealed on day of Arafa, which was

.Friday, during the Farewell Pilgrimage. This is the Sunnis' most notable opinion

:Al-Bukhari's Sahih; ١/١٤

Tariq Bin Shihab: A Jew said to Omar Bin Al-Khattaab: "Had the verse: (This

day have I...) been revealed to us, we would have celebrated on the day of

revelation for good." Omar answered: "We do recognize the day and the hour of

revelation. The Prophet (peace be upon him) was halting at Arafa when this Verse

".was revealed

:Al-Bukhari's Sahih; ٥/١٢٧

Tariq Bin Shihab: Jews said: "Had the verse: (This day have I...) been revealed to

p: ٣٣٩

:us, we would have celebrated on the day of revelation for good." Omar answered

I do recognize where it was revealed. The Prophet was halting in Arafa when this"

".Verse was revealed

.Similar reports are recorded on page ١٣٧ of part ٨ of the same book

Almost, the entire Sunni reference books of hadith copy this narrative and its likes in

different ways of narration. Most of the scholars adopt it disregarding rings of

suspect Sufian Athawri, An-Nisai and many others arouse around it. They distrusted

.that day of Arafa during the Farewell Pilgrimage had fallen on Friday

Similarly, the other Sunni narratives that support the Prophet's progeny's opinion are

totally disregarded. That was for one reason only; Omar stated that the Verse was

revealed nine days before day of Ghadir. As a rule, Omar's statement should be

.beyond any dispute, and preceded to every everything

-As he refers to the Quranic Verses revealed during the Prophet's journeys, As

:Suyouti, in Al-Itqan; ١/٧٥, mentions Verse of Ikmaluddin. He comments

Authentic narratives report that Omar specified Friday which fell on day of Arafa

during the Farewell Pilgrimage as the hours in which the Verse was revealed. This

report has many ways of narrations. On the other side, Ibn Merdawayih records

that Abu Sa'eed Al-Khidri narrated that the Verse was revealed on that day in

Ghadir Khum. Abu Hureira stated that it was the eighteenth of Dhu'l-Hijja when

the Verse was revealed to the Prophet who was on his way back from the Farewell

.Pilgrimage. Both are inaccurate

p: ٣٤٠

:In Ad-Durrul Manthour; ٢/٢٥٩, As-Suyouti records

Doubtfully, Ibn Merdawayih and Ibn Asakir, relate the following to Abu Sa'eed

:Al-Khidri

When the Prophet (peace be upon him) nominated Ali as the coming leader on

that day in Ghadir Khum, Gabriel descended with God's saying: (This day have

Doubtfully, Ibn Merdawayih and Al-Khatib and Ibn Asakir relate the following to  
:Abu Hureira

In Ghadir Khum on the eighteenth of Dhu'l-Hijja, the Prophet (peace be upon him) declared: "He whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master." Hence, God

...revealed: (This day have I

As-Suyouti adopts the general situation adopted by most of Sunni scholars. This does

not mean that the other scholars decide dubiety of the narrative of Ghadir. On the contrary, they decide authenticity of such reports. Meanwhile, they insist that Verse

of Ikmaluddin was revealed before that day. This situation is taken up for their adherence to Omar's statement recorded in their reference books of hadith, even if

this statement is opposed by the other authentic narratives, and opposed by

.calculation and date

Ibn Kutheir is one of those who adhere fanatically to Omar's opinion. The following

:is a brief quotation from his Tafsir; ٢/١٤

As-Seddi: The Verse was revealed on day of Arafa. No licit or illicit matter was

.revealed afterwards

Ibn Jarir and many others: The Prophet was deceased eighty one days after day of

.Arafa

As he refers to the forecited narrative of Ahmed, At-Tirmithi and An-Nisai, Ibn

.Sufian's suspect should be seen as sort of piety if he intends the way of narration

p: ۳۴۱

In other words, if Sufian suspects whether his master informed him of this point, or not, this should be regarded as piety. If he suspects whether day of Arafah during the Farewell Pilgrimage, was Friday or not, this is undiscussible since no single historian or jurist suspects it. Sufian, however, is too noble to suspect so. Many decisive narratives respecting this matter are recorded. This narrative was related to Omar in another form

I do recognize the place and time of the revelation of this Verse. It was Friday“ ...

\*.and day of Arafah. Both are festivities for us,” affirmed Omar

Amr Bin Qeis: From the pulpit, I heard Muawiyah Bin Abi Sufian recite God's ...

saying: As-Suyouti, in Al-Itqan; ۱/۷۵, mentions Verse of Ikmaluddin. He

comments: (This day have I...) He then commented: “This Verse was revealed on

”.Friday, on day of Arafah

.Ibn Jarir: It is said that that day is not identified for people

Ibn Abbas: Day of the revelation of God's saying: (This day have I...,) is not ...

.identified by people

Some mention that the Verse was revealed during the Prophet's journey to Mecca

.for performing the Farewell Pilgrimage

Ibn Kutheir) Ibn Merdawayih records that Abu Harun Al-Abdi relates the)

:following to Abu Sa'eed Al-Khidri

.Ibn Kutheir records this narrative in Mukhtasar Tarikhi Dimeshq; ٢/٤/٣٠٩\*

God's saying: (This day have I...,) was revealed to the Prophet (peace be upon him) on that day in Ghadir Khum, when he said: "He whosever master was I, Ali  
".shall be his master

-Abu Hureira recounts that the Verse was revealed on the eighteenth of Dhu'l

p: ٣٤٢

.Hijja while the Prophet was back from the Farewell Pilgrimage

These two are inaccurate. The most accurate and indisputable thing is that the

Verse was revealed on day of Arafa which fell on Friday. This is asserted by

Omar Bin Al-Khattab; emir of the believers, and Ali Bin Abi Talib, and Muawiya

Bin Abi Sufian; the first king of Islam, and Abdullah Bin Abbas; translator of the

...(Quran, and Samara Bin Jundub (God be pleased to him

It is patent that Ibn Kutheir tries to avoid referring to the suspect arisen in the area of

identifying Friday as day of Arafa. This is by reason that this suspect may oppose

Omar's claim. As he could not stand Sufian Athawri's clear-cut suspect, Ibn Kutheir

.attempts to degrade that suspect by using deceptive words

Ibn Kutheir avoids referring to the reports recorded by At-Tabari since such reports

.emanate the suspect of day of Arafa's being Friday

Amir attested that God's saying: (This day have I...,) was revealed on day of ...

.Arafa which fell on Friday

Others declared that the day at which the Verse was revealed was Monday. Others

.stated that sura of Maida was revealed in Al-Madina

Ibn Abbas: Your Prophet was born on Monday. He left Mecca on Monday, and ...

arrived in Al-Madina on Monday. Sura of Maida and God's saying: (This day have I...,) was revealed on Monday. The Remembrance –the Quran– was ceased  
on Monday

At-Tabari) The earliest opinion, which is Omar Bin Al-Khattab's, is the most) preferable for authenticity of its documentation while the others' documentations

p: ٣٤٣

.are fictitious

## THE OBJECTIVE PERSPECTIVE

It is tractable to search for the actual event incited the revelation of Verse of Ikmaluddin through the copious narratives of the Farewell Pilgrimage. Previous divine declaration and enormous prophetic arrangements were prepared for this distinguished farewell. It was attended by about ٧٠٠٠٠–١٢٠٠٠٠ individuals most of whom narrated, somewhat detailedly, most of the events, the prophetic deeds and words and the five sermons addressed there. They also recorded the day on which

the

Prophet left Al-Madina, and the places he passed by or halt at, and the date of arrival in Mecca and the date and ways of performing the rituals of pilgrimage. Moreover they described his journey back to Al-Madina and whatever he met till he entered it.

He lived there only two months when he responded his Lord's summons.

Accordingly, elements of timing and date are decisive arbiters in the question of

identifying the day in which Verse of Ikmaluddin was revealed.

In addition to other objective factors which will be soon provided, element of timing

prefers the Prophet's progeny's opinion and the concordant Sunni narratives.

First: Unlike imagination of At-Tabari and his likes, the contradiction in this subject is not cited between two narratives one of which is of more authentic documentation or many ways of narration. The matter here is a contradiction between the Prophet's saying and Omar's

The reports, they had ruled as doubtful, are documented prophetic sayings, while the other reports recorded by Al-Bukhari and his likes are only Omar's saying. They are (not related to the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

p: ۳۴۴

Omar's saying is not adequate enough for refuting a hadith indicating the event incited revelation of a Verse. It is essential for Sunni scholars to scrutinize the text and documentation of such a hadith. If it is authentic, they should throw Omar's

saying away and adhere to that prophetic tradition. If it is not, they should see the other companions' contradictory opinions and accord them, otherwise he should prefer some to others. Unfortunately, Sunnis did not practice so

Second: Supposing we concede and regard the Prophet's progeny's opinion and ,Sunnis' concordant ones are no more than opinions of a party opposing the other and that the contradiction is no more than a contrary opinions of two of the Prophet's companions, or a companion and an imam from that Prophet's progeny; supposing this, we should affirm that the Prophet instructed his nation to take the religion from his household, not companions

This meaning is so undeniable since it is warranted by the famous prophetic saying of the two weighty things, that is commonly recounted by the entire Muslims

:Ahmed's Al-Musnad; ۳/۱۴

Abu Sa'eed: The Prophet (peace be upon him) stated: "I am leaving among you the two weighty things. One of them is greater than the other. They are the Book of Allah. It is a rope extended from the heavens to the earth. The other is my progeny; my household. They shall not be separated till they meet me on the

\*.Divine Pool

Unmistakably, this authentic prophetic saying implies that source of this religion is

p: ۳۴۵

restricted to the Prophet's household after him, or, in less extent, indicates that the

Prophet's household's opinion should be preferred when contradicted with others

Third: Omar's narration is basically contradictory in such a way that it is obligatory to neglect. Some related Omar's mentioning Thursday as day of Arafa, while others

related his assigning Friday

:An-Nisai's As-Sunan; 5/251

Tariq Bin Shihab: A Jew said to Omar: "Had the verse (This day have I..) been...

revealed to us, we would have celebrated on the day of its revelation for good

Omar answered: "We do recognize the day and night of its revelation. We were

with the Prophet in Arafat on that night before Friday when this Verse was

revealed

An-Nisai, on page 114 of part 8 of the same book, asserts that the Verse was revealed

on Friday

This report is also recorded in the same reference book; 3/17-26 and 59, and 4/366\*

;and 371. It is also recorded in Ad-Darimi's As-Sunan; 2/431, and Muslim's Sahih

;and Al-Hakim's Al-Mustedrak; 3/109 and 148 and Al-Beihaqi's As-Sunan ,7/122

and many other reference books of hadith 2/148

Fourth: Sufian Athawri doubted whether day of Arafa was Friday or not. Sufian is

one of Sunni master scholars and hadithists. There is a good deal of reports

supporting Sufian's suspect. Furthermore, it seems that he was sure that day of Arafa

was not Friday, but he used 'suspect' for wheedling Omar's devotees who re sorted

the entire narratives of the Farewell Pilgrimage and, in further extent, the Islamic history so that day of Arafa would be Friday

p: ۳۴۶

Fifth: The Muslims' festivity is being on day of sacrifice, not that of Arafa. I could not find a single narrative supports that day of Arafa is an authorized festival. Hence, no single Muslim agrees with Omar on that odd saying. For the Muslim radicalists this is a heresy

An-Nisai reports that the Verse was revealed on the night just before day of Arafa which fell on Thursday. In case this narrative is regarded, there will be no festivity opposed by that revealed from the heavens. Hence, the matter does not require a law of merging the opposed divine festivals, as the caliph claimed  
:There will be only one interpretation for the caliph's words

.The day on which the Verse was revealed is worthy enough to be taken as festivity  
.Because it was revealed two days before the festivity, we could not celebrate it  
.This is meaningless wording

,Sixth: Omar's wording opposes wording authentically ascribed to him. That Jew who asked Omar, understood that the Lord perfected Islam and sealed it on that day when the Verse was revealed. Omar admitted this understanding. Therewith, the Verse must have been revealed after the revelation of the entire precepts  
,Considering the previous, the opinion adopted by the Prophet's progeny, As-Seddi

Ibn Abbas et al, should be the most accurate. Meanwhile, Omar claimed the revelation of Verses of Kelala, heritage and others after that of Ikmaluddin. On that account, Omar should have told that Jew that the Verse did not mean consummation of the Islamic ordinance since there was a number of laws revealed thereafter

p: ۳۴۷

Hence, the day on which the other laws was revealed, must have been taken as the festival

As a rule, in case reports oppose each other, they all should be invalidated and disregarded. From this cause, Omar's wording respecting the seal of the Quranic Verses and those respecting the revelation of Verse of Ikmaluddin should be totally neglected and suspended

(Furthermore, the caliph admits, through the reports involved, that (This day mentioned in the Verse stands for the identified day on which the Verse was revealed. He denies its being implying a general time, or a day fell two years ago, or a day to come several months later. This admission negates At-Tabari's opinion which was invented mainly for befitting Omar's wording. It also negates the entire narratives aiming at generalizing (This day) mentioned in the Verse or dedicating it to conquest of Mecca

:Al-Qurtubi's Tafsir; ۱/۱۴۳

:Day' may be expressing a definite hour. This is clear through God's saying'

(...Today have I perfected)

:Al-Qurtubi's Tafsir; ٢/٤١

...A part of a day may be expressed as the whole day

Seventh: Omar's answer is unconvincing for the Jews as well as Muslims. If Omar intended that that day had not been taken as a festival because it occurred on a day of

festivity, the Jew could have asked the reason beyond the Lord's ruining that

.festivity when He revealed the Verse during a day of previous festivity

If he intended that festivity of the religion perfection had been merged with that of

Arafa, then the following question would be cited: This means that you considered

p: ٣٤٨

the day on which the Verse was revealed as a half festivity when you merged it with

that of Arafa; then can you lead us to a single trace of that festivity which is annually

?celebrated by Shias

If Omar intended that that noble day and glorious festival had been merged or fused

by Friday and day of Arafa on which it occurred, then was it a matter of God's

intentional plan to melt that day, but Muslims could save the situation when they

?opted for the decision of merging or halving

,Furthermore, who adopted that decision of merging? Who had the right of merging

or feeding a divine festivity to another? How come were Muslims unaware of the

event of such a concurrence of the divine festivities till a Jew provided the question in Omar's reign? Omar, at any rate, agreed to the Jews' question, and answered that the ruling appertained to such a concurrence should be either merging the latter to the previous or feeding one to the other

Was such a ruling revealed from the heavens, or was it a personal postulate favored by Omar; the caliph

As a matter of fact, this question, cited by that Jew, is still unanswerable for Omar and his devotees

The caliph provided nothing more than his admission and recognition of its being a serious question. He then issued inapplicable rulings he had not received from the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

He confessed that the day on which the Verse was revealed had been a noble and

p: ۳۴۹

great day for Muslims, and it had been determinative and historical day on which the Lord had perfected revelation of Islam, and completed His grace and chosen Islam

for people as a religion they should follow and solicit. In addition, the caliph

confessed that that great day had been suitable enough to be celebrated and commemorated as same as the three festivities of Muslims; the Fitr day –festivity of consummating the ritual fasting–, the Adha day –festivity of consummating the ritual pilgrimage– and Friday. He also recognized that if any other nation had such a day

.they would have certainly taken as a divine festival

In view of the caliph's subjection to the Jew's question, the day of the religion perfection should be, in the light of the Sunnis' jurisprudence, an annual legal

.festivity, just like the Fitr day, the Adha day and Friday

A deep look at the question divulges that Omar is engaged in two matters regarding the Verse of Ali Bin Abi Talib. He contradicted himself when he identified the final revealed Verse. He also engaged himself in burdening Muslims' demanding with

.festivity of the Verse till the Resurrection Day

Muslims, now, had the right of demanding Omar's devotees with that festivity which

is not existed in their reference books of history, hadith and jurisprudence, but at

'Shias

'Islamic festivities are fixed that none is permissible to invent another. Shias

evidence in taking the Ghadir day as a festivity, is their adherence to the sayings of their imams who recounted that the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) had

p: ۳۵۰

assigned that day as a doctrinal festivity, and Gabriel had informed that the previous

nations used to take the day on which the prophet's successors are named, as a

.festivity

What was then the caliph's claim after he had supported the Jews' wording and

agreed upon the liability of taking the day on which Verse of Ikmaluddin was

revealed as a legal festivity for the Islamic nation? The caliph excused that because of its occurrence on two festivities; Friday and day of Arafa, that day was not taken .as an independent festival

Granting the caliph had issued that decision personally, this would have been seen as heretic legislation. If he had received it from the Prophet, what for would he have not .referred to? In the same way, no single Muslim referred to that festivity except Shias

Eighth: An-Nisai and others record that the Prophet performed the Dhuhr and Asr prayers on that day of Arafa. If Omar's claim of the concurrence of that day and Friday had been accurate, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) would have led the Friday, not the Dhuhr and Asr, prayer. In addition, no single narrative .communicates that the Prophet performed the Friday prayer on that day

It is conclusive that An-Nisai corresponds Sufian Athawri and disagrees with Omar .in this regard

:An-Nisai's As-Sunan; 1/290

.Title: Joining the Dhuhr to the Asr on day of Arafa

Jabir Bin Abdillah: ... In Arafa, the Prophet performed the Asr prayer as soon as .he accomplished the Dhuhr

:Abu Dawud's As-Sunan; 1/429

p: 351

Ibn Omar: ...The Prophet joined the Asr prayer to the Dhuhr. Afterwards, he

.sermonized and performed the rite of halting on Arafa

It may be answered that the Friday prayer is lapsed during traveling. Sunni jurists have disagreeing opinions in this point. Granting it was true that day of Arafa had fallen in Friday, and the Prophet had left the Friday prayer, thousands of Muslims who were attending the Farewell Pilgrimage would have certainly referred to this ruling

:Ibn Hazm, in *Al-Muhalla*; 7/272, does his best to find a suitable answer

The imam is to recite the prayer audibly when day of Arafa occurs on Friday. This is the Friday prayer. It is permissible to perform the Friday prayer in Mina and ...Mecca, too

Al-Hassan Bin Muslim: Day of Tarwiya occurred on Friday during the Prophet's pilgrimage. Therefore, he allowed people to perform the Dhuhr prayer in Mina

Ibn Hazm) This report is filled in to excess with lies... Day of Tarwiya occurred)

...on Thursday, and that of Arafa occurred on Friday, as Al-Bukhari records

It is arisen that the entire reports mention that the Prophet joined the Asr prayer to

,the Dhuhr on day of Arafa. As an answer we should cite that the Prophet did so

since the Dhuhr prayer is as same as the Friday. Besides, no single narrative

...mentions that he (peace be upon him) did not recite audibly

Ibn Hazm used the *petitio principii*. He refuted that narrative because it opposed

Omar's saying that day of Arafa fell on Friday. What for did he not refute Omar's

?saying for its opposing his other saying that day of Arafa occurred on Thursday

What for did he not refute sayings of An-Nisai, Athawri and the others mentioned by

?At-Tabari et al

Granting the Prophet had recited that Dhuhr prayer audibly, Muslims would have referred to this ruling. As a rule, it is illicit to recite the Dhuhr prayer audibly while it

.is permissible to recite that of Friday audibly

In respect to the Prophet's journey to Mecca which commenced on Thursday; the

fourth of Dhu'l-Hijja, the narration refuted by Ibn Hazm because of its opposing

;Omar's saying, is being more acceptable and due. Dhu'l-Hijja began on Monday

therefore, day of Arafa must have occurred on Tuesday, and the Adha festivity on

.Wednesday. On that account, Friday must have been the twelfth of Dhu'l-Hijja

The narrator's claiming the Prophet's having been in Mina on Friday should be accurate. Nevertheless, he confused when he made it before the rite of halting on

.Arafat

Ninth: Narrations of the Prophet's having lived only eighty one nights after day of

.Arafa oppose the others that made day of Arafa occur on Friday

.More than ninety days fall between the ninth of Dhu'l-Hijja and the twelfth of Rabi I

Therefore, Sunnis should either agree upon our narratives that identified the twenty

eighth of Safar as the date on which the Prophet was deceased, or agree upon our

narratives that identified the eighteenth of Dhu'l-Hijja; day of Ghadir, as the date on  
which Verse of Ikmaluddin was revealed

:As-Suyouti's Ad-Durrul Manthour; ٢/٢٥٩

p: ٣٥٣

Ibn Jureij: The Prophet spent eighty one nights only after the revelation of ...

...God's saying: (This day have I

An alike narrative is repeated on page ٢٥٧ of part ٢. It is quoted from Al-Beihaqi's

.Shiebul Iman

:Ibn Hajar's Talkhissul Hubeir; ٧/٣

Ibn Jureij: The Prophet spent eighty one nights only after the revelation of ...

...God's saying: (This day have I

The same is recorded in At-Tabarani's Al-Mujamul Kabir; ١٢٩٨٤, and At-Tabari's

.Tafsir; ٤/١٠٦

:Al-Qurtibi's Tafsir; ٢٠/٢٢٣

.Ibn Omar: Sura of Nasr was revealed in Mina during the Farewell Pilgrimage

Then, the Verse: (Today have I...) was revealed. After this Verse, the Prophet  
peace be upon him) lived for eighty days. He lived fifty days after the revelation)

of Verse of Kelala, and thirty five after the revelation of God's saying: (There

(...comes to you an Apostle

After eleven days from the revelation of God's saying: (And beware of that day

...on which...), the Prophet was deceased

Ibn Omar's narrative supports his father's claiming the revelation of Verse of Kelala

after that of Ikmaluddin. It seems he disremembered Verse of usury his father

considered as the final. He also violated his father when he stated that Verse of

Ikmaluddin was revealed after sura of Nasr which was revealed in Mina. This

indicates that Verse of Ikmaluddin must have been revealed after consummation of

the Farewell Pilgrimage and during the Prophet's journey back to Al-Madina. While

the father identified day of Arafat as the date on which the Verse was revealed, his

son was about to say that it was revealed in Ghadir

p: ۳۵۴

.Ibn Omar mended one side and spoiled many others

:Al-Amini's Al-Ghadir; ۱/۲۳۰

;This matter is supported by logic and authentic narrations. Ar-Razi, in Tafsir

relates the following to the most remarkable hadithists: The Prophet (peace ,۳/۵۲۹

:be upon him) spent eighty one or two days after the revelation of God's saying

(...This day have I)

.This is emphasized by Abus-Saud in the margin of Ar-Razi's Tafsir; ۳/۵۲۳

.Historians identify the twelfth of Rabi I as the date of the Prophet's decease

Accordingly, there is only one day added to the eighty two day period if day of

.Ghadir and that of decease are excluded

Because of the disorder of the number of days, this opinion, at any rate, is nearer to the actuality than that stating its revelation on day of Arafa, and recorded in .books of Al-Bukhari, Muslim and others

Furthermore, their narratives identifying Monday as the day on which the Verse was .revealed, contradict Omar's saying

:Al-Beihaqi's Delailun Nubuwa; ٧/٢٣٣

,Ibn Abbas: Your Prophet was born on Monday. He was prophesied on Monday and left Mecca on Monday, and conquered Mecca on Monday. Sura of Maida was .revealed on Monday. He was deceased on Monday

Al-Heithami, in Majmauzzawaid; ١/١٩٤, comments that Ahmed and At-Tabarani .record the same narrative that one of its narrators is Ibn Luheia; the doubtful

As a matter of fact, the problem is not Ibn Luheia's doubtfulness. It is the contradiction to Omar's saying. This fact is stated frankly by As-Suyouti and Ibn :Kutheir who added, on page ١٩٨ of part ١ of his book

p: ٣٥٥

This is totally forlorn since the battle of Badr and the revelation of the Verse .occurred on Friday

Ibn Asakir, however, is more impartial as he disregards doubtfulness and forlornness of the narrative and describes it as opposite to the common opinion, which is Omar's .saying

It is imperative to allude that citing their narratives identifying Monday as the day on which the Verse was revealed, is reckoned with the rule of constraining them to what they committed themselves to. In truth, we do not admit that the Prophet spent only eighty days after the revelation of the Verse. We believe, according to our authenticated reports, that the Verse was revealed on the eighteenth of Dhu'l-Hijja and the Prophet was deceased on the twenty eighth of Safar. The period, hence, is .about seventy days only

We also believe that the Verse was revealed on Thursday or Friday, and the Prophet's mission commenced on Monday, and Ali prayed with him on Tuesday, and his decease was on Monday, too. Hence, it is possible that most of sura of Maida was revealed on Monday, while the rest, including Verses of Isma and Ikmaluddin, were .revealed afterwards

Tenth: Reports regarding the Prophet's movement from Al-Madina are .contradictory to those identifying Friday as the day on which day of Arafa occurred Thursday, the twenty seventh of Dhu'l-Qada is the date identified for the Prophet's journey to Mecca. This date is recorded in Shias' common narratives. It accords date of revelation, which is the eighteenth of Dhu'l-Hijja. On that account, Monday was

p: ۳۵۶

.the first of Dhu'l-Hijja, and Thursday was the day of the Prophet's arrival in Mecca

This date is mentioned in a narrative recorded in Al-Kafi; ۴/۲۴۵. Tuesday then was

.day of Arafa, and Thursday was day of Ghadir

:The following are models of the Prophet's progeny's narratives in this regard

:Wesailu Shia; ٩/٣١٨

On the twenty seventh of Dhu'l-Qada, the Prophet left Al-Madina. He arrived ...

.in Mecca on the fourth of Dhu'l-Hijja

:Al-Kafi; ٤/٢٤٥

Abu Abdillah (peace be upon him): ...On the twenty seventh of Dhu'l-Qada, the

...Prophet left Al-Madina... He arrived in Mecca on the fourth of Dhu'l-Hijja

:Al-Mustershid; ١١٩

Abu Sa'eed: The Prophet summoned people to declare fealty to Ali in Ghadir ,Khum. That was on Thursday. He gave the orders of sweeping thorns under a tree ,and raised Ali from the arms as elevated as possible... Before people's scattering

...God revealed: (This day have I

The Prophet's progeny's opinion is asserted by reports recorded in the reference books of hadith of both Sunnis and Shias. These reports affirm that the Prophet used

to travel on Thursdays, or was seldom traveling on other than Thursdays. Such

;reports are recorded in Al-Bukhari's Sahih; ٤/٩, and Abu Dawud's As-Sunan

The report of Seyidunnans recorded in Uyounul-Athar; ٢/٣٤١ approves that .١/٥٨٩

.the Prophet's journey started on Thursday

(In Biharul Anwar; ١٤/٢٧٢, it is recorded that Abu Abdillah (peace be upon him

said: “During Summer, the Prophet used to travel on Thursdays, while in Winter he  
”used to opt for Fridays

The Prophet’s progeny’s opinion is also ratified by Jabir’s narrating that the

p: ۳۵۷

Prophet’s journey commenced four days before the end of Dhu’l-Qada. This

narrative is recorded by Ibn Kutheir

Moreover, Al-Bukhari, as well as most of the most remarkable reference books of  
hadith, refers to many narratives in which the day on which the Prophet’s journey to

Mecca commenced is not identified. They only mention that it began five days  
before the end of Dhu’l-Qada. Such narratives are recorded in Al-Bukhari’s; ۲/۱۴۶-۸  
and ۱۸۷. A narrative stating that the Prophet’s arrival in Mecca was after the lapse of  
four nights from Dhu’l-Hijja, is recorded on page ۷ of part ۴ of the same book. Such

narratives are also recorded in the following books

An-Nisai’s As-Sunan; ۱/۱۵۴, ۲۰۸ and ۵/۱۲۱

Muslim’s Sahih; ۴/۳۲

Ibn Madga’s As-Sunan; ۲/۹۹۳

Al-Beihaqi’s As-Sunan; ۵/۳۳

The following points regarding the Prophet’s journey to Mecca prove accuracy of the

Prophet’s progeny’s opinion

Ordinary journeys from Al-Madina to Mecca take eight days in maximum –

.The Prophet took the shortest way, which was about four hundred kilometers –  
The Prophet and the companies were so speedy that some complained the fatigue –  
they were suffering, and the Prophet instructed that they would be healed from such  
.a foot ache if they tied them

.No single narrative refers to any sort of stopping during the Prophet's journey –  
Narrations that recount the Prophet's journey back to Al-Madina and his relative –  
.cessation in Ghadir support that the journey took eight days only

–Many narratives affirm that the Prophet arrived in Mecca on the fourth of Dhu'l –

p: ٣٥٨

.Hijja

In due course, the narrative identifies the twenty fifth of Dhu'l-Qada as the day on  
which the Prophet began his journey to Mecca should be discredited since it made  
the journey take about ten days. This narrative, however, is recorded in Umdetul  
Qari, Irshadus Sari. It is also recorded by Ibn Hazm and in the margin of As-Siretul

.Halabiya; ٣/٢٥٧

The previous points show the real value of the narratives opposite to the Prophet's  
progeny's opinion. Adopters of such ineffective narratives, that identified the twenty  
,fourth of Dhu'l-Qada as the date on which the Prophet began his journey to Mecca  
tried to apply it to Saturday so that the first of Dhu'l-Hijja would be Thursday, and  
day of Arafa Friday for nothing rather than supporting Omar's saying. They

exceeded in this regard as they overlooked the other narratives that related Omar's identifying Thursday

The following reference books adopted the narrative that identified Saturday as the day on which the Prophet started his journey

.Ibn Sa'd's At-Tabaqat; 2/124

.Al-Waqidi's Al-Meghazi; 2/1089

.Margin of As-Siretul Halabiya; 3/3)

.At-Tabari's; 3/148

.At-Thehbi's Tarikh; 2/701... etc

Taking these narratives in consideration leads to believe that Thursday was the first of Dhu'l-Hijja, and Friday was day of Arafa, and the Prophet's journey took nine days \*provided that the narrator considered, mistrustfully, that Dhu'l-Qada as thirty days

.Ibn Kutheir attempts to defend this opinion. He records, in As-Sira; 4/217

-Anas related that the Prophet led the Dhuhr prayer in his mosque in Al ...

.Madina, and the Asr, in the shortened from, in Dhilhalifa

p: 359

.This narrative denies the claim that the Prophet began his journey on Friday

.Similarly, it invalidates Ibn Hazm's assertion that the journey began on Thursday

Indisputably, first of Dhu'l-Hijja occurred on Thursday. This fact is proved

through incessant and unanimous narratives that affirmed the occurrence of day of

Arafa, which is the ninth of Dhu'l-Hijja, on Friday. Six nights of Dhu'l-Qada would certainly remain if the Prophet's journey was started on Thursday; the  
twenty fourth

Ibn Abbas, Aisha and Jabir assigned commencement of the Prophet's journey to five nights before the end of Dhu'l-Qada, and this should never be Friday, for Anas's saying; hence, the Prophet's journey was started on Saturday. The narrator miscalculated when he identified thirty days for Dhu'l-Qada which was only  
;The Hijri year is lunar and each month begins at the approximate new moon\*

.therefore, months may be either thirty or twenty nine days  
twenty nine that year. So, Wednesday was not accounted with Dhu'l-Qada. The  
night before Thursday became first of Dhu'l-Hijja... This prognosis should be  
.considered, since there is no other opinion

It seems that Ibn Kutheir is not sure of such prognosis, because he had to notice the uncertainty arisen by Omar himself, Sufian At-Thawir and An-Nisai. He also had to  
.regard Ibn Hazm's emphasis that the Prophet's journey was started on Thursday

It is also noticeable that Ibn Kutheir used the *petitio principii* as he attempts to prove that the Prophet's journey to Mecca was started on Thursday. He was in the first lines of his thesis when he referred to incessancy and unanimity of the Prophet's

halting in Arafa on Friday. He should have explicated sort of that incessancy and

.unanimity

He cited Anas's narration stating that the Prophet performed the Dhuhr and Asr, not Friday, prayers, as another evidence on his claim. As a matter of fact, this narrative supports the Prophet's progeny's opinion that fix Thursday as the day on which the Prophet's journey was started

Previously, we have referred to the narration dealing with the Prophet's performing the Dhuhr and Asr prayers in Dhillhalifa

At length, Anas's narrative, if accurate, does not oppose identifying Thursday as the day on which the Prophet journeyed to Mecca. It may hint at the fact that the Prophet

attired the pilgrims garb after the Asr prayer in Dhillhalifa, and kept on his journey

The abstract is that there are numerous cruxes standing in the face of admitting the

opinion that Verse of Ikmaluddin was revealed on day of Arafa. These cruxes are

proceeded in the style, date and timing of that opinion. Accordingly, accurate

researchers are logically deprived of adopting such a poor opinion

There remains the Prophet's progeny's opinion. The existence of disabled opposite is

as same as its nothingness. Similarly, helpless texts cannot be backed by authentic

documentation

The entire Muslims agree that the day on which Verse of Ikmaluddin was revealed is

being a great divine festivity. It is festivity of perfection of the religion and

completion of the divine grace. For the Prophet's progeny, this day is being the most

remarkable Islamic festivity. This can be proved manifestly and easily. The weekly

p: ۳۶۱

Islamic festivity is involved in the Friday prayer. The Fitr day is engaged in the rite of fasting. The Adha day is engaged in the ritual pilgrimage. In a like manner, the

.Ghadir festivity is engaged in the Lord's completing His grace on the nation

For Sunnis, this completion was achieved by the consummatory revelation of the .religious rulings without identifying any process for assigning the coming leadership

For Shias, this was achieved by perfection of the religious rulings, and completion of the divine grace that settled the problem of the leadership and dedicating the

.Prophet's progeny to the imamate till the Resurrection Day

.As a bonus, the entire Muslims agree on considering that day as a legal festivity

What for then are the chiefs, scholars and intellects of the Muslims accepting this nation's losing such a great day? What for do they accept that no festival or

?ceremonies that must become legality and sacredness of such a day, are made

Sunni scholars should respond to our bidding of studying the legal and doctrinal

faces of this 'wronged' festivity, and reviving it in the Muslims' lives in a form

.accordant to the beliefs and jurisprudence of each sect

## **CHAPTER FIVE**

### **VERSE OF MAARIJ**

In the Name of Allah, the Beneficent, the Merciful

.One demanding, demanded the chastisement which must befall

.The unbelievers there is none to avert it

.From Allah, the Lord of the ways of Ascent

### **EVENTS STIMULATED BY THE QURAIISHIS**

For citing the exegesis of Verse of Maarij, it is necessary to remark a deal of serious

p: ۳۶۲

events that cropped up during the last days of the Prophet's lifetime. Some were proved to be provoked by the Quraishis, while there are many indications directing

.fingers of accusation to the Quraishis as their originators

First event: The attempt to assassinate the Prophet during the battle of Hunein. In

.the previous fifth discussion, we have discussed this event

Second event: The attempt to assassinate the Prophet in Aqaba when he was back

from the battle of Tabuk. This attempt, given effect by twenty hypocrites, was planned so properly. This group knew that the Prophet would take the mountainside

alone that night, while the army would take the other. They planned to waylay aloft

that mountain and as soon as the Prophet would reach the narrowest point, they would throw rocks as much as possible, so that they would hit him. Then, they would

run away and hide among the Muslims' groups. They aimed at seizing the Prophet's

.authority as they would show their deepest grief for him

The Lord respited them. When they were about to throw rocks, Gabriel came and lit

.that mountain. The Prophet could see and recognize them. He called them by names  
Hutheifa Bin Al-Yeman and Ammar Bin Yasir; the Prophet's companions, could see  
.and recognize them. The Prophet made them the witnesses on that cabal  
The hypocrites had nothing to do other than descending the mountain as speedy as  
.possible to hide among the Muslims' group

There is no reason for the Prophet's masking their names other than their being

p: ۳۶۳

Quraishis and celebrities, and declaring their names would certainly lead to  
punishing them. Punishing would mean danger of their apostasy. This would mean  
that they would convince some of the Arab tribes of apostasy. They would evidence  
that Mohammed had given everything to the Hashemites and deprived the Quraishis  
and the Arabs. This would create an ill reputation of Islam, since it would be said  
that the Prophet disputed his companions who believed him, and fought them. This  
would lead to the arising of new battles the results of which would not be better than  
.the earlier

Hence, the divine solution is keeping the matter locked as long as those men

.admitted Islam and Mohammed's prophesy, and gainsaid the matter

It is apparent that narrations that referred to the cabal of Aqaba named famous

.Quraishi personalities that the Quraishi hadithists had to decide their doubtfulness

The majority, however, decide trustfulness of Ibn Jumei and the other narrators who

.mentioned the names of directors and the executors of that cabal

Narrations related to Hutheifa and Ammar whom were asked, by the Quraishi celebrities, whether they had seen them on that night or not, are recorded in the

Sunni reference books of hadith. Besides, such celebrities attempted to gain the

.acquittal of hypocrisy from Hutheifa and Ammar

The reference books of hadith are also filled in with narratives asserted that people could discriminate the faithful from the hypocrites, after their death, when they were noticing whether Hutheifa offered them the ritual funeral prayer or not. Finally, they

p: ۳۶۴

narrated that Hutheifa did not offer the ritual funeral prayer to any of the Quraishi

.chiefs at all

Third event: Story of sura of Tahrim. This story imparts that one of the Prophet's

wives violated his instructions of concealing the news he had recounted to her

exclusively. Moreover, she, backed by her well-wisher, worked for the Quraishis

against her husband. The Lord informed His Prophet of her divulging the secret, and

the Prophet conveyed this divine information to her friend, who was also one his

wives, and her. Thence, the Quran revealed her secret and the intendments of those

she backed, and threatened a punishment, and cited the wives of Noah and Lot, who

were atheists since they betrayed their husbands and were immortalized in the

,hellfire

.as example

The pro-Quraish hadithists made the matter a mere family affairs respecting the many wives exchangeable jealousy, and some ineffective flaws with the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family)

They intend to make us close our eyes before the evident Verses of sura of Tahrim that divulge a striking danger countered by the Prophet and the divine mission, and enlists a great army for defying that situation. God says: (If you both turn to Allah, then indeed your hearts are already inclined; and if you back each other against him then surely Allah it is Who is his Guardian, and Gabriel and the believers that do (good, and the angels after that are the aiders

Towards whom their hearts were inclined? For whom did they back each other

p: ۳۶۵

against the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family)? What sort of family affairs

?is that incited that great army of God used only in cases of ultimate emergency

Ibn Abbas, whom is named 'preacher of the nation' used to interpret 'inclined' into

'deviated'. On that account, two of the Ummul Muminin's needed to renew their

.converting to Islam

Fourth event: For a whole month, the Prophet abandoned his wives and settled in

.house of Maria the Coptic, which was on the outskirts

The pro-Quraish hadithists described the matter, in which the Prophet, the revelation

and Muslims were engaged, as a personal affair. They cited the frequent demands of the Prophet's wives as the reason that made him abandon and confine himself in Maria's house for a whole month. They asserted that the Islamic issues that occupied the political area to excess and that engaged the Quraishi chiefs in particular, had nothing to do with the incident.

Fifth event: The Quraishis worked so hard for offending against Ali Bin Abi Talib's identity. The Prophet was very much irate. He defended Ali and honored his identity. This matter can be obviously heeded all over the Prophet's hours of war, peace journey and residence. It is also noticeable that it increased in the last period of the Prophet's lifetime who was often enraged because of it, and sermonized oftentimes for declaring the merits of Ali (peace be upon him) and the deviation and atheism of everybody who hurts him.

The story of Bureida Al-Aslemi is sufficiently adequate for evidencing the matter

p: ۳۶۶

This overwhelming story was recorded in the Sunni reference books of hadith in many different ways of narration and highly regarded documentations. It registers the

Prophet's reproaching those who malign Ali, and his declaring that Ali shall be people's master after him, and deciding the hypocrisy of everyone who criticizes detests or disobeys Ali

This event shows the Quraishi chiefs' bearing malice and envy against Ali (peace be upon him).

Seventh event: The Quraishi chiefs precluded people from registering the Prophet's traditions and sayings during his lifetime. Majority of people used to record the Quranic texts as soon as they were revealed. The Prophet gave the orders of installing the Quranic texts, that are freshly revealed, between the pulpit and the wall. Secondly, papers and ink were available for recording these texts. Ali was wont to record the entire Quranic texts and the prophetic that the Prophet ordered of recording. Others also wrote down the prophetic texts. Abdullah Bin Amr Bin Al-As; the young Quraishi, used to write down, too. While some of the Quraishi chiefs used to record the Jewish culture and attend their classes on Saturdays,\* they prevented people from recording the Prophet's traditions because they recognized the falling of a great danger if the Prophet's words praising his household, progeny and the Hashemites, and cursing a great number of the Quraishi celebrities, would settle in the hands of the coming generations. Refer to Tadwinul Qur'an\*

The reference books of hadith did not overlook the incident when Abdullah Bin Amr complained before the Prophet that (people of Quraish) deprived him of recording

.the prophetic texts and traditions

:Abu Dawud's As-Sunan; ٢/١٧٤

Abdullah Bin Amr: People of Quraish told me not to record every single word..  
said by the Prophet (peace be upon him) since he was an ordinary human who  
may be erring when he is enraged. I ceased the recording and told the Prophet of  
their words. He pointed at his mouth with the finger and ordered: "Record every  
thing. By the Prevailing of my soul I take the oath, nothing but truth comes out of  
\*\*".my mouth

Seventh event: An attempt to assassinate the Prophet was planned in his way back  
from the Farewell Pilgrimage at Arsha. This cabal was divulged by the divine  
.revelation. It was greatly similar to that occurred after the battle of Tabuk

Eighth event: The Quraishis escalated their criticism directed to the Prophet's  
procedures of focusing the position of his family and clan; the Hashemites, among  
people. Some objected candidly and shamelessly. They demanded with making the  
position of leadership include the entire clans of Quraish, or selecting other persons  
for sharing Ali's position. The Prophet rejected all these demands, since the matter  
was not his. It was God's concern. He was no more than a servant and an apostle  
.whose mission is conveying the Lord's messages

Previously, we have introduced the following quotation from Asharif Al-Murteda's

:Tanzihul Anbiya; ١٤٧

As soon as the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) nominated Ali Bin Abi

Talib for the next leadership, a group of Quraishi people came and stated: “O

p: ٣٦٨

God’s messenger! People have no long span in Islam. They displease the matter

.that your cousin; Ali Bin Abi Talib, will hold leadership while you held prophesy

”.You’d better have another decision

The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) replied: “That was not my

decision that I may alter. It was the Lord’s. It is He Who ordered me of and

”.imposed it upon me

They suggested: “Well then. You may conjoin a man of Quraish to him, so that

”.people will be satisfied, and your affairs will be affirmative

Ninth event: While the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) was diseased, he

formed an army in which the entire Quraishi chiefs, excepting the Hashemites, were

enlisted. The commandment of that army was given to Usama Bin Zeid. The Prophet

gave that young African Muslim the orders of marching towards Muta in Jordan for

battling the Romans. The Prophet’s purpose beyond this process was enhancing the

power of the Islamic state and revenging the martyrs of battle of Muta. He also

aimed at taking the opposers of Ali’s leadership away from Al-Madina just before

.his decease

-The same is recorded in Ahmed’s Al-Musned; ٢/١٩٢ and ٢١٥, and Al-Hakim’s Al\*\*

Usama and his army camped out of Al-Madina. The Quraishi chiefs showed reluctance to join that army so that they would fail the Prophet's plan. They also worked on detaining as great numbers of the army as possible. Finally, they criticized the Prophet's orders of selecting Usama; the young, for commandment

p: ٣٤٩

Hence, they were procrastinating the operation of that army so that they would gain time

As a reply on such behaviors, the Prophet ascended the pulpit and emphasized on expediting the march of Usama's army. He also declared that God; the Exalted, and he would curse those who would fall behind

Tenth event: The Quraishis augmented their efforts aimed for opposing the Prophet directly whenever he would bring Ali and his household to position of leadership officially

Omar Bin Al-Khattab; the new chief of Quraish, discharged the mission of opposing the Prophet openly. The Prophet summoned chiefs of Quraish and Ansar, during his final disease, and declared that he would record a document saving his nation against deviation forever. They realized that this document would mean nominating Ali and his household (peace be upon them) for the next leadership officially and documentarily. Therefore, Omar faced him candidly and said: "No, we do not lack

your document and your security against deviation. We also do not want your traditions and people. We are sufficed by Allah's Book. Exegesis of this Book is our concern, not yours or your household's

The attendees, from the Quraishis and the deceived Ansar, supported Omar and shouted before their Prophet: "We do support Omar's saying. Those who came to see their Prophet in his last hours were engaged in discrepancy. They used impolite words on their Prophet's head. Some supported the Prophet's will and ordered of implementing it, and the majority went on shouting: "We do support Omar's saying. Fetch him nothing. Let him not record

p: ۳۷۰

It is most likely that Gabriel attended these moments of dispute. He visited the Prophet recurrently these days. The Prophet might seek his advice. The Angel might informed the Prophet of the successful consummation of his mission and perfection of God's claim against people. He might also instructed that insistence on recording that suggested document might have achieved the Quraishis' apostasy, and the most acceptable solution in such a situation should be despising and dismissing them. Hence, the Prophet said: "Leave me! It is inappropriate to issue disputation before a prophet," or: "Leave me! The pains I am suffering are easier than what you are dragging me to

This story is so familiar that Al-Bukhari records it in six positions of his Sahih. Ibn

.'Abbas called this incident 'calamity of Thursday

Eleventh event: Owing to the harsh fever, the Prophet was fainted for minutes and then regaining his consciousness. That was during his final disease. He could understand that some of those encompassing him intended to pour a drug in his mouth while he had been fainted. When he regained, he told them not to give him any medicine while he would be fainted. On the contrary, as soon as the Prophet was fainted, they poured a medicine in his mouth. He vomited it, but they used force to pour

When he regained consciousness, the Prophet reprimanded them and ordered the all of consuming that medicine. The Hashemites were excluded .(Hence, narratives assert that the entire attendees consumed some of that (medicine

In the reference books of hadith, this incident is named 'coercing the Prophet on p: ۳۷۱

having the medication'. It is important to study this incident carefully. It might have .been an attempt for poisoning the Prophet

These were the events introduced as an overture for discussing Verse of Maarij. As a matter of fact, each of these events can be a thesis of a Ph.D. degree, if studied deliberately. The Quraishis should be listed on the top if it is necessary to identify the actual stars of these events and the brains planning. For more identification, it is .advisable to focus more light on the relation between the Quraishis and the Jews

This strange matter displays how the Lord protected His Apostle (peace be upon him and his family) against apostasy and atheism of the Quraishis during his lifetime. At any rate, the Prophet was not protected against their harm and plots. That is the (unchangeable course taken by the entire prophets (peace be upon them

### **THE QURAISHIS' NEW PREPARATIONS AFTER THE GHADIR DAY**

#### **THE QURAISHIS' NEW PREPARATIONS AFTER THE GHADIR DAY**

.Caravan of prophesy and imamate left Ghadir Khum and went towards Al-Madina

The Prophet's heart was calmed and tranquil. Meanwhile, the Quraishis could not see calmness. They boiled due to their spite

This is the wording of narratives and incidents. The Quraishis would never assuage unless they would see the painful agony. The truth-tongued the honest, who speaks only out of the divine revelation, said: "O people of Quraish! You shall not cease unless when you see the painful agony

We are to repeat that Verse of Isma does not mean that God had paved the path of

p: ۳۷۲

His Apostle or made the Quraishis behave as serene as a trained horse. It is true that nothing at all can stop in the face of God's competence. But the Lord wills that things abide according to reasons and criteria, and applies traditions of the previous nations to this nation, so He will test them in the matter of obeying and disobeying the Prophet. This requires their faculty to disobey, not apostatize before him. They

were so able to face the Prophet with these words: “We do reject your will, tradition and household. We are sufficed with Allah’s Book.” This is the climax. A red line was drawn after this. This is God’s will

Through numerous events of the Farewell Pilgrimage, the Lord’s protection was achieved. It was achieved in Mecca, Arafat and the three sermons in Mina, especially that of Kheif Mosque

The Quraishis saw no relief before the Prophet’s departure without demanding with swearing allegiance to Ali’s coming leadership

For the Exalted Lord that was not enough. The divine orders of stopping the Muslims were descended to the Prophet who had just reached the heart of desert where there were no fodder for their pack animals, and no food for them except a small garden of few trees and sparse water. In that burning midday, the preceding Muslims were about to put their feet on the land of Al-Juhafa; that inhabited city, after a three-day walking. But the Prophet ordered them of being back in Ghadir Khum

In the midst of these intolerable circumstances, the Prophet ascended the pulpit in an

p: ۳۷۳

hour other than that of the obligatory prayer, and raised his cousin; Ali Bin Abi Talib, from the hand and addressed at Muslims: “This shall be your master after me

Then comes Al-Hassan and Al-Hussein and nine individuals from Al-Hussein’s offspring

In this situation, the divine promise of protection twinkled apparently. The Lord shut the Quraishis' mouths so that they would not oppose or object. Their mouths were open for acceding only. They all shouted: "We do witness that you have conveyed your Lord's messages. You have been the excellent Apostle. We have heard and do obey." Afterwards, they hurried to Ali's tent for offering congratulations on the position of leadership. They also showed compliments when God revealed: (This day have I perfected for you your religion and completed on you My favor and chosen for you Islam as a religion.) They lent their ears to Hassan Bin Thabit's poem in which he described the Prophet's call and conveying the Lord's mandate of nominating Ali for the next leadership.

Offering of congratulations lasted to night when darkness did not preclude Muslims from offering their congratulations to Ali; therefore, the Prophet had to pass the night in that Ghadir of imamate. After the Fajr -dawn- prayer, the Prophet moved. Other narratives affirm that the Prophet had to settle for two days there.

It was God's concern and incomparable competence that knocked over the Quraishis' ability of spoiling ceremonies of Ghadir, and knotted their tongues which are notorious objectors and impolite to the prophets, and made them opt for letting

p: ۳۷۴

,that day, on which the Prophet granted the Hashemites and Ali whatever he willed

.pass peacefully

.This was the Lord's style of protecting the Prophet against the Quraishis' apostasy

.There must have been greater divine favors we could not receive

There was another style. It was the divine punishment. Like the Jews in their

.prophets' reigns, the Quraishis did receive this style thoroughly

## FIRST QUESTION

### THE SUNNI REFERENCE BOOKS OF HADITH RECORD THE INCIDENT

In addition to Shias, Sunnis record the incident. Abu Ubeid Al-Harawi was the first

.scholar who recorded the incident in Gharibul Qur'an

:Menaqibu Aali Abi Talib; ۲/۲۴۰

-Abu Ubeid, Athalabi, An-Neqqash, Sufian Bin Uyeina, Ar-Razi, Al-Qizwini, An

:Nisapuri, At-Tebirsi and At-Tusi; all those recorded the following incident

After the Prophet's conveying the Lord's mandate in Ghadir Khum had been

-prevailing among people, Al-Harith Bin An-Numan Al-Fihri -or Jabir Bin An

Nadr Bin Al-Harith Bin Kilda Al-Abdari, according to Abu Ubeid's report- came

to the Prophet and said: "O Mohammed! You have conveyed us the Lord's

mandates of declaring there is no god but Allah and Mohammed is being the

Apostle of Allah, and performing the prayers, the fasting, the pilgrimage, and

defraying the poor rate. All these, we have admitted, were not enough for you till

you raised your cousin from the arm and preceded him to us and said: 'He

whosever master was I, Ali should be his master.' Is this matter originated from

”?your person or is it God’s mandate

By Allah there is no god but Whom I take the oath, this is surely God’s“

p: ۳۷۵

.(mandate,” asserted the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

Jabir turned his face towards his pack animal while saying: “O Allah! If Mohammed’s words have been true, then rain us with a heavenly stone, or inflict a painful chastisement upon us.” Before Jabir could reach his pack animal, the Lord rained him with a stone that fell on the head and went out from the anus. He

...was killed. Consequently, God revealed: (One demanding

,Some of Shiite scholars; such as the compilers of Abaqatul Anwar, Al-Ghadir Ihqaqul Haq, Nafahatul Azhar et al, compute Sunni scholars who recorded this incident. Although they were more than thirty, we are to refer to twelve only :Al-Harawi, Abu Ubeid. (...-۲۲۳) He mentions the incident in his book of Tafsir .۱

.Gharibul Qur’an

Al-Baghdadi, Abu Bakr An-Neqash Al-Mosuli. (...-۳۵۱) He mentions the incident .۲

.in Tafsir

Athalabi, Abu Isaaq An-Nisapuri. (...-۴۲۷) He mentions the incident in Al-Keshfu .۳

.Wel Bayan

Al-Hasakani, Al-Hakim Abul-Qasim. He refers to the incident in Eda’u Haqqil .۴

.Muwalat

Al-Qurtubi, Abu Bakr Yahya. (...-٥٦٧) He mentions the incident in Tafsir .٥

Abul Mozaffar, Shamsuddin; the grandson of Ibnul-Jawzi. (...-٦٤٥) He mentions .٦

.the incident in At-Tadkira

Al-Hamawini, Sheikul Islam. (...-٧٢٢) He mentions the incident in Feraidus .٧

.Simtein; Chapter ١٣. He relates it to Al-Wahidi, Athalabi and Sufian Bin Uyeina

:Al-Imadi, Abus Saud. (...-٩٨٢) In Tafsir; ٨/٢٩٢, he records .٨

It is said that Al-Harth Bin An-Numan Al-Fihri came, after he had received the

...’Prophet’s saying: ‘he whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master

p: ٣٧٤

Ashirbini, Shamsuddin Al-Qahiri Ashafii. (...-٩٧٧) In As-Sirajul Munir; ٤/٣٦٤, he .٩

:records

People provided different names for that who was hit by a heavenly stone. Ibn Abbas

-named him An-Nadr Bin Al-Harth, while others named him Al-Harth Bin An

...Numan

Al-Halabi, Burhanuddin Ali. (...-١٠٤٤) In As-Siretul Halabiya; ٣/٣٠٢, he .١٠

:records

-After the Prophet’s declaration had been common among people, Al-Harth Bin An

...Numan Al-Fihri

Al-Hafni, Shamsuddin Ashafii. (...-١١٨١) In Sharhul Jamiil Shaghir; ٢/٣٨٧, he .١١

refers to the incident through discussing the Prophet’s saying: “He whosever master

”was I, Ali shall be his master

...Azzarqani, Abu Ali Al-Maliki. (...-١١٢٢) In Sharhul Mawahibul Ludeniya .١٢

### HEAVENLY STONES FOR THE QURAIISHIS’ SPOKESMEN

In the Muslims’ reference books of hadith, there are narratives mentioning various names of those who objected against the Prophet’s nominating Ali for the coming leadership in Ghadir Khum

It is perceivable that some of these names referred to a definite person, but it was clerical error. Others were names of different persons, since that divine punishment was descended in different forms. This leads to repetition of the incident

Names of those whom were inflicted by heavenly stones or punishment are Jabir Bin -An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith Bin Kilda Al-Abdari, Al-Harith Bin An-Numan Al-Fihri, Al -Harth Bin An-Numan Al-Fihri, Amr Bin Utba Al-Makhzumi, An-Nadr Bin Al -Harith Al-Fihri, Al-Harith Bin Amr Al-Fihri, An-Numan Bin Al-Harith; the Jew, An Numan Bin Al-Munthir Al-Fihri, Amr Bin Al-Harith Al-Fihri, a man from sons of Teim, a Bedouin, a Bedouin from Najd who belongs to sons of Jafar Bin Kelab Bin

p: ٣٧٧

.Rabia

Saving the Bedouin and the Jew, all those are Quraishi men. Besides, there is no single individual from Ansar among them. It is unfamiliar for Ansar to protest against any privilege the Prophet gave to his progeny exclusively. Yet, they showed

.disloyalty to those household after the Prophet's decease

The incident, in abstract, is that one, or more, of those persons protested against the

Prophet's nominating Ali for the coming leadership, and accused the Prophet of passing his personal caprices in the form of divine mandate. Although the Prophet asserted that the decision had been the Lord's, the man was not convinced. He left

the place very irate and asked the Lord to rain him with a heavenly stone if the matter was His mandate. The Lord did inflict him with a heavenly stone that killed

.him, or inflicted him with a heavenly flame that burned him

From this incident, it is understandable that the Lord used a threatening style with the

Quraishis for protecting His Apostle against their apostasy. Consequently, they could

perceive that failure would be the decisive result of any political combat with the

.Prophet, and that they should wait for his decease

.We are to refer to the most notable questions inferred from this incident

### **MODELS OF THE SUNNIS' EXEGESES**

:Ashawkani's Fetihul Qadir; ٥/٣٥٢

That demander was An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith who said: "O Allah! If this is ... being the truth sent from Thee, then rain us with a heavenly stone or inflict .painful chastisement upon us." An-Nadr was killed during the battle of Badr

p: ٣٧٨

Others identified Abu Jahl or Al-Harith Bin An-Numan Al-Fihri. The earlier is the

.most suitable for the coming discussion

On page ۳۵۶ of the same book, Ashawkani mentions the narratives identified Mecca as the place where the Verse was revealed, and An-Nadr, none else, as the man upon whom the chastisement was inflicted. He disregards the narratives that identified Jabir or Al-Harith Al-Fihri. Similarly, he does not refer to narrators of the other .narratives and the reason due to which he prefers

It would be acceptable to some extent if Ashawkani showed no single signal to the .other narratives

Shamsuddin Ashirbini Al-Qahiri, whose death was in ۹۷۷, was fairer. In Tafsir, he .mentions the two reasons together

:Abaqatul Anwar; ۷/۳۹۸

Shamsuddin Ashirbinin records: Various opinions were cited for identifying that demander who demanded a chastisement which must befall. Ibn Abbas mentions .An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith. Others mention Al-Harith Bin An-Numan

When he received the Prophet's saying: "He whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master," the man rode his pack animal and came to the Prophet. "O Mohammed!" said he, "You have conveyed us the Lord's mandates of declaring ...there is no

Abu Ubeid ascertains that the previous incident was the very reason beyond revelation of the Verse. This was the conclusion attained by him, exclusively as it

.seems

:Nafahatul Azhar; ٧/٢٩١

Abu Ubeid records: After the Prophet's conveying the Lord's mandate in Ghadir

Khum had been prevailing among people, Jabir Bin An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith Bin

Kilda Al-Abdari came to the Prophet and said: "O Mohammed! You have

p: ٣٧٩

conveyed us the Lord's mandates of declaring there is no god but Allah and  
,Mohammed is being the Apostle of Allah, and performing the prayers, the fasting  
the pilgrimage, and defraying the poor rate. All these, we have admitted, were not

enough for you till you raised your cousin from the arm and preceded him to us

and said: 'He whosever master was I, Ali should be his master.' Is this matter

"?originated from your person or is it God's mandate

By Allah there is no god but Whom I take the oath, this is surely God's"

.(mandate," asserted the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

Jabir turned his face towards his pack animal while saying: "O Allah! If

Mohammed's words have been true, then rain us with a heavenly stone, or inflict

a painful chastisement upon us." Before Jabir could reach his pack animal, the

Lord rained him with a stone that fell on the head and went out from the anus. He

...was killed. Consequently, God revealed: (One demanding

:Al-Qurtubi's Tafsir; ١٨/٢٧٨

That demander was An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith who said: "O Allah! If this has...  
been the truth sent from Thee, then rain us with a heavenly stone or inflict a  
painful chastisement upon us." This man, together with Aqaba Bin Abi Mui, was  
.killed during the battle of Badr. This is the sayings of Ibn Abbas and Mujahid

Others said that the demander was Al-Harith Bin An-Numan Al-Fihri. Abu  
Ubeida relates that when this man received the Prophet's saying, "He whosever

p: ۳۸۰

.master was I, Ali shall be his master," he came to the Prophet... etc

.Ar-Rabi identifies Abu Jahl as that demander

.Others assert that it was the saying of a group of the Quraishi atheists

.Others identify Noah; the prophet, as the demander when he cursed his people

Others identify the Prophet (peace be upon him), when he cursed his people and

.supplicated the Lord to inflict chastisement upon them. They shall never avert it

God's saying, (Then endure with a goodly patience,) means that the Prophet...

.should be tolerant since this chastisement shall be imminent

Although they prefer the opinion citing An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith and his being killed  
during the battle of Badr as the exegesis of the Verse, Sunni exegesists record the  
incident of the heavenly chastisement inflicted on that who protested against the

Prophet's nominating Ali for the coming leadership in Ghadir Khum, as another

.exegesis

Sunnis' listing this opinion in their reference books of Tafsir, proves the most remarkable point which is the actual existence of an official prophetic declaration regarding Ali's leadership, and the existence of protesters against that declaration. In due course, it is unimportant whether Sunnis prefer the other opinions or not. A Muslim wants nothing more than Sunni exegetes' confession of that declaration no matter whether that chastisement was befallen or not, or sura of Maarij was revealed due to that incident or not. Hence, Shias are advised to show gratitude to those exegetes for their confession

On the other hand, the first opinion those exegetes preferred should be submitted to

p: ۳۸۱

a questionnaire

The most remarkable crux is that their exegesis is not related to the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family), while the Shias' is. They relied upon sayings of Ibn Abbas and Mujahid. Moreover, Ikrima, to whom they relate their exegesis, is decided as distrustful by both Sunni and Shiite scholars

It is rather unanimous that the demand provided in the Verse is actual not metaphoric. An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith, as Sunnis cite, did demand with that befalling chastisement challengingly. He said: "O Allah! If this is the truth sent from Thee, then rain us with a heavenly stone, or inflict a painful chastisement upon us." Hence the man was chastised when he was killed in the battle of Badr

At any rate, this citation is refuted by the fact that the Verse concerned the descending of that heavenly stone was revealed together with the Verses discuss rulings of spoils. They were revealed after the battle of Badr and An-Nadr's being chastised. On that account, it is irrational to point out that the Lord's replication to An-Nadr's demand was revealed in a Verse in Mecca, while the very demand was revealed in a Verse revealed afterwards in Al-Madina. Besides, it was revealed after .the demise of that An-Nadr

The demander's saying: "O Allah! If this is being the right sent from Thee, then rain us with a heavenly stone or inflict painful chastisement upon us," is more applicable to Shias' exegesis. For Sunnis, it means that God should rain the demander with a

p: ۳۸۲

heavenly stone if the religion was being sent from Him. For Shias, it means that God should rain the demander with a heavenly stone if nominating Ali for the coming leadership was the Lord's mandate. The latter, seemingly, is more relevant since such a saying is said only when the sayer despairs of having the ability to coincide .with a new political status that challenges his tribal situation rooted in his core

Finally, there is no reasonable contradiction between the exegesis cited by Sunni and that cited by Shias, even if the earlier is acceptable. It is quite practicable that the chastisement which must befall was inflicted upon An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith during the battle of Badr, and upon Jabir Bin An-Nadr; the son, and will be inflicted upon many

.of those who deserve it

It is important to refer to the remarkable rule of generalization advisably applied  
.during citing exegesis for the Quranic and other texts

The Lord answers that who demanded with the chastisement that must befall  
challengingly. He; the Exalted, asserts the befalling of that chastisement upon the  
demander and the entire atheists, as well as the believers according to definite  
.extents. Hence, the chastisement is incessant

It is not unacceptable that the defeats encountered by the disbelievers in battles of  
Badr and Al-Khandaq was a part of that befalling chastisement which also included  
the punishment of exsiccation and starvation they had suffered. It also included the  
punishment of submission and meekness imposed upon them after conquest of  
Mecca. In like manner, the chastisement inflicted upon those who objected the

p: ۳۸۳

Prophet's declaring the next leadership and imamate of Ali and his progeny was  
.included

Correspondingly, it is unnecessary for Sunni exegesists to restrain the scope of that  
chastisement to the case of An-Nadr, or a personal question, or a definite age, since  
.the chastisement is being lasting as long as this earth is abiding

Tens of examples on Sunni exegesists' groundless limitation and dedication of the  
Lord's inclusive wording, especially in Verses regarding the divine mercy and

.chastisement, can be obviously cited

## SECOND QUESTION

### WAS SURAH MAARIJ REVEALED IN MECCA OR AL-MADINA

The general sense of Verses of surah of Maarij, till Verse ۳۶, seems to be revealed in Al-Madina, since it comprises legislations similar to those of Nur and Muminin. While the rest seem to be revealed in Mecca for their referring to questions of the belief and the Hereafter. In due course, it is difficult to recognize the place of the revelation. At any rate, Quranists cite a number of restraints for distinguishing the Verses revealed in Mecca from those revealed in Al-Madina. Yet, these restraints are not that accurate and objective.

On that ground, we should regard the second part of the surah as revealed in Mecca while the first in Al-Madina, but it was preceded thereafter.

This regard should not be more than a surmise. The text of the surah is the decisive criterion on which the place of the revelation is identified. The text is contradictory in Sunni, as well as Shiite, reference books of hadith and Tafsir. Sunnis, however

p: ۳۸۴

.reckon the surah with those revealed in Mecca

It is not unlikely that Shias prefer this opinion, too. In his Sharhul Akhbar; ۱/۲۴۱

An-Numan relates that Imam As-Sadiq (peace be upon him) said: "By God, the surah was revealed in Mecca to show manners of those who dissented the mastership of Ali

”(peace be upon him)

The imam meant that although the sura was revealed in Mecca, it intends those who protested against the Prophet’s declaring leadership of Ali in Al-Madina thereafter

:Al-Kuleini’s Al-Kafi; 5/45.

Parties of the following dialogue were Abu Hanifa and Abu Jafar Mohammed Bin

:An-Numan

?Abu Hanifa: O Abu Jafar! What is your opinion about the temporary marriage

?Do you see it be lawful

.Abu Jafar: Yes, I do

Abu Hanifa: What then prevents you from applying it on your harem so that they

?will earn good fortune for you

,Abu Jafar: Not all professions are acceptable although lawful. People, in addition

?enjoy different standings they should keep. But what is your opinion about wine

?Do you see it be lawful

.Abu Hanifa: Yes, I do

Abu Jafar: What then prevents you from urging your women on jobbing as

?waitresses in pubs so that they will earn good fortune for you

Abu Hanifa: Well, one for one, and yours is more effective. O Abu Jafar! The

Verse in sura of Maarij discloses unlawfulness of the temporary marriage, and the

.Prophet’s saying repeals it

Abu Jafar: Sura of Maarij was revealed in Mecca, and Verse of the temporary marriage in Al-Madina, and your recital has been ridiculous and random

p: ٣٨٥

Abu Hanifa: Verse of the heritage discloses the repeal of that of the temporary marriage, too

Abu Jafar: It happens that spouses do not inherit each other lawfully

?Abu Hanifa: How come

Abu Jafar: If a Muslim husband is dead while his wife is Jewess or Christian? Is it lawful for her to receive his heritage

?Abu Hanifa: It is unlawful for her to receive his heritage

Abu Jafar: In this way it happens that spouses do not inherit each other lawfully

Abu Hanifa referred to God's saying: (And those who guard their private parts except in the case of their wives or those whom their right hands possess,)\* that is in sura of Maarij. Abu Jafar, whom is called Muminuttaq, answered that this Verse had been revealed in Mecca while God's saying: (Then as to those whom you profit by give them their dowries as appointed,) was revealed in Al-Madina later on. It is then impracticable for the previous to repeal the recent

The most accurate answer for Abu Hanifa's question is that temporary wives are reckoned with the legitimate wives referred to in God's saying: (Except in the case of their wives.) A good deal of Sunni scholars issued legality of marrying a woman

when it is intended to divorce her the next day. This is the very temporary marriage

.they are criticizing us for

Furthermore, Abu Hanifa himself issued that it is licit to copulate with the shehireling

whom is employed for house services even there is no permanent or

temporary bond of marriage between them. He inferred this verdict from the ruling

p: ٣٨٤

.that marriage is included in terms of the lease contract

This verdict is more inclusive than the temporary marriage that is authorized by

Shiite jurisprudence, since Shias specify the marriage contract as a provision of

.legitimacy of that marriage, while Abu Hanifa makes it boundless

Back to the topic, the sura's being revealed in Mecca does not act upon authenticity

of the narrative involving that the befalling chastisement mentioned in the Verse is

dedicated to that befell on those who protest against the Prophet's nominating Ali for

the coming leadership. This incident is seen as an interpretation of the Verse and a

.foretelling carried by Gabriel; the angel

The previous narrative of Sharhul Akhbar supports this meaning. Moreover, later on

:we are to refer to another narrative stating

He was inflicted by the thunderbolt and burnt. Soon, Gabriel descended: "O..."

...Mohammed! Recite: (One demanding

Meaning of the Verse is that the true believers should use pudicity with women\*

.except their wives and handmaids

This means that Gabriel carried the application or the interpretation of the Verse  
.previously revealed

-The Shiite narratives divulge that the chastisement inflicted on that Al-Abdari or Al Fihri was only a tiny part of the befalling chastisement promised by the Lord. Most of that chastisement shall be descended gradually, supporting or paving the way for  
\*.the advent of Imam Al-Mahdi

:Ali Bin Ibrahim Al-Qummi's Tafsir; ٢/٣٨٥

:Abu Jafar (peace be upon him) was asked about the meaning of God's saying  
One demanding...) The imam answered: "That shall be a fire coming forth from)  
p: ٣٨٧

the west. An angel shall drive it from behind till it reaches the house of sons of Sa'd Bin Hemmam that is near their mosque. The fire shall never leave a single house for the Umayyids saved from burning. It shall also burn all the houses that partook in persecuting Mohammed's family. That shall be Al-Mahdi (peace be  
).(upon him

:An-Numani's Al-Gheiba; ٢٧٢

:Jafar Bin Mohammed (peace be upon him): The interpretation of God's saying ...  
One demanding...,) indicates the coming divine chastisement that shall befall in)  
Thawiya. It is a fire coming over Kenasa to Thaqif. It shall not leave a single

house that persecuted Mohammed's family without burning. That shall be in the

(vicinity of the advent of Al-Mahdi (peace be upon him

The places mentioned in the two narratives are some quarters of Kufa which shall be

taken as the capital

Imam As-Sadiq's saying, "indicates the coming divine chastisement," asserts that

this befalling chastisement is an open menace some of which was befallen on

polytheists and hypocrites in the past, and some shall inflict the rest. This is the most

suitable exegesis that coincides the open threat of the Verse and the Lord's norm of

triumphing His religion and adherents

### THIRD QUESTION

#### THE CHASTISEMENT IS MUNDANE OR HEREAFTER

Apart from exegeses of the sura, it is observable that the topic and pivot of the sura

refers to the Hereafter chastisement totally. The Verses do not show any sort of

condemn directed to that demander who might be an ordinary guiltless asker. It is

p: ٣٨٨

also possible that that the demander might be a suppliant seeking that chastisement

-Throughout providing the various opinions of the exegesists regarding the Verse, Al

;Qurtubi refers to the opinion that the suppliant of that chastisement is being Noah

(the prophet, or our Prophet (peace be upon him and his family

A question may jump: What for then did Sunni and Shiite exegesists affirm that the

Verse included the mundane chastisement, and that demander challenged and  
?belied

In our Mujamu Ahadithil Imamil Mahdi; ٥/٤٥٨, we have referred to a number of\*  
sayings ascribed to Imam Al-Baqir and Imam As-Sadiq, providing an exegesis for  
the befalling chastisement which shall be befalling in periods just before the advent  
.(of Al-Mahdi (peace be upon him

The answer is lexicological. The Arabic item (sa'ala bi) refers to asking about a  
matter challengingly and denyingly. The item indicates that the demander has  
already heard of such a mundane and Hereafter chastisement from the Prophet who  
used to threat and forewarn; therefore, he demanded with it challengingly and  
denyingly. The Lord answered him through these Verses. Despite that the Lord  
emphasized on the Hereafter chastisement and its features, since it is the basic and  
.the most important and incessant, He did not negate the mundane one

The sura proclaims: "O you who are deriding the chastisement forewarned by Our  
Apostle! Surely whatever he has menaced shall befall, whether in this world or in the  
Hereafter. Nothing shall guard the atheists against it. Hence, you are advised to  
believe in God so that you shall avoid that chastisement since the Lord protects the

p: ٣٨٩

".believers against His chastisement

God's saying, (The unbelievers there is none to avert it,) negates the possibility of

averting that chastisement away from the unbelievers. In other words, this chastisement is inevitable for the unbelievers who deserve it. Besides, it is also unavoidable for those who spoke 'We believe' externally only. Yes, repentance and seeking the Lord's forgiveness avert that chastisement

It is not unlikely that (the unbelievers) mentioned in the Verse stands for the linguistic meaning, and then those who disbelieve a part of God's marvels or graces are included even if they were Muslims

The linguistic meaning of an item is the origin, while the terminological should be accepted when it is evidenced. Hence, the linguistic should be preceded to the terminological whenever the meaning is doubted

Sunni exegesists are engaged in incoherence through providing their opinions about the sura. They allocate (the chastisement which must befall) to the Hereafter chastisement, and excluded Muslims, meanwhile, they dedicate that chastisement to

An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith Al-Abdari who was killed during the battle of Badr

.Thenceforth, it comprehended the earthly chastisement

There is a manifest course adopted by Sunni exegesists. They always endeavor to refer to the Hereafter chastisement as the only purport of Verses of chastisement all over the holy Quran especially those pointing at people of Quraish. Sometimes, they hang that chastisement in the necks on the Jews and Christians so that they may take it away from Muslims, including the hypocrites

This trend dragged them to state that the Lord did not respond to His Apostle's

p: ۳۹۰

supplication against his people. Moreover, they accused him of being reprimanded

(...by the Lord Who said: (You have no concern in the affair

On that account, the Quraishi authorities accentuated the claim of the Lord's fixing

upon the Quraishis and disallowing censuring them, and reckoned them, falsely, with

the prophetic texts, even if such a claim imputed inaccuracy and offense to the

Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). Hence, such claims are found in the

.reference books of hadith and Tafsir

In case they were having to confess that one of the Quraishi Pharaohs had been

-inflicted to a mundane chastisement, they made it a peculiar state, like that of An

.Nadr Bin Al-Harith who was chastised during the battle of Bard

In his Tafsir; ۳۰/۱۲۲, Al-Fakhr Ar-Razi opts for this claim when he asserts, during

explaining the first Verse of sura of Maarij, that the chastisement which is not

:averted from the unbelievers shall be in the Hereafter. He adds

An-Nadr was inflicted to this chastisement during the battle of Badr. This is the

.most accurate opinion

Ar-Razi, as it is seen, pursues Sunni scholars who claimed the termination of that

promised mundane chastisement. Yet, the sura does not indicate any sort of

.terminating

As a matter of fact, the forecited course is less fanatic than that ensued by the official hadithists who disallow ascribing that befalling chastisement to any of the Quraishis including An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith and Abu Jahl. Moreover, it is they who originated accusing the Prophet of being inaccurate and reprimanded by the Lord for

p: ٣٩١

.supplicating Him against his people

:Al-Bukhari's; ٥/١٩٩

Anas Bin Malik: When Abu Jahl expressed, "O Allah! If this is being the right sent from Thee, then rain us with a heavenly stone or inflict painful chastisement upon us," God revealed: (But Allah was not going to chastise them while you were among them, nor is Allah going to chastise them while yet they ask for (.forgiveness

,The very narrative is repeated in other places of Al-Bukhari's. In addition, Muslim

.on page ١٢٩ of part ٨, records it

Readers can hardly ever believe the Sunnis' exegeses of God's saying: (You have no concern in the affair.) It is delicate that the Verse denies the Prophet's enjoying any sort of godhead and association with the Lord, but they explained it as if it strips every prophetic matter enjoyed by him. According to their exegeses, the Verse withdraws Mohammed's unprecedented morality, wisdom and interest on guiding his .people to the right path

They describe him as a narrow-minded person who bears malice to the Quraishis and aims for assaulting and wronging them. Hence, God revealed His defending those sacred twenty three tribes, and refuted His Prophet's wronging and assaulting them

.This topic can be discussed more detailedly if there is enough space

While both exegesists and hadithists show loyalty to the Quraishis, perplexity is originated when we read the exegesists' reckoning the killing of a Pharaonic Quraishi chief with the chastisement which must befall, and the hadithists' claiming the killing of that chief and Abu Jahl's being out of that chastisement. One of those

p: ۳۹۲

hadithists, that is Al-Bukhari, considers the question of killing An-Nadr and Abu Jahl as an ordinary death, since the Lord had excluded the Quraishis from His chastisement and reprimanded His Apostle for he had cursed them

The following incident recorded in Ibn Sa'd's At-Tabaqat, can be cited as an evidence on the accuracy of the exegesists' opinion

When Talha and Az-Zubeir arrived in Basra, they sealed the public treasury. They competed on leading the collective prayer so stubbornly that its time was about to

lapse. Finally, they agreed that Abdullah Bin Az-Zubeir and Mohammed Bin Talha should lead the prayers consecutively. Mohammed Bin Talha dragged Abdullah Bin Az-Zubeir, and Abdullah Bin Az-Zubeir dragged Mohammed Bin Talha. They used the ballot. It was Mohammed Bin Talha who won it. In the

...prayer, he recited: (One demanding

Mohammed Bin Talha; son of Quraish and Teim, understood that the Verse had been a threat of mundane chastisement; therefore, he cited it as a menace directed at

Abdullah Bin Az-Zubeir. Likewise, the incident indicates that the Prophet's companions who coincided in time of the revelation of the Verse, understood indisputably, that the mundane chastisement had been included in that chastisement

#### FOURTH QUESTION

#### THE SUNNIS' JUDGMENT ON THE NARRATIVES

The Sunnis' judgment on the narrative is not one. Some, such as Abu Ubeid and Athalabi and Al-Hamawini, accept and prefer it to the other opinions. Others record it indirectly. A third group prefer the other opinions. At any rate, none rejects it totally. In the least degree, the narrative is accepted and decided as authentically

p: ۳۹۳

.documented, while other opinions are favored

Sunni scholars are obliged to regard this narrative. Furthermore, they can adopt it beyond any embarrassment, since the master scholars, such as Abu Ubeid and Sufian

Bin Uyeina, who admitted the narrative are too trustful to adopt inauthentic traditions

Al-Albani, whom is regarded as the leading hadithist in the current age, decides authenticity of a narrative as soon as he perceives that two or three master scholars

.such as Ibn Teimiya and At-Thehbi and Ibnul-Qeyim, had authenticated  
,Sunni hadithists refer to various ways of narrating that report, related to Hutheifa

.Abu Hureira et al

Detailed information about those who reported and authenticated that narrative are  
,cited in the Sunni, and Shiite reference books such as Abaqatul Anwar, Al-Ghadir  
.Nafahatul Azhar and others

## **FIFTH QUESTION**

### THE NASSIBITES' JUDGMENT ON THE NARRATIVE

Before Ibn Teimiya, none of Nassibites refuted and decided inauthenticity of the  
.narrative involved

Mohammed Rashid Rida, in his Tafsirul Menar, follows Ibn Teimiya who attacked  
.the narrative coarsely and blundered blindly through it

Misusing the name of his master; Sheik Mohammed Abduh, Rashid Rida was  
engaged in confusing his ideas with his master's. He was highly influenced by ideas  
of Ibn Teimiya and Ibnul-Qeyim. Moreover, he pursued them when he recorded their  
.ideas in his book

There is an explicit difference between the first two parts of that Tafsirul Menar and  
the rest. This is by reason that the two first parts were written down in the lifetime of  
Sheik Mohammed Abduh. Therefore, they are filled in with the influence of the

master who was highly broad-minded and acceding to the Prophet's progeny general  
mastership. The other parts which were produced after the decease of Sheik  
Mohammed Abduh, or reprinted, are filled in with very much ill ideas that  
antagonize the Prophet's progeny (peace be upon them

On page ٤٦٤ of part ٦ of Tafsirul Menar, the compiler records the narrative  
regarding Al-Harith Bin An-Numan Al-Firhri's objecting against the Prophet's  
nominating Ali for the next leadership. He relates the narrative to Athalabi and  
comments

,This narrative is untrue. Sura of Maarij was revealed in Mecca. In sura of Anfal  
which was revealed just after the battle of Badr and many years before the  
revelation of sura of Maida, the Lord reminded the unbelievers of their previous  
-challenge befalling the chastisement. It is understood, from the narrative, that Al  
Harith Bin An-Numan dissented Islam. His name was not with the Prophet's  
companions. Al-Abtuh; the place where events of the story occurred, is in Mecca  
The Prophet did not return to Mecca after that day in Ghadir. He resided in Ghadir  
-during his journey back from the Farewell Pilgrimage. He went straightly to Al  
Madina

It seems that Rashid Rida could find his intent through Ibn Teimiya's criticizing the  
context of the narrative since the documentation was too authentic to be refuted  
However, he did not ascribe that criticism to Ibn Teimiya

The main point, upon which Ibn Teimiya and Rashid Rida depended in criticizing the narrative, is that Al-Abtuh; the place where events of the narrative occurred, was in

p: ٣٩٥

while time of the events was after the Farewell Pilgrimage. The Prophet did not see

.Mecca ever again after the Farewell Pilgrimage

-Unintentionally or intentionally, the critics neglected that famous place in Al

.Madina which is also called Al-Abtuh

'The other point they provided was that the Verse that rendered the unbelievers

challenging statement was revealed in Al-Madina while sura of Maarij was in

.Mecca

They also ignored that the general sense of the first thirty six Verses and the

.narrative involved suppose and indicate that it was revealed in Al-Madina

Even if it was revealed in Mecca, there is no flaw if we admit that it was revealed

more than once for explication or application. The incident might have been as an

application for the sura. As an example we cite that exegesists assert the repetitive

.revelation of sura of Kawthar for appeasing the Prophet's heart

-In due course, it is quite acceptable that the Verse was applied on that family. An

Nadr Bin Al-Harith was killed by the Prophet during the battle of Badr, and Jabir; his

son, was killed by that heavenly stone in Al-Abtuh that lies in Al-Madina. It is also

quite admissible that Gabriel; the angel, affirmed the application of the Verse on that

.occurrence

Furthermore, it is reasonless to refute the whole narrative even if it is proved that the

Verse was not revealed in that occasion. Hence, the revelation of the Verse alone

.should be refuted since the rest of the narrative was proved as authentic

As he discusses the points of Rashid Rida, the compiler of Tafsirul Mizan; ٤/٥٤

p: ٣٩٤

:records

Rashid Rida's points are colored with his baseless obduracy. He relies upon some

narratives, related to Ibn Abbas and Ibnuz-Zubeir, affirming that sura of Maarij

.was revealed in Mecca. Like the narrative involved, such narratives are one-way

Secondly, there is no evidence asserts that the entire Verses of Maarij were

revealed in Mecca. It is thoroughly possible that the entire Verses were revealed

.in Mecca except for the first two

Thirdly, while he, as well as many exegesists, attest that Verse of Isma was revealed in the earliest stage of the Prophet's divine mission, it is positioned in the

middle of the last sura. In other words, they claim the Verse's being revealed in

.Mecca, while it is positioned in sura of Maida, which was revealed in Al-Madina

Fourthly, it is true that sura of Anfal preceded that of Maida many years. But this

does not violate that there are some following Verses positioned in preceding

suras. Sunnis claim that Verses of usury and others were the final; meanwhile

they are positioned in sura of Baqara; the first sura revealed after the Prophet's immigration to Al-Madina

Fifthly, there is another baseless obduracy in Rashid Rida's considering God's saying: (And when they said: O Allah! If this has been the truth sent from Thee then rain upon us a stone from the heavens or inflicted upon us a painful chastisement,) as the Lord's reminding the unbelievers of their previous challenge the befalling of chastisement

Setting of the text indicates the opposite. Moreover, it is quite palpable for every

p: ۳۹۷

one who has a certain acquaintance of rhetoric that the previous words must have been said by an individual who did believe in Allah and accept that the right matters and mandates are proposed by Him. But he stopped and suspected a matter ascribed to the Lord. Hence, he supplicated the Lord to curse him if it would be the truth

Sixthly, another baseless obduracy is checked in his claiming Al-Harith Bin An Numan's being apostate and non-Sahabi. It is impossible to count names of all those who saw and believed in the Prophet, and those who apostatized

Seventhly, the man claimed that Al-Abtuh was a place in Mecca that the Prophet left before the incident of Ghadir Khum. As a matter of fact, Abtuh is a name called at every mound. Besides, there is no evidence proving that the narrative

referred to that Abtuh of Mecca in specific. Besides, except Athalabi's, other  
.narratives do not refer to Al-Abtuh in their reports

At length, it is a one-way report. Its authenticity is not proved by decisive  
affidavit. As a rule, the one-way narratives are not counted except in secondary  
rulings. We only aimed for showing inaccuracy of the topics depended upon by

.Rashid Rida

The Previous answers introduced by the compiler of Al-Mizan are indisputable  
evidences that refuted Rashid Rida's discussion. Anyhow, the compiler should have  
-reviewed the reference books and narrators of the narrative, and the theses of Al

Amini, in the first volume of Al-Ghadir, and An-Naqawi Al-Hindi, in Abaqatul

.Anwar; ٧-٨, before he decided it as a one-way report

p: ٣٩٨

-The following is a precise proposition of Al-Amini's thesis introduced in his Al

:Ghadir; ١/٢٣٩

Shias assured that God's saying, (One demanding...,) was revealed just after the  
Prophet's declaration in Ghadir. Besides, a great number of the most remarkable

...Sunni reference books of Tafsir and hadith assert this fact

Al-Amini then refers to thirty master hadithists who recorded the narratives  
involved. Two of them preceded Athalabi. After that, he refutes detailedly the points

mentioned by Ibn Teimiya in his Minhajus Sunna; ٤/١٣. The following is a brief

:proposition of these points

,First point: Ibn Teimiya discusses that Al-Abtuh, in which the incident occurred was a place in Mecca, while his declaration of nominating Ali for the coming leadership was in Ghadir Khum during his journey back to Al-Madina

The answer is that Al-Halabi, in As-Sira, and Ibnul-Jawzi, in At-Tethkira, and Mohammed Sadrulalem, in Maarijul-Ali, affirm that the incident happened in mosque of Al-Madina. Moreover, Al-Halabi refers to Al-Madina directly

Nevertheless, Ibn Teimiya neglects all these reports and goes on refuting the narrative from the base. Had he reviewed the reference books of hadith, lexicon geography and literature, he would have realized that Al-Abtuh is a name of any mound

Al-Bukhari, in Sahih; ١/١٨١, and Muslim, in; ١/٣٨٢, relate to Abdullah Bin Omar that the Prophet settled in Al-Abtuh of Thilhalifa, which is a place in Al-Madina

Second point: Scholars agree that sura of Maarij was revealed in Mecca ten years before that incident in Ghadir Khum

The answer is that those scholars agree that the sura, generally, was revealed in

p: ٣٩٩

Mecca. They do not affirm that the entire Verses were revealed there; therefore, it is possible that some Verses were revealed in Al-Madina. This is habitual in most of the suras

It is also understandable that the order of Verses in a sura does not necessarily – expose the same order in revelation, and that classifying the suras as Mekkiya revealed in Mecca– and Madaniya –revealed in Al–Madina– does not mean that the entire Verses were revealed there. There are many examples in the holy Quran ...witnessing this fact

!Third point: Scholars agree unanimously that God’s saying, (They said: O Allah

If this has been the truth sent from Thee, then rain upon us a stone from the heavens or inflicted upon us a painful chastisement,) was revealed just after the .battle of Badr. That was many years before the incident of Ghadir

The answer is that it is inaccurate that Al–Harith’s words were revealed as a Quranic text on that day. Any deep look at the reports that narrated the incident exposes the inexactitude of Ibn Teimiya’s point. It is also graspable that the Quranic texts are not interdicted to be spoken by any. Apart from time of the revelation of that Verse, that atheist did speak these words on the occasion of .Ghadir

Ibn Teimiya, however, aims at adding to the points he cited against those .authentic narratives

Fourth point: The Verse was revealed because of the polytheists’ sayings in Mecca. They were not chastised owing to the presence of the Prophet among

them. This is aided by God's saying, (But Allah was not going to chastise them while you were among them, nor is Allah going to chastise them while yet they  
(ask for forgiveness

The answer is that there is no interrelation between ceasing the chastisement directed at the polytheists in Mecca, and ceasing it on that man. The Lord's deeds  
.vary according to the wisdom required by situations

It is familiar that there were many individuals inflicted by heavenly chastisement  
...while the Prophet was present

If the Prophet's presence was a barrier against the entire sorts of the heavenly chastisement, such a menace and threat should be senseless, and, similarly, the  
Prophet's curse would not hit such individuals whom were inflicted by the  
...heavenly chastisement

Fifth point: Had such an incident been true, it would have been exposed in a  
Verse similar to those exposed the incident of the Abyssinian attack against the  
Kaba. Besides, we noticed that the most remarkable exegesists and hadithists  
.neglected such reports that they are related only to such a rejected documentation

.Thus, inaccuracy and fabrication of the narrative is proved

The answer is that such an individual incident that does not create that  
demanding quake in the society, cannot be measured to the extraordinary incident  
of the Abyssinian attack. In addition, the incident suffered various sorts of

screening and covering since it carried fatal facts about that incident in Ghadir Khum. By the way, the very incident of Ghadir Khum suffered such sorts of .concealment and negligence

'Another inaccuracy is derived by Ibn Teimiya as he claims the hadithists  
p: ۴۰۱

neglecting the narrative. We have already identified the most remarkable .hadithists, scholars, exegesists and historians who affirmed the incident

Thirdly, Ibn Taimiya does not expose that rejected documentation. The entire reports that narrated the incident are related to Hutheifa Bin Al-Yeman; the celebrated companion of the Prophet, and Sufian Bin Uyeina; one of the master .scholars, hadithists and exegesists, and the trustful reporter

Documentation of the reports are detailedly scrutinized by a great number of master hadithists, exegesists and scholars. They would not accept it unless they found it reliable and delicate. Hence, they refer to it during citing exegesis of .Quranic texts

This is the truth. But Ibn Teimiya rejects the documentation and criticizes the text .because it did not befit the notoriety of his ill plot

Sixth point; From the text, it is attained that Al-Harith was a Muslim, since he admitted five of the Islamic bases. It is necessarily knowable that any sort of the heavenly chastisement was not inflicted upon any Muslim during the prophetic

The answer is that in the same way of proving islamization of Al-Harith, it is proved that he objected against the Prophet and suspected the matter conveyed from the Lord. Hence, he was not chastised while he was Muslim. Likewise, there is a number of Muslims chastised when they violated the sacredness of the Lord's (Apostle, or when they were cursed by him (peace be upon him and his family

One of those is that man who refused carrying the Prophet's instructions of having food with the right hand, excusing that he lost the ability of using that hand. The

p: ۴۰۲

Prophet cursed him; therefore, the man could not raise his hand forever. This

.narrative is mentioned in Muslim's Sahih

-Seventh point: Al-Harith Bin An-Numan is not known among Sahaba. Ibn Abdil Berr; in Alistiab, Ibn Menda, Abu Nuweim Alisbahani and Abu Musa do not refer to him in their books that included names of Sahaba. Hence, the man is unknown and, could be, nonexistent

.The answer is that books allocated for counting Sahaba could not cover the all Each compiler added to the the previous. The most preferable book in this regard in Ibn Hajar Al-Asqalani's Al-Isabetu Fi Tamyizis Sahaba. However, this compiler introduces his book by the following statement: "Despite our exhausting efforts, we could not count the names of tenth of the companions since there were

more than one hundred thousand individuals who heard or saw the Prophet.” As a result, this is the reality of such books. It is then unjust and inappropriate to deny the existence of a person just because his name was not mentioned in such books

Moreover, it is quite probable that compilers of such books do not add the name of that man to the list of Sahaba because of his apostasy

:We are to add the following points to Al-Amini’s answers

First: Such narratives that reported such an incident can never be baseless. It is irrational to believe that the official narrators of the Quraishi caliphate were the originators of such an incident that proved the divine base and mandate of Ali’s leadership that preceded Abu Bakr’s. The incident also proved that the objectors

p: ٤٠٣

against that divine leadership were punished in the same way suffered by the

.Abissynian assailants and the atheists

In due course, it is critical to affirm that such narratives found themselves places in

the Sunni reference books through the Shiite. The entire structure of the Sunni

reference books of hadith, and the Quraishi caliphate would be collapsed totally if

such a concept was proved or asserted. Narratives respecting principals of the

Quraishi caliphate, and those respecting such pro-Shiite matters are related to the

same narrators. Therefore, Sunni scholars have to admit and authenticate such

.narratives even if they injure principals of their structures

Second: Prevalently, matters unanimously admitted by Sunnis and Shias are more acceptable than the others. Naturally, hearts trust the prophetic texts that are registered by the entire Islamic sects, while they suspect those admitted by a sect and rejected by the other. Moreover, the narrative the text of which is injurious to the .narrator who tries his best for evading, is more acceptable than those according In abstract, the narratives involved are classified under this category. They do injure .followers of the Quraishi caliphate, and perplex Nassibites; adorers of Quraish The adherents to the Prophet's progeny use such narrators as evidences on their .being the right

Third: When the other conditions of authenticity of the narrative are exquisite, the ,variance on the first name of the man, upon whom that heavenly stone was inflicted becomes inoffensive. Besides, his people and relative "must have spared no efforts .for hiding his name that imputed dishonor to them," As Al-Amini expresses

p: ۴۰۴

Finally, scholars should prefer that the name was Jabir Bin An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith ,Bin Kilda Al-Abdari, not Al-Harith Bin An-Numan Al-Fihri, since Abu Ubeid whom is highly esteemed by the entire Sunni scholars for his experience in this field .and precedence of his age, registers this name in his Tafsir Jabir Bin An-Nadr is a famed Quraishi personality. His father was chief of sons of

Abdud-Dar; the bearer of the Quraishis' pennon during the battle of Badr against

.Muslims. Thusly, neither Ibn Teimiya nor can Nassibites refute this narrative

The rest names, such as Al-Harith Al-Fihri, or their relatives to the least extent, are

.included in the books mentioned Sahaba

## SIXTH QUESTION

### WAYS OF NARRATION AND DOCUMENTATION OF THE NARRATIVE

First: Ways of narration and documentation depended by the Sunni reference

books of hadith

.First way: Abu Ubeid's narrative recorded in his Gharibul Qur'an

According to criteria of Sunni hadithists, this narrative is decided as admissible

.documentation

.Second way: Athalabi's relation to Sufian Bin Uyeina

This way have a number of documentations. Most of those remarked by Al-Amini

.relate the narrative to Athalabi

In his Ihqaqul Haq; ٤/٣٥٨, Sayyid Al-Marashi mentions a number of those who

:relate the narrative to Athalabi. He records

Athalabi, in Tafsir: Sufian Bin Uyeina was asked about the exegesis of God's

:saying: (One demanding...) He answered

You are the first man who asks about this question. My father relates that Jafar

:(Bin Mohammed recounts the following to his fathers (God be pleased to them

When the Prophet (peace be upon him) was in Ghadir Khum, he summoned

p: ۴۰۵

people. As they gathered before him, he took Ali from the arm and raised him

’saying, ‘He whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master

–After this had been prevailing among people, Al–Harith (or Al–Harth) Bin An

,Numan Al–Fihri heard it. He came towards the Prophet. When he reached there

he stopped his pack animal and rode off. He approached the Prophet and said: “O

Mohammed! You have conveyed to us the Lord’s mandates of declaring there is

.no god but Allah and Mohammed is being the Apostle of Allah, and we admitted

Then you ordered us of performing the five prayers, and we admitted. And

,ordered us of defraying the poor rate, and we admitted. And ordered us of fasting

.and we admitted. And ordered us of performing the pilgrimage, and we admitted

All these, we have admitted, were not enough for you till you raised your cousin

from the arm and preceded him to us and said: ‘He whosever master was I, Ali

should by his master.’ Is this matter originated from your person or is it God’s

”?mandate

By Allah there is no god but Whom I take the oath, this is surely God’s“

.(mandate,” asserted the Prophet (peace be upon him

Al–Harith Bin An–Numan turned his face towards his pack animal saying: “O

,Allah! If Mohammed’s words have been true, then rain us with a heavenly stone

”or inflict a painful chastisement upon us

Before he could reach the animal, the Lord rained him with a stone that fell on the

p: ٤٠٦

:head and went out from the anus. He was killed. Consequently, God revealed

...One demanding)

.The same narrative is recorded by Al-Hamawini in Feraidus Simtein

.Az-Zernadi records it in his Nudhumu Duraris Simtein; ٩٣

.Ibnus-Sebbagh Al-Maliki records it in his Al-Fussoulul Muhimma; ٢٤

Abdurrahman As-Saffuri records it in Nuzhatul Mejalis; ٢/٢٠٩. He also quotes

.the same narrative from Al-Qurtubi’s Tafsir

In Al-Arbauna Hadithen, Sayyid Jamaluddin Ataullah Ashirazi records the same

...narrative with the addition

.Abdullah Ashafii, in Al-Menaqib; ٢٠٥, relates the same narrative

.Al-Qanduzi, in Yenabiul Mawadda; ٢٤٧, relates the same narrative

-Al-Amrutseri, in Arjahul Metalib; ٥٦٨, relates it to Shihabuddin Ad

...Dawletabadi

.Abdurrauf Al-Mennawi records the same narrative in Feidul Qadir

.Mohammed Al-Qadiri records it in As-Siratus Sawi

.Al-Halabi records it in Insanul Uyun

.Ahmed Bin Al-Fadl Bin Mohammed Bakthir records it in Wasiletul Amal

.Mohammed Bin Ismail Al-Amir records it in Arrawdatul Nadiya

.Mohammed Bin Yousuf Al-Kenji records it in Kifayetut Talib

:Al-Hasakani's two ways of relation to Sufian Bin Uyeina

:Shawahidut Tanzil; ٢/٣٨١

:Sufian Bin Uyeina: Jafar Bin Mohammed: His father: Ali ... .١٠٣٠

When the Prophet (peace be upon him), in Ghadir Khum, nominated Ali for the  
,coming leadership and said, 'He whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master

An-Numan Bin Al-Harth Al-Fihri came to the Prophet and said: "You have  
conveyed to us the Lord's mandates of declaring there is no god but Allah and  
Mohammed is being the Apostle of Allah, and you ordered us of jihad and  
pilgrimaging and praying and defraying the poor rate and fasting, and we

p: ٤٠٧

admitted. All these, we have admitted, were not enough for you till you nominated

this boy and said: 'He whosever master was I, Ali should be his master.' Is this

"?matter originated from your person or is it God's mandate

.This is surely God's mandate," asserted the Prophet"

"?I adjure you by the Lord there is no god but Whom, is it Allah's mandate"

.asked the man

By the Lord there is no god but Whom I do take the oath, this is Allah's"

.mandate," affirmed the Prophet

An-Numan turned his face and said: "O Allah! If this has been the truth sent from Thee, then rain us with a heavenly stone, or inflict a painful chastisement upon us".

The Lord threw at him a stone that fell on the head, and he was killed

...Consequently, God revealed: One demanding

(Abu Bakr As-Subei... (The same previous narrative ۱۰۳۱)

Third way: Al-Hasakani's relation to Jabir Al-Jufi

:Shawahidut Tanzil; ۲/۳۸۲

Ibrahim... Jabir Al-Jufi... Al-Harith Bin Amr Al-Fihri came to the ۱۰۳۲

Prophet... As soon as he arrived that mound, a heavenly gravel cracked his head

Immediately, God revealed: (One demanding demanded the chastisement that

(-must befall -to those who objected against the leadership of Ali

Similar narratives are related to Hutheifa, Sa'd Bin Abi Waqas, Abu Hureira and

Ibn Abbas

Fourth way: Al-Hasakani's relation to Hutheifa Bin Al-Yeman

:Shawahidut Tanzil; ۲/۳۸۳

Abul-Hassan... Hutheifa Bin Al-Yeman: When the Prophet said, 'He ۱۰۳۳

-whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master,' An-Numan Bin Al-Munthir Al

...Fihri stood erect and said

.Fifth way: Al-Hasakani's relation to Abu Hureira

:Shawahidut Tanzil; ٢/٣٨٥

Othman... Abu Hureira: On that day in Ghadir Khum, the Prophet (peace .١٠٣٤  
be upon him) took Ali Bin Abi Talib from the arm and said, 'He whosever master  
was I, Ali shall be his master.' A Bedouin stood erect and said... A flame from  
...the heavens burnt that man. Hence, God revealed: (One demanding

Al-Hasakani refers to two more ways of narration, related to Sa'd Bin Abi Waqas  
and Ibn Abbas. He does not refer to their documentation. Probably, they are the same  
ways registered in Furat Al-Kufi's Tafsir

Second: Ways of narration and documentation depended by the Shiite reference  
books of hadith and related to Sufian Bin Uyeina

Ways of narration and documentation depended by Furat Al-Kufi and related  
to Sufian Bin Uyeina

:Furat Al-Kufi's Tafsir; ٥٠٥

I asked Sufian Bin Uyeina about the event for which God's saying, (One ...  
demanding...,) was revealed. Sufian replied: O my brother's son! You are the first  
one who asks this question. I have asked Jafar Bin Mohammed (peace be upon  
them) the same question. He answered: ... Ibn Abbas recounted: On that day in  
Ghadir Khum, the Prophet sermonized. He summoned Ali Bin Abi Talib (peace  
be upon him). He took him from the arm and raised as elevated as possible. He

,then declared, 'Have I conveyed the message to you? Have I advised you?' 'Yes  
.you have indeed,' affirmed people

!After that, he said, 'He whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master. O Allah

p: ٤٠٩

Accede to whomever accedes to him, and oppose whomever opposes him, and  
give victory to whomever supports him, and disappoint whomever disappoints  
'him

As this matter was prevalent among people, Al-Harith Bin An-Numan Al-Fihri  
rode on his pack animal and approached the Prophet who was in Mecca. The  
Prophet answered the greetings. Al-Harith spoke, 'O Mohammed! You have  
solicited us to say that there is no god but Allah, and we did. Then you solicited  
us to say that you are being the Apostle of Allah, and we did in spite of what we  
had in our hiddens. Then you asked us to perform the prayers, and we did. They  
you asked us to fast, and we deprived ourselves of water during daylight and  
drove our bodies to fatigue. Then you asked us to pilgrimage, and we did. Then  
you instructed that we should pay five dirhams from each two hundred ones  
annually, and we did. Now, you have introduced your cousin and nominated him  
.as the coming leader and said: He whosever master was I, Ali shall be his master  
O Allah! Accede to whomever accedes to him, and oppose whomever opposes  
him, and give victory to whomever supports him, and disappoint whomever

.disappoints him

Is this yours or is it God's mandate?' 'It is surely God's mandate,' answered the Prophet. The same question was repeated twice, and the same answer was. The man was very irate as he stood up and said, 'O Allah! If Mohammed's words have been the truth, then rain us with a heavenly stone that shall be a castigation for the

p: ٤١٠

precedents and a marvel for the coming generations. And if his words have been

'untrue, then inflict Thy castigation upon him

As soon as he went away, the Lord threw him with a heavenly stone that hit the

head and went out of the anus. The man died. Hence, God revealed: (One

...demanding

Ways of narration and documentation depended by Mohammed Bin Al-Abbas

.and related to Sufian Bin Uyeina

:Tawilul Ayat; ٢/٧٢٢

...Mohammed Bin Al-Abbas

Ways of narration and documentation depended by Asharif Al-Murteda and

.related to Sufian Bin Uyeina

:Madinetul Maajiz; ١/٤٠٧

...Sayyid Al-Murteda's Uyunul Mujizat: Abu Abdillah

Ways of narration and documentation depended by Muntajabuddin Ar-Razi

.and related to Sufian Bin Uyeina

:Al-Arbauna Hadithen; ٨٢

...Abul-Ala

Ways of narration and documentation depended by At-Tebirsi and related to

.Sufian Bin Uyeina

:Tafsirul Mizan; ٩/٥٨

...Majmaul Bayan: Abul Hamd

Third: The other ways of narration and documentation depended by the Shiite

.reference books of hadith

-Ways of narration and documentation depended by Mohammed Bin Yaqub Al

.Kuleini

:Al-Kafi; ١/٤٢٢

Abu Abdillah recited: (One demanding, demanded the chastisement which must

(befall. The unbelievers -in Ali's leadership- there is none to avert it

He added: "By God, Gabriel revealed it to Mohammed (peace be upon him and

".his family) in this form

Imam As-Sadiq means that Gabriel revealed the interpretation of the Verse, too. This

is similar to Ibn Masud's saying, "In the reign of the Prophet, we used to recited: (O

(...Apostle! Deliver what has been revealed to you -concerning Ali- from your Lord

It is also recorded that Ibn Abbas used to recite: (And Allah sufficed the believers in

(.-fighting –by Ali

These additions are only the revealed interpretation or exegeses of the Verses. It is quite knowable that adding any single letter to the Quranic texts is illicit

:Al-Kafi; ١/٤٢٢

When Amirul Muminin approached, the Prophet (peace be upon him and his... family) addressed at him: “There is a common point between Jesus and you. I anticipate that peoples of my nation will adopt the same statements the Christians ascribed to Jesus, lest I am to describe you so elevatedly that bless shall be sought  
”from the soil on which your feet walk

This saying enraged two Bedouins, Al-Mughira Bin Shuba and a number of .Quraishis. They said: “He chose none other than Jesus to liken to his cousin  
In due course, God revealed: (And when a description of the son of Mariam is ,given, lo! Your people raise a clamor thereat. And they say: Are our gods better or is he? They do not set it forth to you save by way of disputation; nay, they are a ,contentious people. He was naught but a servant on whom We bestowed favor and We made him an example for the children of Israel. And if We please, We (.could make among you –sons of Hashim– angels to be successors in the land

Al-Harith Bin Amr Al-Fihri was so incensed when he said: “O Allah! If the Hashemites’ holding this position successively like Caesars, has been the truth

sent from Thee, then rain us with a heavenly stone or inflict a painful

...chastisement upon us

p: ٤١٢

O Mohammed!" said Al-Harith, "You should give the Quraishis some of what"  
-you are having. The Hashemites seized the entire favors of the Arabs and the non

...Arabs

.Ways of narration and documentation depended by Furat Bin Ibrahim Al-Kufi

:Furat Al-Kufi's Tafsir; ٥٠٣

Al-Hussein... Abu Hureira: On that day in Ghadir Khum, the Prophet... A .١  
,Bedouin stood erect and said... A flame from the heavens burnt that man. Hence

...God revealed: (One demanding

Jafar... Ibn Abbas: Amr Bin Al-Harith Al-Fihri came to the Prophet and .٢

addressed at him, "You have instructed us of performing the prayers and

"?defraying the poor rate, were these precepts originated by your Lord or you

The precepts are my Lord's mandate, my mission is only conveyance," said the"

Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). Then, Amr added, "You have

instructed us to cherish Ali Bin Abi Talib. You maintained that his standing to  
you is as same as Aaron's to Moses, and that his adherents -Shias- shall be riding

branded white she-camels in the yard on the Resurrection Day, and that he shall

approach Kawthar -the Divine Pool- to drink and serve his people. Is this a

”?heavenly foretelling or is it your own contrivance

It is surely the Lord’s telling, that I conveyed. Allah created him and me as‘

.illumination below the Divine Throne,” affirmed the Prophet

Now, it is certain for me that you are a liar!” said Amr, “You are the offspring of“

”?Adam, are you not

Yes, we are,” explained the Prophet, “Twelve thousand years before the creation“

p: ٤١٣

of Adam, the Lord created me as an illumination below the Divine Throne. When

the Lord created Adam, He threw that illumination in his flank. It moved in men’s

flanks till it divided into two parts in the flanks of Abdullah Bin Abdil-Muttelib

and Abu Talib. Hence, my Lord created us from that illumination. But there shall

”.be no prophet after me

Twelve men followed Amr who stood up enraged and said, “O Allah! If

Mohammed has been saying the truth, then cast fire fragments on Amr and his

”.company

Immediately, Amr and his company were thrown with fire fragments, and God

...revealed: (One demanding

Abu Ahmed... Sa’d Bin Abi Waqas: One Friday, the Prophet turned his shining .٤

:face to us and said after he praised and thanked the Lord

On the Resurrection day, I shall be coming out and Ali shall be raising the“

banner of Hamd before me. The flag shall be of two parts; one sarcenet, and one  
".brocaded

A Najdi Bedouin from sons of Jafar Bin Kelab Bin Rabia stood up and addressed  
at the Prophet, "I have been sent for asking you a question. What do you say  
about Ali Bin Abi Talib. People have been engaged in discrepancies respecting  
".him

The Prophet smiled and said, "O Bedouin! Why should people be engaged in  
discrepancy for Ali? Ali's standing to me is as same as my head to my body, and  
".the button to the shirt

.The Bedouin was so irate when he said, "O Mohammed! I am stronger than Ali  
p: ٤١٤

"?How can he raise the banner of Hamd

The Prophet answered, "Slow down, Bedouin! On the Resurrection Day, Ali shall  
be given many characteristics. He shall be given Joseph's beauty, and John's  
temperance, and Job's sufferance, and Adam's altitude, and Gabriel's power. The  
entire creatures shall be under that banner of Hamd he shall raise. The imams and  
the reciters of Quran and the declaratory call to prayers, whom are not decayed in  
".their graves, shall be encircling him

Owing to his rage, the Bedouin said, "O Allah! If Mohammed's words were the  
".truth, then inflict a stone upon me

...God revealed: (One demanding

.Ways of narration and documentation depended by Mohammed Bin Al-Abbas

:Tawilul Ayat; ۲/۷۲۲

Abu Basir: Abu Abdillah (peace be upon him) recited: One demanding ...

demanded the chastisement which must befall. The unbelievers –in Ali’s

leadership– there is none to avert it

”.Then he commented, “In Fatima’s Mus’haf, it is written in this very way

...Abu Basir: Abu Abdillah...

Then he commented, “Gabriel conveyed these very words to the Prophet (peace

).(be upon him and his family

We have already alluded that the statement ‘in Ali’s leadership’ is only an exegesis

or an interpretation. Such statements were added to the Quranic Verses as

:explanations. For instance, It is recorded that Ibn Abbas used to recite and record

.-And Allah sufficed the believers in fighting –by Ali

.Ways of narration and documentation recorded in Jamiul Akhbar

:Biharul Anwar; ۳۳/۱۶۵

Zurara: I heard Imam As-Sadiq recount: When the Prophet (peace be upon ... .۴۲

p: ۴۱۵

– ,him and his family) left Mecca after performing the Farewell Pilgrimage

according to another narration: he was accompanied by twelve thousand Yemenis

:and five thousand from the inhabitants of Al Madina- Gabriel descended and told  
O God's messenger! Allah; the Exalted, greets you. O Prophet! Deliver what has

...been revealed to you from your Lord

O Gabriel!" answered the Prophet, "People have just converted into Islam. I am"

...afraid they will confuse and disobey

".The Prophet said, "O Gabriel! I am afraid my companions will dissent me

On the third day, the Prophet was in a place called Ghadir Khum when Gabriel  
descended carrying God's saying: O Apostle! Deliver what has been revealed to

you from your Lord, and if you do it not, then you have not delivered His

.message, and Allah will protect you from the people

As soon as the Prophet received this saying, he gave the orders of settling in that  
place, and declared that he would not leave it before he would convey the Lord's

.message

People carried the Prophet's orders of establishing a pulpit on which he ascended

and took Ali (peace be upon him) with him. He sermonized so eloquently. He

...said: "O people! I am preceded to your souls, aren't I?" "Yes

,Three days later, the Prophet was sitting when a man from sons of Makhzum

named Omar Bin Utba, (or Harith Bin An-Numan Al-Fihri) came and said: "O

",Mohammed! I am to ask you three questions." "You are to ask as you like

.answered the Prophet

Tell me about the creed that there is no god but Allah, and that Mohammed is“  
”?being the messenger of Allah; is it your or is it your Lord’s mandate  
It has been revealed to me from Allah, and the emissary has been Gabriel, and“  
the declarant is I. I declare only after I receive my Lord’s instruction,” replied the  
.Prophet

Tell me then about the prayer, the poor rate, the pilgrimage and the jihad; are“  
they yours or your Lord’s mandate?” reasked the man, and the Prophet repeated  
.the same reply

Tell me about this man,” said the man as he indicated to Ali Bin Abi Talib“  
,peace be upon him), “and tell me about your saying, ‘He whosever master was I )  
”?Ali shall be his master.’ Is it yours or your Lord’s mandate  
.The Prophet repeated the same reply

The man turned his head upwards and said: “O Allah! If Mohammed has been  
telling the truth, then throw fire fragments upon me.” (According to another  
narration, the man said: “O Allah! If this has been the truth sent from Thee, then  
(”.rain us with a heavenly stone

The man walked few steps when a gloomy cloud covered him. He was  
.instantaneously burnt by its thunderbolt  
...Soon after that, Gabriel descended with God’s saying: (One demanding

You have seen, have you not?" said the Prophet to his companions. "Yes, we" have," answered they. "And you have heard, have you not?" said he. "Yes, we .have," answered they

He then commented: "Pleasure be the outcome of those who accede to him, and

p: ٤١٧

woe is those who oppose. On the Resurrection Day, Ali and his adherents –Shias shall

be wedded to the Paradise on camels from gardens of the Paradise. They

shall be young, crowned and black-eyed. They shall feel no fear and shall not be

grieved. They shall be supported by the great gratification of Allah. That is surely

the principal triumph. They shall reside the yard of sacredness in the vicinity of

the Lord of the worlds. Therein shall be what their souls yearn and their eyes

delight, and they shall abide therein eternally. Angels shall say to them: peace be

”.upon you for your endurance. Excellent is the reward of the abode

Ways of narration and documentation recorded in Al-Bahrani's Madinetul

.Maajiz

–Allama Al-Hilli's Al-Keshkul: Mohammed Bin Ahmed Bin Abdirrahman Al

Bawardi: ...An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith greeted the Prophet and said: "O God's

messenger! You are the master of Adam's offspring, and your brother is the

master of the Arabs, and Fatima; your daughter, is the mistress of women of this

world, and Al-Hassan and Al-Hussein; your sons, are the masters of the young in

the Paradise, and your uncle is the master of the martyrs, and your cousin is the two-winged who shall use his wings in the Paradise, and your uncle is the protector between your eyes, and Sheiba has the custody of the Sacred House of God; what then has been kept for the Quraishis and the Arabs? In the beginning of Islam, you have informed that if we believe in your sayings, we shall enjoy the

p: ٤١٨

same rights you enjoy and we shall submit to the same obligations imposed upon you.

For a considerable while, the Prophet nodded his head down. He then raised the head and said: "It was not I who did this to them. It was surely Allah who did it." "What is my sin then

An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith went away saying: "O Allah! If this has been the truth sent from Thee, then rain us with a heavenly stone or inflict a painful chastisement upon us

Immediately, God revealed: (And they say: If this has been the truth sent from Thee, then rain us with a heavenly stone or inflict a painful chastisement upon us.

The Prophet summoned An-Nadr and recited this Verse before him... The man sought the Prophet's permitting him to leave Al-Madina since he could no longer live there. The Prophet advised him and told that God would grant him well if he

...would become self-possessed and use clemency

The Prophet permitted him. The man went out repeating his same statement. As soon as he left the city, a bird catching a stone came straightly above him and cast that stone. An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith and his pack animal were killed. Hence, God

...revealed: (One demanding

:Narration in Ibn Sahrashub's Al-Menaqib

:Biharul Anwar; ۳۱/۳۲۰

Abu Basir: Imad As-Sadiq (peace be upon him): The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) addressed at Ali: "I anticipate peoples of my nation will adopt the same statements the Christians ascribed to Jesus, lest I am to describe you so

p: ۴۱۹

".elevatedly that bless shall be sought from the soil on which your feet walk

This saying enraged Al-Harith Bin Amr Al-Fihri who said: "He chose none other than Jesus to liken to his cousin. He is about to name him as the next prophet. By

".God, the gods we worshipped were better than him

In due course, God revealed: (And when a description of the sons of

(.Mariam...children of Israel

.The Prophet advised Al-Harith to cease his enmity to Ali Bin Abi Talib

He addressed at the Prophet: "You are God's messenger, and Ali is your successor, and Fatima; your daughter is the mistress of women of this world, and

Al-Hassan and Al-Hussein; your sons, are the masters of the young in the Paradise, and Hamza; your uncle is the master of the martyrs, and Jafar; your cousin is the two-winged who shall use his wings in the Paradise with the angels and Al-Abbas; your uncle, is the waterer; what then has been kept for the ?Quraishis; your brothers

-Woe is you, Harith!" said the Prophet, "It was not I who did so to sons of Abdul" .Muttelib. It was surely Allah who did

Al-Harith said: "O Allah! If this has been the truth sent from Thee, then rain us ".with a heavenly stone or inflict a painful chastisement upon us

(.Hence, God revealed: (Allah was not to chastise them while you are among them

The Prophet summoned Al-Harith and asked him either to show repentance or to leave. He left. In his way, a bird cast a pebble on his head. He was killed. In due

p: ٤٢٠

course, God revealed: (One demanding, demanded the chastisement which must (.befall. The unbelievers -In Ali's leadership- there is not to avert it

.Narration of Ali Bin Ibrahim Al-Qummi

:Al-Qummi's Tafsir; ٢/٣٨٥

:As he explained sura of Maarij, Imam Abul-Hassan (peace be upon him) says

.A man asked about the Prophet's Successors, and the estimation of Qadr night

The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) answered: "You are asking about

a befalling chastisement. It will be followed by disbelief. None shall cease that  
".chastisement when it falls

Further more, there are too many ways of narration and documentation to be wholly  
-mentioned. For students, refer to An-Numan Al-Maghribi's Sharhul Akhbar, Al  
Kerajeki's Kenzul Haqaiq, Shathan Bin Gibril's Al-Fedail, Al-Qummi's book of  
.Tafsir... etc

## **THE RESULT**

### **THE NARRATIVE IS AUTHENTIC, AND THE DIVINE CHASTISEMENT WAS REPEATED**

Two results are attained through looking deep in the narrative pertaining to the  
immediate divine chastisement inflicted upon those who objected against the  
.(leadership of Ali (peace be upon him

First, origin of the narrative is quite authentic according to criteria of hadithists. It is  
impossible for the narrow-minded and the suspicious who allow themselves to say  
that Shias forged such narratives and intrigued them in their reference books; it is  
impossible to accuse Shias of intriguing such narratives in the numerous Sunni  
reference books of hadith that recorded them. Besides, many Sunni master scholars  
.report and adopt such narratives

A fanatical may object that those Sunni master scholars relate these narratives to the  
.(imams of the Prophet's progeny (peace be upon them

We cite, first, that, for Sunnis, the Prophet's progeny enjoy the very standing enjoyed by the master scholars. For instance, a good number of Sunni master scholars, such as Abu Ubeid, Az-Zuhri, Malik, Ahmed et al, relate directly or indirectly to Imam (Al-Baqir and Imam As-Sadiq (peace be upon them

As a matter of fact, Sunnis' sensitivity against the Prophet's progeny's narratives are only shown when Shias are the reporters. While, the Prophet's progeny's narratives recorded by Sunni scholars are quite acceptable and recorded in their reference books of hadith

Secondly, ways of narrating the reports involved are not restricted to the Prophet's progeny. We have already introduced ways of narration depended by Al-Hasakani who relates them to Hutheifa, Abu Huraira and many others

The Second result is that it is impracticable to imply that the entire incidents recorded in the previous narratives were leading to the same. It is quite understandable that there must have been a number of similar incidents. There is a variety in names, sorts of chastisement, place, time and events

As an explanation, it is cited that narratives of Abu Ubeid and Athalabi announce that the incident befell in or in the vicinity of Al-Madina, and the chastisement was a baked stone. Abu Huraira's narratives cites that the objection occurred in the very Ghadir Khum immediately after the Prophet's sermon, and the chastisement was a

blaze sent from the heavens. Other narratives affirm that the chastisement was a  
thunderbolt

.Names are also variant. Some of these names only could be a clerical error

p: ۴۲۲

## SEVENTH QUESTION

### CLAN OF THE BEFALLING CHASTISEMENT

.There is only a number of questions and matters appertained to the topic involved  
One of these questions is the number, names and identities of the objectors after the  
Ghadir incident, and the sort of chastisement inflicted upon them. Another question  
is the influence of the Prophet's declaring his progeny's leadership and imamate, on  
Muslims in general, and the Quraishis in particular. Many matters can be added to  
this question. It is the general ambiance that prevailed during the last two months of  
the Prophet's lifetime, including the Verses and incidents revealed and befallen  
during that period. Among the most remarkable incidents were Ansar's offering to  
allocate one third of their riches for covering disbursement of the Prophet and his  
family. On that occasion, God revealed: (Say: I do not ask of you any reward for it  
but love for my near relatives,) and the Quraishis' sensitivity attained its acme due to  
so. Another incident was the Prophet's deciding to enlist the entire Quraishi  
.celebrities in the army commanded by Usama Bin Zaid; the young African Muslim  
By this step, the Prophet aimed at attracting people's attentions towards the external

front, and empty Al-Madina from the objectors against his family's leadership, so  
.that none would stay there at his decease except Ali and Ansar

A third question is the two activities of assassinating the Prophet after the declaration  
in Ghadir, and the story of coercing the Prophet on having that (medicine) while he  
.was fainted in his final disease

p: ۴۲۳

A fourth question is the third accursed document. According to Shiite reference  
books of hadith, the objectors against Ali's leadership wrote down that document of  
.contracting against the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) in Al-Madina  
Merits of Ghadir day -the eighteenth of Dhu'l-Hijja- and narratives respecting the  
recommendation of fasting and praising God and showing delight on that day, is a  
.topic useful to be introduced detailedly

As a matter of fact, the whole questions are useful topics. Nevertheless, we'd better  
abridge and be content with the earliest which is Quraishi sons of Abdud-Dar. Both  
-sects of Islam testify that God's saying: (One demanding...,) was inflicted upon An  
.Nadr Bin Al-Harith; chief of sons of Abdud-Dar, and Jabir; the son

We also hint at introducing a mature picture for the immense envy carried by the  
.Quraishis against the Prophet and his immaculate progeny

### **'THE OLD ENVY AND THE 'BLOOD LICK**

Societies and provinces of the Arab Peninsula were ruled by tribes. They had no

central government. Struggles, combats and tribal alliances were common. Tribes of

.Quraish were not excluded

-Alliance of 'Fudoul' was the most famed in history. It was established by Abdul

-Muttelib; the Prophet's grandfather. It was also called alliance of 'Muteyyibin

odorizers-' because the parties swore their alliance by immersing their hands in a

.vessel of odor made by daughter of Abdul-Muttelib

The most important terms of that alliance was protecting the Holy Kaba, and

prohibiting sorts of injustice, and supporting the wronged till they recover their

rights. The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) was twenty years old when

p: ۴۲۴

he partook in that alliance. Moreover, some narratives, such as that recorded in

-Ahmed's Al-Musned; ۱/۱۹۰, and decided as authentic by Al-Hakim, in Al

.Mustedrak; ۲/۲۲۰, assert that he passed it after the divine mission

The Prophet said: "I was boy when I witnessed the alliance of 'Muteyyibin' with my

".uncles. I prefer it to having the best kinds of camels

As a matter of fact, this alliance was an answer for another alliance called forth by

sons of Abdud-Dar. Some Quraishi tribes responded and partook in that alliance

which was called the 'blood lick', since the parties swore their alliance by licking the

.blood of a cow slaughtered on that occasion

Different opinions were said about reason and time of these alliances. Some

identified the building of Kaba and the tribes' engagement in discrepancies for nominating the one whose individuals would win the honor of establishing the Black Stone in its place. Others recounted that it was due to the complaining of a seller whom was oppressed by a Quraishi person

The most acceptable narration in this regard is that recorded by Al-Yaqubi who identified the envy carried by sons of Abdud-Dar against Abdul-Muttelib as the reason beyond conclusion of such alliances

:Al-Yaqubi's Tarikh; ١/٢٤٨

As the Quraishis noticed that Abdul-Muttelib had won the whole pride, they demanded with an alliance through which they would attain loftiness. Sons of ...Abdud-Dar were the precedent to this demand. They went to sons of Sahm and ;Sons of Abdu Menaf, Asad, Zuhra, Teim and Al-Harith Bin Fihr odorized

p: ٤٢٥

?-therefore, they were named 'Muteyibin -the odorizers

When sons of Sahm received so, they slaughtered a cow and declared that parties ...would be only those who dip their hands and lick from blood of that cow

:Al-Yaqubi's Tarikh; ٢/١٧

The Prophet was about twenty years old when he attended the alliance of Fudoul'. After his divine mission, he said: "In house of Abdullah Bin Jadan I' attended an alliance. I would surely prefer it to the best sorts of camels. I will

”answer if I am called forth to it

-The Quraishis concluded many alliances of protection and defense. Al Muteyyibun -the odorizers- allied that they would never give up the Holy Kaba .Atika Bint Abdil-Muttelib made a bowl of odor in which they dipped their hands ...They were sons of Abdu Menaf, Asad, Zuhra, Teim and Al-Harith Bin Fihr The Quraishi clans covenanted that a stranger or the like should never be wronged, and each should recover his right. They held the conference of alliance ,in house of Abdullah Bin Jadan At-Teimi. They were sons of Hashim, Asad ...Zuhra, Teim and Al-Harith Bin Fihr

:Ibn Husham’s As-Sira; ١/٨٥

Sons of Asad Bin Abdul-Uzza Bin Qusay, Zuhra Bin Kelab, Teim Bin Murra Bin Kab and Al-Harith Bin Fihr Bin Malik Bin An-Nadr were in the line of sons of ,Abdu Menaf. On the other line stood sons of Makhzum Bin Yaqada Bin Murra Sahm Bin Amr Bin Husseis Bin Kab, Jamh Bin Amr Bin Husseis Bin Kab and .Edi Bin Kab. They backed sons of Abdud-Dar

p: ٤٢٤

-As well as many others, these texts prove that owing to envying sons of Abdul Muttelib, sons of Abdud-Dar concluded such alliance. As sons of Abdul-Muttelib and their allies went on concluding the alliance of Muteyyibin, sons of Abdud-Dar .’and their allies concluded the alliance of ‘blood lick

Sons of Abdul-Muttelib and their allies agreed upon protecting the holy Kaba and supporting the wronged. On the other hand, sons of Abdud-Dar agreed upon confronting the Muteyyibin

### **SONS OF ABDUD-DAR, CARRIERS OF THE QURAISHIS' PENNON**

Historians assert that sons of Abdud-Dar had in heritage Darun-Nidwa, which was the center of the Quraishis' congress where they used to discuss the most important issues and conclude decisions. They also had in heritage the Quraishis' pennon. They were carriers of that pennon during battles

:Al-Belathiri's Fetihul Buldan; ٤٠

Darun-Nidwa was in the hands of sons of Abdud-Dar Bin Qusay till Ikrima Bin Amir Bin Hashim Bin Abd Menaf Bin Abdud-Dar Bin Qusay sold it to Muawiya Bin Abi Sufian who made it a governmental position

Ali (peace be upon him) killed more than ten individuals from the knights of sons of Abdud-Dar who raised the Quraishis' pennon in the face of God's messenger. It is also related that some of those knights were killed by Hamza Bin Abdil-Muttelib

Describing the fervor Abu Sufian and his wife aroused in sons of Abdud-Dar just before the war of Uhud, Ibn Husham, in ٣/٥٨٧, records

Driving carriers of the pennon to fighting, Abu Sufian addressed at them: "O sons of Abdud-Dar! You have carried our pennon during the battle of Badr, and we

suffered what we had suffered. Regularly, people are attacked from the side of their pennons. If this side is defeated, then those people will certainly be beaten

You either give our pennon its due, otherwise leave it to us and we will give its  
".due

Sons of Abdud-Dar became so irate that they threatened Abu Sufian and were

,about to attack him. "What! Should we give our pennon up?" said they

".Tomorrow, when we meet, you shall see our activities"

.As a matter of fact, Abu Sufian wanted nothing more than this

When the two parties were about to meet, Hind Bint Utba; Abu Sufian's wife, led

.her crew who played the drums behind the warriors for driving them to fighting

.Hind praised sons of Abdud-Dar

:Ibn Husham's As-Sira; ۳/۶۵۵

Al-Hejjaj Bin Elat As-Salami composed a number of poetic verses in which he ...

applauded Abul-Hassan Amirul Muminin Ali Bin Abi Talib, for his killing Talha Bin

'Abi Talha Bin Abdud-Uzza Bin Othman Bin Abdud-Dar; carrier of the Quraishis

.pennon during the battle of Uhud

Nine individuals from sons of Abdud-Dar had to carry the Quraishis' pennon during

that battle. Some mention a bigger number. They also aimed at assaulting the

.Prophet after he was left alone when Muslims retreated and ascended the mountain

The Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) and Ali (peace be upon him) stood

.in the face of the Quraishis' attacks that lasted till afternoon

The Prophet fought from his position, while Ali attacked their first lines, and penetrated in the midst of their army that he reached carrier of the pennon to chop his

p: ٤٢٨

.head off. Only then, the attack was stopped to begin anew

Another one from sons of Abdud-Dar took the pennon, and the army attacked the Prophet. Ali met them while he was on his feet and they were horsemen. This custom went on till Ali killed tens of their horsemen and about nine individuals from sons of Abdud-Dar; carriers of the Quraishis' pennon. When they had to withdraw, they

”shouted falsely: “Mohammed is killed

In fact, the Prophet was hit by few injuries, and Ali had more than seventy injuries some of which were somewhat grave. It is related that these injuries were cured .when the Prophet passed his saliva over them

### **SONS OF ABDUD-DAR GIVE A LESSON IN DEFENSE**

Historians record that those courageous sons of Abdud-Dar taught the Quraishis a peculiar lesson in self-defense against the Hashemites. They profited by the .elevation and the noble ethics of the Hashemites

:Ibn Kutheir's As-Sira; ٣/٣٩

Ibn Husham: In the gravest moments of the battle of Uhud, the Prophet sat under

Ansar's pennon and commanded Ali of marching with the pennon. Ali marched ;while he was challenging the other party. The carrier of the Quraishis' pennon Talha Bin Abi Talha challenged. As the two stopped between the two armies, Ali stroke him so heavily that he fell to the ground. Suddenly, Ali left him and came back. "Why did you not kill him?" some asked Ali. "He showed me his anus! I ", pitied him for the relation between us. I also realized that God would kill him

p: ۴۲۹

.Ali answered

On the battle of Siffine, Bistr Bin Artaa used the same practice when Ali (God be pleased to him) was about to kill him. Hence, Ali left him

The anus of Amr Bin Al-As was also shown during the battle of Siffine when Ali knocked him down and was about to kill him. Ali left him. A poet recorded this practice in a number of poetic verses

### **AN-NADR BIN AL-HARITH; CHIEF OF SONS OF ABDUD-DAR**

:Ibn Husham's; ۱/۱۹۵

An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith was one of the Satanic enemies who used to harm the Prophet (peace be upon him). In Hira -in Iraq-, he received tales of the Persian kings. Whenever the Prophet (peace be upon him) led a session in which he reminded people of their Lord and warned against the divine punishment suffered by the foregoing nations, An-Nadr came to the same place and recounted tales of

the Persian kings. He was summoning people to himself claiming having

.harangues better than those said by the Prophet

.Ibn Husham) It was he who pronounced that he would reveal what God revealed)

.Ibn Isaaq) Ibn Abbas identified eight Verses revealed for the sayings of An-Nadr)

Every Verse that referred to atheists' likening the Quran to the bygone myths, was

.a refutation of An-Nadr's false claims

Ibn Husham, in As-Sira; ١/٢٣٩, refers to An-Nadr's accusing the Prophet's sayings

.of being bygone myths

:As-Suyouti's Ad-Durrul Manthour; ٣/١٨١

God's saying, (And when they said: O Allah! If this has been the truth sent...

from Thee, then rain upon us a stone from the heavens or inflicted upon us a

p: ٤٣.

,painful chastisement,) copied the words of An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith. Other Verses

-that accounted more than ten as Atta asserted, were revealed for showing An

...Nadr's words. One of them was God's saying, (One demanding

The same thing is related to Abd Bin Humeid on page ٢٩٧ of part ٥ of the same

.reference book

:In Tafsirul Jalalein; ٥٤٠, As-Suyouti records

An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith received the Persian tales from the books he

merchandised in Hira. He was telling them to people of Mecca for precluding

.them from listening to the Quran

We have already asserted that the Shiite reference books of hadith, as well as a good

many Sunni books, identify Jabir Bin An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith or Al-Harith Al-Fihri

as the one demanded the chastisement which must befall. Depending upon the

narratives related to Ibn Jubeir and Ibn Abbas, most of Sunni reference books

.identify An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith as the demander

-Al-Hakim, in Al-Mustedrak; ٢/٥٠٢, relates a narrative identifying An-Nadr Bin Al

Harith as the one demanded the chastisement, to Sa'eed Bin Jubeir. As-Suyouti, in

.Ad-Durrul Manthour; ٦/٢٤٣, relates it to Ibn Abbas

Relying upon personal study, historians and hadithists mention Jabir; son of An-Nadr

Bin Al-Harith, only in the story of his being killed by a heavenly stone for his

atheism and scorning the Prophet's household (peace be upon them). It is also

probable that the man's news were concealed by those who envied the Prophet's

household. It is understandable through the reference books that the father was

highly worse than the son, since he was one of the Pharaonic enemies whom

p: ٤٣١

confronted the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family). The son might have been

.exceeding the father in antagonizing the Prophet if he had lived

**AN-NADR; A MEMBER OF THE PHARAONIC CONFERENCE AGAINST THE PROPHET**

:Ibn Husham's; ١/١٩١

As Islam extended among the Quraishi tribes in spite of the policy of detention...

-and mistreatments, the Quraishi chiefs held a conference... An-Nadr Bin Al

.Harith was a member in that conference

,They agreed upon summoning the Prophet for negotiations. When he attended

they said: "O Mohammed! We do not know a man drove dishonor to his people

other than you. You have reviled at the forefathers, and slandered the gods, and

criticized the beliefs, and disunited our harmony. You have not excluded any ill

matter. If you mean to make a fortune through this solicitation, we will amass you

from our fortunes and you will be the richest. If you mean to be the master, we

will make you our chief. If you mean to gain kingship, we will select you as our

king. If it was a matter of spooks influence, we may spend our fortunes for

".seeking physicians till you will be cured

The Prophet answered: "Nothing of what you have mentioned is my interest. I did

not convey this matter for your riches, mastery or kingship. It is only that Allah

has sent me for you and revealed to me a book, and ordered me of being your

.foreteller and forewarner. I only conveyed my Lord's messages and advised you

If you admit, then it is your good in this world and the Hereafter. If you do not, I

p: ٤٣٢

...should only wait for Allah's deed. He shall be the judge

:Ibn Husham's; ١/١٩١

Ibn Abbas: ...On that day, the Quraishi celebrities held a meeting. An-Nadr Bin

\*Al-Harith was the representative of sons of Abdud-Dar

### AN-NADR; THE MESSENGER TO THE JEWS

:Ibn Husham's As-Sira; ١/١٩٥

An-Nadr Bin Kilda said: "O people of Quraish! You have been affected by a ... question you lack its answer. When Mohammed was young among you, he was the most true-tongued and the most honest. When you noticed the gray hair on his temple and introduced his affair, you accused him of bewitchment. Nay, by God He is not sorcerer. We have seen the sorcerers, and their puffing and knots. You then accused him of soothsaying. Nay, by God. He is not soothsayer. We have

.The same is recorded in At-Tabari's Tarikh; ٢/٩٨\*

seen the soothsayers and their augury and melodies. You then accused him of being a poet. Nay, by God. He is not poet. We have seen poets and received the entire sorts of poetry. You then accused him of insanity. Nay, by god. He is not insane. We have seen the insane. He does not have any of their confusion or delusion

O people of Quraish! Find yourself a solution. You have been affected by an "ominous matter

They decided to send Aqaba Bin Abi Muit with An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith to the

... \*\*rabins

## THE REGISTRAR OF THE FIRST ACCURSED DOCUMENT

:Ibn Husham's As-Sira; ١/٢٣٤

The Quraishi chiefs agreed upon signing on a document in which they recorded

p: ٤٣٣

'their decisions of precluding to marry or take in marriage any of the Hashemites

individuals, and depriving them of merchandising. This document was written

down in a form of covenant and pledge. It was hanged inside the holy Kaba as

...ascertainment. Its recorder was Mansur Bin Ikrima

...Ibn Husham) It is said that the recorder was An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith)

:Ibn Wadih Al-Yaqubi's Tarikh; ٢/٣١

As Abu Talib was informed of the Quraishis' unanimous intendment to kill the

:Prophet, he declared his defending him through poetic verses. He said

By God, they shall never reach you with their groups

Till I am to be buried under soil

You called me, and you claimed\* advising

You are being true, as you've been the honest

You have offered a belief I do realize

.It is being the best religion among people's

When people of Quraish conceived that they would not have the ability of assassinating the Prophet, and Abu Talib would never give him up, they recorded

that unjust document in which they decided not to merchandise or marry or deal with any of the Hashemites, till they give Mohammed in so that the Quraishis would kill him. Eighty seals were affixed on that document. Mansur Bin Ikrima's hand was paralyzed. He was the writer of that document -People of Quraish detained the Prophet, the Hashemites and sons of Abdul Muttelib in Col of Abu Talib. That was six years after the Prophet's Mission Three years passed, and the Prophet, Abu Talib and Khadija spent all their possessions. They had to suffer harsh poverty and destitution

p: ۴۳۴

Gabriel descended to the Prophet and informed that termites had torn that document entirely except the pieces on which God's name was affixed The Prophet conveyed this news to Abu Talib who, immediately, led the whole group to the Kaba. He was sitting there when people of Quraish encircled him .The same is recorded in Uyounul Athar; ۱/۱۴۲\*\*

In other narratives, 'I realize' is written down instead of 'you claimed'. The\* previous is more suitable to the general sense of the poem, and to Abu Talib's faithfulness. In the Third Volume of our Al-Aqaidul Islamiya, we introduce the .(Quraishis' forgery ascribed falsely to Abu Talib (God be merciful to him Well, Abu Talib," said they, "Is it the proper time for you to recall the covenant" and stop your obstinacy in defending your nephew

O my people,” shouted Abu Talib, “Should you fetch your document so that we may find a solution or an element that reunite our relations.” They responded and brought it. “It is your very covenanted document, is it not?” asked Abu Talib. “Yes, it is,” affirmed they. “Have you proceeded any changes in it?” asked Abu Talib. “No, we did not,” asserted they. “Well,” said Abu Talib, “Mohammed has conveyed to me that his Lord had sent a termite that tore the entire document except the place where God’s name was affixed. What should you promise if this is being true?” “We will stop it,” declared they. “I will give him up so that you may kill him if he has been lying

p: ۴۳۵

suggested Abu Talib. “This is quite fair,” agreed them. When the document was opened, it was found that termite had torn it totally except the place on which God’s name was affixed. “This is nothing but witchery,” shouted the Quraishis, “We have never been more serious in belying him than this current hour

On that day, a great number of people islamized, and the Hashemites and sons of

Abdul-Muttelib went out of that place of detention forever

AN-NADR; SERVED FOOD IN BADR

Previously in the Fifth Discussion, we have provided that An-Nadr was one of those who served food to the army of Quraish during the battle of Badr. The Prophet

\*.reckoned him with the most effective men of Mecca; the Quraishis' capital

### DEMISE OF THE FIRST PHARAONIC DEMANDER

:Ibn Husham's As-Sira; 2/206-7

-The polytheist prisoners were with the Prophet's caravan in their way to Al

Madina. Ali Bin Abi Talib carried the Prophet's orders of killing An-Nadr Bin

\*\*Al-Harith. That was near As-Safra

:Mujamul Buldan; 1/94

Thu Utheil is a place near Al-Madina where An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith was killed by

.the Prophet just after the battle of Badr

Quteila; daughter of An-Nadr, composed a poem in which she eulogized her

.father and applauded the Prophet

:As he listened to her poetry, the Prophet (peace be upon him) pitied her. He said

".Had I already heard her poetry, I would have pardoned her father for her"

It is most abiding that the Prophet hated killing more than anyone else. He killed

only in cases of inescapable necessity. It is enough to say that the entire victims of

p: 436

.his battles and the doctrinal provisions were less than seven hundred individuals

.Hence, the Prophet's movement was the greatest in results and the less in casualties

An-Nadr, as well as his corollary Aqaba Bin Mui't Al-Umawi who possessed a pub

;and an adultery house in Mecca, was nothing but a germ of evil and corruption

.therefore, he was killed by the Prophet

.Refer to Ibn Husham's As-Sira; ٢/٤٨٨, and At-Tabari's Tarikh; ٢/١٤٢\*

Refer to Ibn Husham's As-Sira; ٢/٢٨٦ and ٥٢٧, and At-Tabari's Tarikh; ٢/١٥٧ and\*\*

.٢٨٦

Providing that the narration of An-Nadr's daughter is authentic, it means only that

the Lord would permit the Prophet to pardon that man for his daughter since she

.composed a poetry full with principals and imploring

### **AN-NUDEIR; AN-NADR'S BROTHER AND SUCCESSOR**

Reference books of history assert that others from sons of Abdud-Dar received the

Quraishis' pennon after An-Nadr had been killed. These books have no signal that

An-Nudeir was warrior and horseman like his brother. Although he was not that

'courageous, it seems that An-Nudeir succeeded his brother in carrying the Quraishis

pennon and being chief of sons of Abdud-Dar. The pro-Quraish narrators, as well as

the other historians, describe him as a politician who inclined to peace. They also

reckon him with the Quraishi chiefs listed under the class of 'the inclined hears'. The

Prophet endowed the individuals of that class one hundred camels each from the

.spoils of the battle of Hunein

At-Tabari, in Tarikh; ٢/٣٥٨, narrate that the Prophet gave An-Nudeir Bin Al-Harith

one hundred camels, when he distributed the spoils of the battle of Hunein. The other

\*.Quraishi chiefs, such as Abu Sufian and Muawiya, were given the same

In the fifth discussion, we have referred to An-Nudeir and mentioned that he had a hand with the Quraishi chiefs who plotted for assassinating the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) during the battle of Hunein. Some scholars confused An-Nudeir with his brother

:Ar-Razi's Al-Jarhu Wet Tadid; ٨/٤٧٢

An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith Bin Kilda is one of those who islamized after conquest of Mecca. He is also called An-Nudeir. This is more accurate. An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith was his atheist brother who was killed

**FOR THE PRO-QURAISH NARRATORS; AN-NADR WAS MUSLIM, IMMIGRATOR AND MARTYR**

As usual, the Pro-Quraish narrators made that Annudeir -or Alharith- that Islamic personality who immigrated and was martyred during the battle of Yarmuk. It seems that the entire Quraishi people whom were killed by the plague of Amwas; such as Suheil Bin Amr and sons of Abdud-Dar, were reckoned with the martyrs of the battle of Yarmuk

:As-Samani's Al-Ansab; ٣/١١٠

An-Nudeir Bin Al-Harith was one of the immigrants. He was one of the most remarkable self-possessed men of Quraish. He was martyred in the battle of Yarmuk. His brother is An-Nadr Bin Al-Harith whom was killed by Ali Bin Abi

:Talib just after the battle of Badr. He was the demander intended in God's saying

...One demanding)

.Besides many other books, the same is recorded in Ikmalul Kemal; ١/٣٢٧

## **DID AN-NUDEIR FOLLOW HIS BROTHER AND NEPHEW IN OBJECTING AGAINST THE ?PROPHET**

Refer to Ibn Husham's As-Sira; ٤/ ٩٢٩, and Ibn Kutheir's; ٣/٦٨٢, and Al-Yaqubi's\*

p: ٤٣٨

.Tarikh et al

The Shiite reference books of hadith narrate a strange dispute with the Prophet (peace be upon him and his family) in Al-Madina. The other party was An-Nadr Bin)

Al-Harith Al-Fihri. It seems that clerical errors occurred for the words. Providing that the party was An-Nudeir, the incident must have occurred in Al-Madina after the Farewell Pilgrimage

:Al-Bahrani's Madinetul Maajiz; ٢/٢٤٧

Al-Nadr Bin Al-Harith greeted the Prophet and said: "O God's messenger ...

You are the master of Adam's offspring, and your brother is the master of the -Arabs, and Fatima; your daughter, is the mistress of women of this world, and Al ,Hassan and Al-Hussein; your sons, are the masters of the young in the Paradise and your uncle is the master of the martyrs, and your cousin is the two-winged who shall use his wings in the Paradise, and your uncle is the protector between

your eyes, and Sheiba has the custody -of the Sacred House of God-; what then has been kept for the Quraishis and the Arabs? In the beginning of Islam, you have informed that if we believe in your sayings, we shall enjoy the same rights .you enjoy, and we shall submit to the same obligations imposed upon you

For a considerable while, the Prophet nodded his head down. He then raised the head and said: "It was not I who did this to them. It was surely Allah who did "What is my sin then

,An-Nadr went away saying: "O Allah! If this has been the truth sent from Thee

p: ۴۳۹

".then rain us with a heavenly stone or inflict a painful chastisement upon us Immediately, God revealed: (And they say: If this has been the truth sent from (.Thee, then rain us with a heavenly stone or inflict a painful chastisement upon us

The Prophet summoned An-Nadr and recited this Verse before him... The man sought the Prophet's permitting him to leave Al-Madina since he could no longer live there. The Prophet advised him and told that God would grant him well if he ...would become self-possessed and use clemency

The Prophet permitted him. The man went out repeating his same statement. As soon as he left the city, a bird catching a stone came straightly above him and cast that stone. An-Nadr and his pack animal were killed. Hence, God revealed: (One ...demanding

-On page ٤٨٨ of part ٢ of As-Sira, Ibn Husham avers that An-Nudeir is called Al

Harith, too. Al-Yaqubi, in Tarikh; ٢/٤٣, names him Al-Harith Bin Al-Harith Bin

;Kilda. This is a suspicious matter. The noble tribes revered the fathers' names

therefore they neither changed it nor did they add anything to it. Hence, it is strange

.to notice that a man had two names one of which was his father's

This may lead to the probability that they had a third brother named Al-Harith. This

might have been the very person whom were cast by a heavenly thunderbolt or stone

because he objected against the Prophet's declaring the leadership of Ali and his

.sons

In due course, the befalling chastisement was inflicted upon three individuals of this

p: ٤٤٠

-family; the father in the battle of Badr, and Jabir, as Abu Ubeid asserts, and Al

.Harith. Hence, they should be called the family of the befalling chastisement

It is also likely that An-Nudeir -or Al-Harith- who objected, was not killed by that

.befalling chastisement, since some historians mention Syria as the place of his death

At any rate, the most ascertained matter is that there was a man who objected

against

the Prophet. Athalabi, together with some Shias, asserts that a heavenly stone was

.inflicted upon Al-Harith Bin An-Numan Al-Fihri

In the narrations recorded in Al-Hasakani's, Al-Kafi and Al-Menaqib, the name of

.Al-Harith Bin Amr Al-Fihri is cited

This is the name of another man. In As-Sira; ٢/٤٩٩, Ibn Kutheir refers to a man named Amir Bin Al-Harith Al-Fihri. Others name him Amr. The entire scholars could not provide any further information

This proves that Al-Harith upon whom the heavenly stone was inflicted is different from that son of Abdud-Dar. It is also proved that another heavenly stone was inflicted upon Jabir Bin An-Nadr Al-Abdari, whom is mentioned in Abu Ubeid's narration

### **THE TWO –OR MORE– MOST LICENTIOUS OF QURAISH**

Reference books of hadith verify that the most evil Quraishi tribes, that harmed the -Prophet (peace be upon him and his family), were the Umayyids and sons of Al Mughira. It is the clan of Abu Jahl Bin Makhzum. They are described as the two most licentious. We should add sons of Abdud-Dar to them. In fact, when the Hashemites and few others are excluded, it becomes arduous to distinguish the other

p: ٤٤١

.Quraishis

:As-Suyouti's Ad-Durrul Manthour; ٤/٨٥

As he recited God's saying, (Have you not seen those who have changed Allah's favor for ungratefulness,) Omar Bin Al-Khattaab stated: "They are the two most licentious houses of Quraish; sons of Umayya and sons of Al-Mughira. Concerning

the latter, you have completed with them on the battle of Badr. As to sons of

”Umayya, they are respited for a term

This seems to be a prophetic statement repeated by Omar. This obliges him to answer the following question: What for did he assign Muawiya; the Umayid, as the governor of Syria, and allow him to behave completely freely? What for did he arrange the coming caliphate in a way enabled Othman’s relative; the Umayid, to have the veto? Owing to so, the Islamic state was completely served to the most

!!licentious house of Quraish

## REFERENCES

### THE MOST IMPORTANT REFERENCES

.The Holy Quran

(Ad-Durrul Manthour. As-Suyouti; Jalaluddin. (...-٩١١)

.Al-Adabul Mufrad. Al-Bukhari

(Al-Amali. Sharif Al-Murteda. (...-٤٣٦)

(Al-Arbaune Hadithen. Muntajabuddin Bin Babawayih. (Sixth century

(Al-Bidaya Wennihaya. Ad-Dimeshqi; Ibn Kutheir. (...-٧٧٤)

(Al-Ein. Al-Ferahidi; Al-Khalil. (...-١٧٥)

(Al-Ghadir. Al-Amini; Sheik Abdul-Hussein. (...-١٣٩٠)

(Al-Gheiba. An-Numani; Mohammed Bin Ibrahim. (...-٣٨٠)

(Al-Hidaya. Sheik As-Saduq. (...-٣٨١)

- (Al-Idah. An-Nisapuri; Al-Fadl Bin Shathan Al-Azdi. (...-٢٤٠
- (Al-Imametu Wet Tabsira. Al-Qummi; Ibn Babawayih. (...-٣٢٩
- (Al-Iqdul Farid. Al-Andalusi; Ibn Abd Rebbih. (...-٣٢٨
- (Al-Itqan Fi Uloumil Qur'an. As-Suyouti (...-٩١١
- (Al-Jarhu Wet Tadil. Ar-Razi; Abdurrahman. (...-٢٥٦
- (Al-Jawahirul Hisan. Athaalibi. (...-٨٧٥
- (Al-Kafi. Al-Kuleini; Mohammed Bin Yaqub. (...-٣٢٩
- (Al-Kamilu Fit Tarikh. Ibnul Athir. (...-٦٣٠
- (Al-Khisal. Sheik As-Saduq. (...-٣٨١
- (Al-Mabsut. As-Serekhsi; Shamsuddin. (...-٤٨٣
- (Al-Majmu. An-Nawawi; Muhyiddin Bin Sharaf. (...-٦٧٦
- p: ٤٤٢
- (Al-Majruhin. At-Tamimi; Mohammed Bin Hebban. (...-٣٥٤
- (Al-Meghazi. Bin Waqid; Mohammed Bin Omar. (...-٢٠٧
- (Al-Mughni. Bin Qudama; Abdullah. (...-٦٢٠
- (Al-Muhabber. Al-Baghdadi; Mohammed Bin Habib. (...-٢٤٥
- (Al-Muhella. Al-Andalusi; Ibn Hazm. (...-٤٥٦
- (Al-Mujamul Kabir. At-Tabarani. (...-٣٦٠
- (Al-Muqannaa. Sheik Al-Mufid. (...-٤١٣
- (Al-Musannaf. As-Sanaani; Abdurrezaq. (...-٢١١

(Al-Musannaf. Ibn Abi Sheiba. (...-۲۳۵

(Al-Musnad. Imam Ahmed Bin Hanbal. (...-۲۴۱

(Al-Musratrafu Fi Kulli Fennin Mustadhraf. Al-Abshihi; Abul Fetih. (...-۸۵۰

(Al-Mustedrak. An-Nisapuri; Al-Hakim. (...-۴۰۵

(Al-Mustershid. At-Tabari; Mohammed Bin Jarir. (...-۴۰۰

(Al-Muwetta. Imam Malik Bin Anas. (...-۱۷۹

(Al-Umm. Imam Ashafii. (...-۲۰۴

(Alamuddin Fi Sifatil Muminin. Ad-Deilami; Al-Hasan. (Eighth century

(Alihtijaj. At-Tebirsi (...-۵۴۸

(Alintisar. Sharif Al-Murteda. (...-۴۳۶

.Alitiqadat. Sheik As-Saduq

.An-Nihaya. Ibnul Athir

(Ar-Rawdul Enif. As-Suheili. (...-۵۸۱

(Aridetul Ahwathi FI Sharhi Sahihit Tirmithi. Al-Maliki; Ibnul Arabi. (...-۵۴۳

.As-Sawaiqul Muhriqa. Al-Heithami; Ibn Hajar

(As-Sihah. Al-Jawhari. (...-۳۹۳

(As-Sira. Al-Himyari; Ibn Husham. (...-۲۱۸

(As-Siratul Musteqim. Al-Beyadhi; Al-Amili An-Nibati. (...-۸۷۷

.As-Siretul Halabiya. Al-Halabi; Ali Bin Burhanuddin Ashafii

(As-Siretun Nabawiya. Ad-Dimeshq; Ibn Kutheir. (...-۷۷۴

(As-Sunanul Kubra. Al-Beihaqi; Ahmed Bin Al-Husein. (...-٤٥٨

(Asbabun Nuzoul. As-Suyouti. (...-٩١١)

(Ashafi. Sharif Al-Murteda. (...-٤٣٦

.Ashifa Fi Tarifi Huqouqil Mustefa. Eyadh

(At-Tabaqat. Ibn Sa'd. (...-٢٣٠

.At-Tafsirul Kabir. Ar-Razi; Al-Fakhr

(At-Tafsirul Waseet. An-Nisapuri; Ali Bin Ahmed Al-Waqidi. (...-٤٦٨

(At-Tarhib Wet Tarhib. Al-Munthiri. (...-٦٥٦

(At-Tarikh Al-Kabir. Al-Bukhari; Mohammed Bin Ismail. (...-٢٥٦

.At-Tawhid. Sheik As-Saduq

(At-Tesihil Ila Uloumit Tanzil. Ibn Jezi. (...-٧٤١

(At-Tuhfetul Latifa. As-Sekhawi. (...-٩٠٢

.Basairud Darajat. Al-Qummi; Al-Hasan As-Saffar

(Biharul Anwar. Allama Al-Majlisi. (...-١١١١)

(Daailul Islam. Al-Maghribi; An-Numan. (...-٣٦٣

.Delailul Imama . At-Tabari; Mohammed Bin Jarir Bin Rustum

(Delailun Nubuwa. Al-Beihaqi. (...-٤٥٨

.Dictionary of the Holy Book

(Fetihul Bari Fi Sharhil Bukhari. Ibn Hajar. (...-٨٥٢

(Fetihul Melikil Ali. Al-Maghribi; Ibnus Siddiq. (...-١٣٨٠

(Fetihul Qadir. Ashawkani. (...-۱۲۵۰

(Firdawsul Akhbar. Ad-Deilami; Ibn Shirawayih. (...-۵۰۹

(Futuhul Buldan. Al-Belathiri; Ahmed Bin Yahya. (...-۳۷۵

.Ghawalil Laalil Aziziya Fil Ahadithid Diniya. Al-Ihsai; Ibn Abi Jumhur

(Ghayetul Meram. Al-Bahrani; Sayyid Hashim. (...-۱۱۰۷

(Hayatul Hayawanil Kubra. Ad-Demiri. (...-۸۰۸

(Hilyetul Abrar. Al-Bahrani; Sayyid Hashim. (...-۱۱۰۷

.Ihaqaqul Haqq. Al-Marashi; Sayyid Nurullah At-Tusturi

(Ikmalul Kemal. Ibn Makula. (...-۴۷۵

.Ilamul Wara. Sheik At-Tebirsi

(Ilelush Sharaii. Sheik As-Saduq. (...-۳۸۱

Irshadus Sari Li Sharhi Sahihil Bukhari. Al-Qastalani; Shihabuddin Ahmed Bin

(Mohammed. (...-۹۲۳

(Kemaluddin. Sheik As-Saduq. (...-۳۸۱

(Kenzul Ummal. Al-Hindi; Al-Mutteqi. (...-۹۷۵

(Keshful Ghumma. Al-Arbeli. (...-۶۹۳

(Khulasetu Abaqatil Anwar. Al-Huseini; Sayyid Hamid. (...-۱۳۰۶

(Kifayetul Athar. Al-Qummi; Al-Khezzaz. (...-۴۰۰

(Lisanul Mizan. Al-Asqalani; Ibn Hajar. (...-۵۸۲

- (Maalimul Fiten. Ayub; Sa'eed. (...-۱۴۱۸
- (Maalimut Tanzil. Al-Baghawi; Al-Ferra. (...-۵۱۶
- (Maanil Akhbar. Sheik As-Saduq. (...-۳۸۱
- .Maasatuz Zahra. Al-Amili; Sayyid Jafar Murteda
- (Madinetul Maajiz. Al-Bahrani; Sayyid Hashim. (...-۱۱۰۷
- (Majmaul Bahrain. Sheik At-Tureihi. (...-۱۰۸۵
- (Majmauzzawaid. Al-heithami; Nuruddin. (...-۸۰۷
- (Masabihus Sunna. Al-Baghawi. (...-۵۱۶
- (Men La Yahduruhul Faqih. Sheik As-Saduq. (...-۳۸۱
- (Menaqibu Aali Abi Talib. Ibn Shahrashub. (...-۵۸۸
- (Menaqibu Amiril Muminin. Al-Kufi; Mohammed Bin Suleiman. (...-۲۷۰
- (Mizanilitidal. At-Thehbi; Shamsuddin. (...-۷۴۸
- (Muhaderatul Udeba. Alisfahani; Ar-Raghib. (...-۴۲۵
- .Mujamu Ahadithil Imamil Mahdi. Al-Kurani; Ali
- (Mujamul Buldan. Al-Hamawi; Yaqut. (...-۶۲۶
- (Mukhtasaru Tarikhi Dimeshq. Ibn Mandur. (...-۷۱۱
- (Murujut Theheb. Al-Masudi; Ali Bin Al-Husein. (...-۳۴۶
- (Mustedrakul Wassail. An-Nuri. (...-۱۳۲۰
- .Nafahatul Azhar. Al-Milani; Sayyid Ali
- (Nafhuttib At-Telemsani; Ahmed Bin Mohammed Al-Miqerri. (...-۱۰۴۱

.Nahjul Balagha. Imam Ali's words. Explained by: Sheik Mohammed Abduh

(Nahjul Haqq. Allama Al-Hilli. (...-٧٢٩

(Nihayetul Areb. An-Nuweiri; Ahmed Bin Abdil-Wehhab. (...-٧٣٣

Nurul Absar Fi Menaqibi Aali Beitin Nebiyil Mukhtar. Ashebelnejj; Mumin Bin

.Hasan

(Rawdetul Waidin. An-Nisapuri; Al-Fettal. (...-٥٠٨

p: ٤٤٤

(Resailul Murteda. Sharif Al-Murteda. (...-٤٣٩

(Sahih Al-Bukhari. Al-Bukhari; Mohammed Bin Islamil. (...-٢٥٩

(Sahih Muslim. An-Nisapuri; Muslim Bin Al-Hejjaj. (...-٢٦١

.Salseletul Ahidithihis Sahiha. Al-Albani; Mohammed Nasiruddin

.Salseletul Ahidithis Sahiha. Al-Albani; Mohammed Nasiruddin

(Sharhu Muslim. An-Nawawi. (...-٩٧٩

(Sharhu Nahjil Balagha. Ibn Abil Hadid. (Seventh century

(Sharhul Akhbar. Al-Maghribi. (...-٢٧٣

(Shawahidut Tanzil. Al-Hasakani; Al-Hakim An-Nisapuri. (Fifth century

(Shiebul Iman. Al-Beihaqi. (...-٤٥٨

(Siyeru Alamin Nubela. At-Thehbi; Shamsuddin. (...-٧٤٨

(Sunanu Abi Dawud. As-Sejistani; Suleiman Bin Al-Ashath. (...-٢٧٥

(Sunanu Ibn Madga. Al-Qizwini; Mohammed Bin Yazid. (...-٢٧٥

- (Sunanu Sa'eed Bin Mansur. Al-mekki; Sa'eed Bin Mansur Bin Shuba. (...-۲۲۷
- (Sunanud Darimi. Ad-Darimi; Abdullah Bin Bahram. (...-۲۵۵
- (Sunanun Nisai. An-Nisai; Ahmed Bin Shueib. (...-۲۰۳
- (Sunanut Tirmithi. At-Tirmithi; Mohammed Bin Isa. (...-۲۷۹
- (Tabaqatul Henabila. Abu Yali. (Fifth century
- (Tabaqatush Shafiyetil Kubra. As-Sebki; Abdul-Wehhab. (...-۷۷۱
- (Tafsir Ibn Kutheir. Ad-Dimeshq; Ibn Kutheir. (...-۷۷۴
- (Tafsiru Furat. Al-Kufi; Furat Bin Ibrahim. (...-۳۰۰
- (Tafsiru Nourut Thaqalein. Sheik Al-Huweizi. (...-۱۱۱۲
- (Tafsirul Eyashi. As-Salami; Mohammed Bin Eyash. (...-۳۱۰
- .Tafsirul Jalalein. Al-Muhella and As-Suyouti
- (Tafsirul Keshaf. Az-Zemekhshari; Jadullah. (...-۵۲۸
- (Tafsirul Menar. Sheik Mohammed Abduh and Sheik Rashid Rida. (...-۱۳۵۴
- .Tafsirul Mizan. At-Tabatabai; Sayyid Mohammed Husein
- (Tafsirul Muraghi. Al-Muraghi. (...-۱۳۷۰
- (Tafsirul Qummi Al-Qummi; Ali Bin Ibrahim. (...-۳۲۹
- (Tafsirul Qurtubi. Al-Qurtubi. (...-۶۷۱
- (Tafsirus Sanani. As-Sanani; Abdurrezaq. (...-۲۱۱
- (Tafsirut Tabari. At-Tabari; Mohammed Bin Jarir. (...-۳۱۰
- (Tafsirut Tibian. Sheik At-Tusi. (...-۴۶۰

(Tahdibul Ahkam. Sheik At-Tusi. (...-٤٦٠

(Tahdibul Kemal. Al-Mezi; Yousuf. (...-٧٤٢

(Tahdibut Tahdib. Al-Asqalani; Ibn Hajar. (...-٥٨٢

(Tajilul Manfaa. Al-Asqalani; Ibn Hajar. (...-٥٨٢

(Tajul Arous Fi Sharhil Qamus. Az-Zubeidi; Sayyid Mohammed. (...-١٢٠٥

(Tanzihul Anbia. Sayyid Al-Murteda. (...-٤٣٦

(Tarikh Al-Yaqubi. Al-Yaqubi; Ahmed Bin Wadih. (...-٢٨٤

(Tarikh At-Tabari. At-Tabari; Mohammed Bin Jarir. (...-٣١٠

p: ٤٤٥

(Tarikh Baghdad. Al-Baghdadi; Al-Khatib. (...-٤٦٣

(Tarikh Ibn Khuldoun. Ibn Khuldoun; Abdurrahman. (...-٨٠٨

(Tarikh. Ad-Dimeshqi; Abul Fida. (...-٧٣٢

(Tarikhul Khulefa. As-Suyouti; Jalaluddin. (...-٩١١

(Tarikhul Madinetil Munawara. An-Numeir; Omar Bin Sheba. (...-٢٦٢

(Tawilul Ayat. Al-Husseini; Sharafuddin. (Tenth century

(Tedkiretul Huffaz. At-Thehbi; Shamsuddin. (...-٧٤٨

(Tedkiretul Khawass. Al-Hafani; Sibte Al-Jawzi. (...-٦٥٤

.The New Testament

.The Old Testament

(Tuheful Uqoul. Al-Harrani; Ibn Shuba. (Fourth century

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

..... INTRODUCTION

PRELIMINARY DISCUSSION FOR THE EXEGESIS OF THE VERSE OF

‘ISMA‘

..... SUMMARY OF THE THREE VERSES OF GHADIR

FIRST DISCUSSION: THE PROPHET’S SUCCESSION IS A SUBJECT

..... PROVIDED DURING HIS LIFETIME

SECOND DISCUSSION: THE PROPHET FORETELLS OF THE TWELVE

..... SUCCEEDING IMAMS

First: Is (All shall be from my household), the origin of the statement (All shall

.....)?(be from Quraish

Second: The divine promise of unknown leadership is an impracticable

.....matter

.....Third: From Quraish, but from the Prophet’s progeny

- .....Fourth: Prophetic texts explain the narrative of the twelve men
- .....Fifth: Twelve imams and twelve months
- .....Sixth: Jabir As-Siwai; reporter of the narration
- .....Seventh: Marks of authenticity given to the three narratives
- .....Eighth: Contradiction of contexts of the three narrations
- Ninth: The twelve imams are not nominated according to means of election and  
.....declaration of fealty
- ..Tenth: The narrative's dedication to Quraish has been thrown away by Omar
- .....Eleventh: Exegesists' blundering in explaining the twelve imams

p: ۴۴۶

..Twelfth: Models of our narratives respecting the twelve imams

THIRD DISCUSSION: THE ISLAMIC PRINCIPALS IN THE SERMONS OF

..... THE FAREWELL PILGRIMAGE

.....FIRST BASE: THE HUMANITARIAN EQUITY

MODELS OF THE PROPHET'S SERMONS IN THE FAREWELL

..... PILGRIMAGE

..... SECOND BASE: UNITY OF THE ISLAMIC NATION

- THE THIRD BASE: BASE OF THE UNITY OF THE ISLAMIC LAW

..... SHARIA- AND THE MUSLIMS' CULTURE

THE FOURTH BASE: PRINCIPALS OF THE POLITICAL AFFAIRS, AND

..... THE NEXT LEADERSHIP

THE FIFTH BASE: PUNITION OF THE DISSIDENTS OF THE PROPHET'S

..... INSTRUCTION OF ADHERING TO HIS HOUSEHOLD

FOURTH DISCUSSION: THE PROPHETS' NEED FOR PEOPLE'S

..... PROTECTION DURING CONVEYING THEIR MISSIONS

..... QURANIC SENSE OF CONVEYANCE

..... MISSION OF OUR PROPHET IN CONVEYANCE

FIFTH DISCUSSION: THE QURAISHIS ARE THE REASON BEYOND THE

..... PROPHET'S NEED FOR AN ADDITIONAL PROTECTION

..... QURAISH IS THE ROOT OF VILLAINS

..... CLANS OF QURAISH

. CONCEPT OF MECCA CONQUEST BEWILDERS THE JURISPRUDENTS

..... THE QURAISHIS AFTER THE CONQUEST OF MECCA

.... THE QURAISHIS EMBRACE THE LEADERSHIP OF SUHEIL BIN AMR

..... SUHEIL WORKS FOR INDEPENDENCE

..... CONSEQUENCE OF THE INCIDENT

..... OMAR ATTESTS THE QURAISHIS' TERGIVERSATION

CHAPTER TWO: VERSE OF ISMA

..... ORDER OF THE VERSE

..... LOCATION OF THE VERSE

..... THE SUNNI SCHOLARS' OPINIONS

..... First opinion

..... ASHAFII'S INDIRECT REPORTS

..... THE INDIRECT REPORTS ARE ESTIMABLE OPINIONS

..... Second opinion

..... The third opinion

..... The fourth opinion

..... The fifth opinion

..... The sixth opinion

..... Concordant to the Prophet's progeny's

..... WAHABISTS AND HADITH OF GHADIR

..... THE PROPHET'S PROGENY'S OPINION

p: ۴۴۷

GENERAL REMARKS REGARDING THE OTHER OPINIONS

..... First Remark

..... Second Remark

..... Third Remark

EVALUATION OF THE OPPOSING OPINIONS

First Question: The Matter To Be Delivered

.....  
..... Second Question: Confirmation Of The Case And Its Conditions

..... Third Question: Sort Of The Prophet's Fear

..... 'Fourth Question: The Interpretation Of 'People

..... Fifth Question: Meaning Of Protection Against People

..... QUESTIONS INVOLVING THE VERSE

..... First Question: Using The Verse As A Weapon Against Ali

.Second Question: The Verse Refutes The Claim Of The Prophet's Bewitchment

### CHAPTER THREE: STORY OF GHADIR

..... THE QURAIISHIS IN THE FAREWELL PILGRIMAGE

..... RESULTS OF THE FAREWELL PILGRIMAGE

FROM THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH, THE REVELATION AND THE

..... QURAIISHIS PRESSURES THE PROPHET

..... THE PROPHET'S CARAVAN IS STOPPED BY THE REVELATION

..... !?WHAT FOR WAS IT AL-JUHAFI AND GHADIR KHUM

THE PROPHETIC WORDING ACHIEVES THE AIMS AND UNVEILS THE

..... QURAIISHIS

### CHAPTER FOUR: VERSE OF IKMALUDDIN

..... THE FINAL QURANIC VERSE

..... SURAH MAIDA IS THE FINAL QURANIC CHAPTER

..... THE PROPHET'S PROGENY'S OPINION

SUNNI NARRATIVES CONCORDANT TO THE PROPHET'S PROGENY'S

..... OPINION

..... THE CONTRADICTIONARY OPINIONS

..... ORIGINATION OF THIS CONTRADICTIONARY OPINIONS

..... INDICATION OF THE TWO STORIES

..... OTHER OPINIONS

..... VERSE OF IKMALUDDIN

..... VERSE OF IKMALUDDIN AND THE FORBIDDEN MEAT

MEANINGS OF PERFECTION AND COMPLETION THROUGH THE

..... QURAN AND NAHJUL BALAGHA

..... First: The Prophet's progeny's opinion

..... Second: Sunnis' Opinion concordant to the Prophet's progeny's

..... Third: Omar's Opinion

..... THE OBJECTIVE PERSPECTIVE

..... CHAPTER FIVE: VERSE OF MAARIJ

p: ۴۴۸

..... EVENTS STIMULATED BY THE QURAIISHIS

..... THE QURAIISHIS' NEW PREPARATIONS AFTER THE GHADIR DAY

..... HEAVENLY STONES FOR THE QURAIISHIS' SPOKESMEN

FIRST QUESTION: THE SUNNI REFERENCE BOOKS OF HADITH

..... RECORD THE INCIDENT

SECOND QUESTION: WAS SURA OF MAARIJ REVEALED IN MECCA

..... OR AL-MADINA

THIRD QUESTION: THE CHASTISEMENT IS MUNDANE OR

..... HEREAFTER

FOURTH QUESTION: THE SUNNIS' JUDGMENT ON THE

.....NARRATIVES

..... MODELS OF THE SUNNIS' EXEGESES

FIFTH QUESTION: THE NASSIBITES' JUDGMENT ON THE

.....NARRATIVE

SIXTH QUESTION: WAYS OF NARRATION AND DOCUMENTATION OF

.....THE NARRATIVE

First: Ways of narration and documentation depended by the Sunni reference

.books of hadith

First way: Abu Ubeid's narrative recorded in his Gharibul

.....Qur'an

.....Second way: Athalabi's relation to Sufian Bin Uyeina

.....Al-Hasakani's two ways of relation to Sufian Bin Uyeina

.....Third way: Al-Hasakani's relation to Jabir Al-Jufi

-Fourth way: Al-Hasakani's relation to Hutheifa Bin Al

.....Yeman

.....Fifth way: Al-Hasakani's relation to Abu Hureira

Second: Ways of narration and documentation depended by the Shiite reference

.books of hadith and related to Sufian Bin Uyeina

Ways of narration and documentation depended by Furat Al-Kufi and related

.....to Sufian Bin Uyeina

Ways of narration and documentation depended by Mohammed Bin Al-Abbas

.....and related to Sufian Bin Uyeina

Ways of narration and documentation depended by Asharif Al-Murteda and

.....related to Sufian Bin Uyeina

Ways of narration and documentation depended by Muntajabuddin Ar-Razi

.....and related to Sufian Bin Uyeina

Ways of narration and documentation depended by At-Tebirsi and related to

.....Sufian Bin Uyeina

Third: The other ways of narration and documentation depended by the Shiite

p: ۴۴۹

.reference books of hadith

-Ways of narration and documentation depended by Mohammed Bin Yaqub Al

.....Kuleini

-Ways of narration and documentation depended by Furat Bin Ibrahim Al

.....Kufi

...Ways of narration and documentation depended by Mohammed Bin Al-Abbas

.....Ways of narration and documentation recorded in Jamiul Akhbar

Ways of narration and documentation recorded in Al-Bahrani's Madinetul

.....Maajiz

.....Narration in Ibn Sahrashub's Al-Menaqib

.....Narration of Ali Bin Ibrahim Al-Qummi

THE RESULT: THE NARRATIVE IS AUTHENTIC, AND THE DIVINE

.....CHASTISEMENT WAS REPEATED

.....SEVENTH QUESTION: CLAN OF THE BEFALLING CHASTISEMENT

.....'THE OLD ENVY AND THE 'BLOOD LICK

...SONS OF ABDUD-DAR, CARRIERS OF THE QURAISHIS' PENNON

.....SONS OF ABDUD-DAR GIVE A LESSON IN DEFENSE

AN-NADR; A MEMBER OF THE PHARAONIC CONFERENCE AGAINST

.....THE PROPHET

.....AN-NADR; THE MESSENGER TO THE JEWS

.....THE REGISTRAR OF THE FIRST ACCURSED DOCUMENT

.....AN-NADR; SERVED FOOD IN BADR

.....DEMISE OF THE FIRST PHARAONIC DEMANDER

.....AN-NUDEIR; AN-NADR'S BROTHER AND SUCCESSOR

,FOR THE PRO-QURAISHI NARRATORS; AN-NADR WAS MUSLIM

.....IMMIGRATOR AND MARTYR

DID AN-NUDEIR FOLLOWED HIS BROTHER AND NEPHEW IN

.....?OBJECTING AGAINST THE PROPHET

.....THE TWO -OR MORE- MOST LICENTIOUS OF QURAISH

### About center

In the name of Allah

هَلِيسْتَوِيَالَّذِيَتَعْلَمُونَوَالَّذِيَتَلَايَعْلَمُونَ

?Are those who know equal to those who do not know

al-Zumar: ٩

:Introduction

Ghaemiyeh Computer Research Institute of Isfahan, from ٢٠٠٧, under the authority of Ayatollah Haj SayyedHasanFaqihImami (God blesses his soul), by sincere and daily efforts of university and seminary elites and sophisticated groups began its activities .in religious, cultural and scientific fields

:Manifesto

Ghaemiyeh Computer Research Institute of Isfahan in order to facilitate and accelerate the accessibility of researchers to the books and tools of research, in the field of Islamic science, and regarding the multiplicity and dispersion of active centers in this field and numerous and inaccessible sources by a mere scientific intention and far from any kind of social, political, tribal and personal prejudices and currents, based on performing a project in the shape of (management of produced and published works from all Shia centers) tries to provide a rich and free collection of books and research

papers for the experts, and helpful contents and discussions for the educated generation and all classes of people interested in reading, with various formats in the .cyberspace

:Our Goals are

(propagating the culture and teachings of Thaqalayn (Quran and Ahlulbayt p.b.u.t-  
encouraging the populace particularly the youth in investigating the religious issues-  
replacing useful contents with useless ones in the cellphones, tablets and computers-  
providing services for seminary and university researchers-  
spreading culture study in the public-  
paving the way for the publications and authors to digitize their works-

:Policies

acting according to the legal licenses-  
relationship with similar centers-  
avoiding parallel working-  
merely presenting scientific contents-  
mentioning the sources-

.It's obvious that all the responsibilities are due to the author

:Other activities of the institute

Publication of books, booklets and other editions-

Holding book reading competitions-

Producing virtual, three dimensional exhibitions, panoramas of religious and tourism-  
places

.Producing animations, computer games and etc-

Launching the website with this address: [www.ghaemiyeh.com](http://www.ghaemiyeh.com)-

Fabricating dramatic and speech works-

Launching the system of answering religious, ethical and doctrinal questions-

Designing systems of accounting, media and mobile, automatic and handy systems,-  
web kiosks

Holding virtual educational courses for the public-

Holding virtual teacher-training courses-

Producing thousands of research software in three languages (Persian, Arabic and-English) which can be performed in computers, tablets and cellphones and available and downloadable with eight international formats: JAVA, ANDROID, EPUB, CHM, PDF, HTML, CHM, GHB on the website

Also producing four markets named “Ghaemiyeh Book Market” with Android, IOS,- WINDOWS PHONE and WINDOWS editions  
:Appreciation

We would appreciate the centers, institutes, publications, authors and all honorable .friends who contributed their help and data to us to reach the holy goal we follow

:Address of the central office

Isfahan, Abdorazaq St, Haj Mohammad JafarAbadei Alley, Shahid Mohammad HasanTavakkoly Alley, Number plate ۱۲۹, first floor

Website: [www.ghbook.ir](http://www.ghbook.ir)

Email: [Info@ghbook.ir](mailto:Info@ghbook.ir)

Central office Tel: ۰۹۱۳۲۰۰۰۱۰۹

۰۲۱ - Tehran Tel: ۸۸۳۱۸۷۲۲

Commerce and sale: ۰۹۱۳۲۰۰۰۱۰۹

Users' affairs: ۰۹۱۳۲۰۰۰۱۰۹

Introduction of the Center – Ghaemiyeh Digital Library

Center of Computer

Researches



# Ghaemiyeh

Isfahan



For Getting Other Professional Libraries,  
refer to the Center Address Please:

**[www.Ghaemiyeh.com](http://www.Ghaemiyeh.com)**

[www.Ghaemiyeh.net](http://www.Ghaemiyeh.net)

[www.Ghaemiyeh.org](http://www.Ghaemiyeh.org)

[www.Ghaemiyeh.ir](http://www.Ghaemiyeh.ir)

For Order, Connect us:

**0913 2000 109**

